















A

# HISTORY

OF THE

**UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.**

WITH A

GEOGRAPHICAL APPENDIX,

AND A

**CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE**

**OF CONTENTS.**

FOR THE USE OF FAMILIES AND SCHOOLS.



BY

**FREDERICK BUTLER, A. M.**



PRINTED BY LAZELL & FRANCIS,  
BUFFALO, N. Y.

**1826.**

1178  
B986  
1826

- DISTRICT OF CONNECTICUT, SS.



*Be it remembered,* That on the twentieth day of December, in the fiftieth year of the Independence of the United States of America, Deming & Francis, of the said district, have deposited in this office the title of a Book, the right whereof they claim as proprietors, in the words following, to wit:—

“A History of the United States of America, with a Geographical Appendix, and a Chronological Table of Contents; for the use of Families and Schools. By Frederick Butler, A. M.”

In conformity to the act of the Congress of the United States, entitled “An Act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned.”—And also to the act entitled “An act supplementary to an act, entitled, ‘An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned,’ and extending the benefits thereof to the arts of designing, engraving, and etching historical and other prints.”

CHARLES A. INGERSOLL,

*Clerk of the District of Connecticut*

A true copy of Record, examined and sealed by me,

CHARLES A. INGERSOLL,

*Clerk of the District of Connecticut*



## PREFACE.

THE history of all the nations of the earth, from the founding of the first monarchy after the flood, down to the settlement of North America, shews that they all had their origin in a state of barbarism, and that all their attainments in civil refinement, were derived from war, and commerce, except the Israelites, in the *ancient Canaan*; that nation was an exception, to that of all others.

The emigrations from England and other kingdoms of Europe, in the 17th century, that peopled the wilds of North America, and the nation that has grown out of those emigrations, resemble that of the Jewish nation, in many of their more prominent features, and the parallel between the two nations, for the first two hundred years of their existence, is more striking than that of any other two nations that have appeared upon the whole page of history.

A pure religion, as the basis of pure moral virtue, was the immediate cause of all the happiness and prosperity of the Jews; but when they corrupted these, they were visited with all the calamities that were common to all other nations, until they were driven from their country and scattered among the nations of the earth.

So long as a pure religion and a pure moral virtue, continue to be the basis of the happiness and prosperity of the United States, so long we shall flourish as a nation; but whenever these shall be prostituted to the lust

of ambition, then we may expect calamities directly proportioned to our moral and religious degeneracy.

If it should be inquired by any, will not our free systems of education; our general diffusion of information, and our free governments, guard us against all the calamities that have been common to all other nations? The answer is at hand. These, however valuable in themselves, are only the hand-maids of religion and moral virtue; and when united, have been the immediate causes of exalting the United States to that high elevation which they have attained; but whenever they shall be deserted by religion and virtue, and left to act alone, they will fall; our free government will be subverted; a despotism will rise upon its ruins, and the United States will be degraded to a level with the enslaved nations of the earth.

These facts are not only illustrated in the instance of the Jewish nation, but in that of all other nations, both ancient and modern, to the present time.

Those ancient nations that had not the gospel as the basis of their religion and virtue, were nevertheless so sensible of the importance of the latter, that they deified the virtues, and thus attempted to give them permanence and respectability; this answered for a time; but as they had no fixed standard for the moral virtues, they were soon corrupted by the lust of ambition, and proved their own ruin.

The same is equally true of all those modern nations, that have grown out of the dark ages, under the corruptions of Popery; they have prostituted the gospel to the absurdities of a heathen philosophy; depressed or de-

stroyed the moral virtues, and thus involved themselves in all the calamities of the ancient heathen world.

Let me not be understood to say that religion is government, or that the moral virtues are government; but let me be understood to say that they are *the only sure foundation of government*.

This remark may be illustrated by contrasting England, for instance, before the reformation, with England since the Reformation; or by contrasting England in her present prosperity, with the United States; but much more forcibly by contrasting the United States of South America, with the United States of North America.

Mr. Rollin in his *Ancient History*, and Mr. Russell in his *Modern Europe*, have both given a full illustration of these remarks; and the author of this work, in his *Sketches of Universal History*, has given a miniature view of the same subject, that it may become familiar to every family and every individual in the United States.

In collecting and arranging the materials of this work, the author has endeavored to give as strong an impression to the foregoing sentiments, as the nature of things would fairly authorise, in order to fix upon the minds of the rising generation, the necessity and importance of cultivating and preserving pure religion and pure moral virtue, so long as they wish to enjoy the benefits of a free education and a free government.

In order that the history of the United States might be fairly understood, the author has judged it necessary to give a concise chronological view of the several adventures that led to the discovery and settlement of

North America, together with a miniature view of the rise and progress of the several colonies that commenced and carried through the Revolutionary war, and laid the foundation of the present National Government.— He also judged it necessary to give a concise chronological view of the rise of the several States that have since become members of the Confederacy.

The whole, when taken collectively, exhibit to the world the greatest amount of peace, prosperity, and human happiness, that has ever before been known, or even contemplated by philosophers, statesmen, or poets; a sum of human happiness that cannot be understood in Europe, and is very imperfectly realized, even by ourselves, in the United States; a sum of human happiness that falls but little short of the enjoyments of the great millennial period.

But says the Jurist, are we not indebted to the great Montesquieu, (author of the Spirit of Laws, in the last century,) for much of our improvements in jurisprudence, and refinements in civil government?

The answer is at hand. Montesquieu was a Frenchman, and an eminent Frenchman; he infused into his countrymen, the very essence of the principles of his Spirit of Laws; but made no provision for the religion of the gospel and the moral virtues, and the French Revolution has exhibited to the world, the character of a nation destitute of a pure religion, and the moral virtues.

But, says the civilian, are we not indebted to the British Constitution for all the privileges of free government



which we enjoy? The answer is at hand, again. The British Constitution is truly a "stupendous fabric of human inventing;" but what was that to Englishmen in the reigns of Henry VIII. Queen Mary, James I. Charles I. or even Charles II. until the Reformation taught the knowledge of the gospel and the moral virtues, in England and Scotland? The great balance of power in the three estates of the British Constitution, is every thing in government to Englishmen under the Protestant reigns of the House of Hanover; it is every thing in government, in the United States; and when coupled with the Bible, and made the protector of pure religion and the moral virtues, has become the palladium of the happiness and the prosperity of this Nation.

The design of the author, is not to favor any particular sect or denomination of christians; but to urge the importance of national religion and virtue, as the only sure basis of a free government. He has been the more particular in this, because this work is immediately designed for the use of families and schools, which are, in themselves, little communities, that form the great community, and are immediately the nurseries of national character.

To the heads of these, the author begs leave to address himself, by saying, let the rising generation have every possible advantage to acquire a thorough knowledge of the *Bible*, as the only sure basis of all true knowledge, as well as of pure moral virtue; remembering that they are to become the guardians of all those pre-eminent privileges that we enjoy, and that to them will be committed the destinies of this great and rising Nation.

## NOTES.

[The following Notes should have been inserted in the Appendix.]

### *Gen. Putnam and Major Small.*

Our readers will recollect that in the account we gave of the Marquis La Fayette's visit to Bunker Hill, in 1825, allusion was made to the fact of Gen. Putnam's having saved the life of his former friend and companion in arms, Major Small, of the British army. Putnam and Small had served together in the preceding war with France, and had contracted a strong and intimate friendship for each other. In the hottest part of the battle of Bunker's Hill, Putnam observed some of his unerring marksmen taking deadly aim at Small, who was at the head of a part of the British forces, and by an instinctive impulse, turned aside their muskets, and saved his friend's life. A respectable officer who was on the spot and personally acquainted with the facts which he relates, has sent us the following anecdotes of these two officers, which even at this distance of time cannot be read without interest. Putnam was naturally brave and undaunted: he was a patriot as well as a soldier: of the most uncorruptible integrity, as well as the most unshaken firmness and resolution. We knew him personally towards the close of his life. His appearance corresponded with his character and principles—his person was venerable, his manners plain but dignified, his temper steady and serene, and his confidence in an overruling Providence fixed and consoling; and though he was then impaired by age and bodily infirmity, he looked upon the past with satisfaction, and at the future with the hope of a devout but humble Christian.

"Not more than a week after the battle of Bunker Hill, and while Gen. Putnam had his station on Prospect Hill, a person in a horse cart, bearing a flag of truce, brought to the American lines a hamper of porter, addressed to Gen. Putnam from his friend Major Small. This led to some conversation in the marquee, when the General remarked that Small remembered the service he had done him; for, said he, I saved his life by

restraining a few shots that would certainly have killed him: two or three marksmen were in the act of leveling their pieces over the breast work north of the redoubt, when I came up to it from the left and recognized Small. I stopped the fire and he escaped—let us drink health and long life to him. He is our enemy to be sure, but he is a generous hearted fellow, and I could not see him killed in *cold blood*.

The day before Washington joined the army at Cambridge, Gen. Putnam received from Major Small a note, importing that he felt himself under great obligation, and wished for an interview on the lines the Sunday following, that he might express his gratitude in person.—This note was submitted to Washington, who advised a compliance on the part of Putnam. They met, under the shade of an oak; and after a friendly conversation of half an hour, in which the transactions of by gone days were recalled, Small said—"You *must* know, Putnam, that you can never succeed in this daring opposition to his majesty's government. You have *seen* enough of British valour, and *know* enough of the strength and power of Britain, to convince you that this *Rebellion* will be crushed: and what then will become of you? I know you are a brave man, and may fall ingloriously as a rebel—but as sure as you survive, a *halter* will be provided for your *neck*! Your services in Canada with our army are remembered, and they all respect you. The government is desirous of conferring on you a reward, too long and too unjustly withheld; and I come now with full authority from Gen. Gage, to assure you, that if you will leave the service in which you are engaged, and which from the nature of it must be transient, and join his majesty's standard under which you have so often fought, you shall have the same rank in the British army as you now nominally hold over a mere rabble."—Here, taking the General by the hand and laying the other on his shoulder, he continued—"Putnam, I know *you* will fight, but who have you to support you? I had a terrible witness of your daring spirit on yonder height, and I owe my life to your generosity—let me, then never meet you again as an enemy." Gen. Putnam replied—"You know, Small, that we have had recent conversations on this subject—only a short time before hostilities commenced, and how fully I then stated to you

my perfect conviction of the justice of our cause, and my firm determination to stand or fall with my country. This determination remains unchanged: I know, indeed, the power of Britain, and the strength of her arm; but, there is a higher power, and a stronger arm, which will sustain me and save my country. While, therefore, I shall continue to love you, individually as a friend, if you mingle with those who come to trample on rights which God and nature gave, under pretence of "crushing rebellion," I must and will meet you as an enemy."—This conversation was immediately reported to Washington; who, with his accustomed prudence, remarked, that, considering the jealousy of the times, it had better not be made public."

*Dwight's Adv.*



### *New-York Canals.*

In 1818, I had the pleasure to congratulate the legislature on the auspicious commencement and successful progress of the contemplated water communications between the great western and northern lakes and the Atlantic ocean: and I now have the peculiar gratification to felicitate you on their completion. On the 26th of October last, the western canal was in a navigable state, and vessels passed from Lake Erie to the Atlantic ocean. In about eight years artificial communications, near 428 miles, have been opened—to the Hudson river from Lake Champlain by the northern canal—to Lake Ontario by the Otsego river and the western canal, and to Lake Erie, and the other western lakes by the latter canal—thus affording an extent of inland navigation unparalleled in the experience of mankind. The expense of these works and of some auxiliary, connected and incidental operations amounts to \$9,130,373 83, exclusive of interest paid on loans. The canal debt is as follows:

\$4,524,270 99 at 5 per cent.

3,213,500 at 6 per cent.

---

7,737,770 99

The annual interest of which is \$419,023 55. The sum of \$270,000 of the 6 per cent. stock is reimbursable at the pleasure of the state after the first day of October, and the remainder of the debt after the first day of Ju-

ly 1838 and 1845. The amount of tolls received this year has not been exactly ascertained, but it will not fall short of half a million. [Subsequent official statements make the amount received for tolls in 1825, \$521,343.]

*Gov. Clinton's Message, 1826.*



### *Canals.*

On the 4th of July, 1825, a Canal from the Ohio river at the the mouth of the Scioto to Cleaveland, was began, and is to be 306 miles in length. Another Canal from Cincinnati to Dayton, 60 miles long, is also commenced. These works are in a prosperous way, and it is supposed will be finished in three or four years.

Kentucky has incorporated a company with liberal grants and privileges, for making a canal round the falls of the Ohio river at Louisville, and this operation is going on under respectable auspices.

The state of Illinois has authorised the construction of a Canal from Illinois river to Lake Michigan, under very encouraging circumstances; and other projects for uniting the great Lakes of the west with the waters that run into the Mississippi, are in contemplation.

## ERRATA.

Page.

- 31, line 5 from top, for Higgermore, read Higginson,  
     l. 18 from top, for Harris, read Haines, line 12  
     from bottom, for Georges, read Gorges, line 9  
     from bottom, for Georges, read Gorges, line 1  
     from bottom, for 1538, read 1638.
- 32, l. 10, from from top, for maintaining, read main-  
     tained, line 2 from bottom, for as, read was.
- 34, l. 19. from top, for Newton, read Newtown.
- 56, l. 13 from top, omit New-Hampshire.
- 43, l. 15 from bottom, for Holland, read Tolland.
- 44, l. 15 from top, for Jarenteens, read Tarenteens.
- 45, l. 19 from bottom, omit to, before the village.
- 46, l. 4 from top, for were, read was.
- 49, l. 9 from top, for Cotton, read Cutts ; l. 1 from bot-  
     tom, for second, read succeed.
- 53, l. 17 from top, for thirsty, read thirsting.
- 57, l. 2 from top, for quoe pulchro, read qua pulchra ;  
     line 10, omit comma between Say and Seal ; line  
     1 from bottom for folios, read folio.
- 65, l. 7 for Nantucket, read Nantasket.
- 72, l. 9 for Arcadians, read Acadians.
- 78, l. 1 from bottom, for into, read with.
- 85, l. 18 from top, for Vanduvil, read Vandreuil.
- 87, l. 13 from top, for Pocaek, read Pocock.
- 88, l. 6 from top, for cuti, read uti.
- 96, l. 13 from top, for Chickahoming, r. Chickahominy.
- 102, l. 10 from top, for reasonable, read seasonable.
- 108, l. 8 from top, for Wockocker, read Waskoeken.
- 109, l. 11 from bottom, for Martineo, read Martineo ; l.  
     8 from bottom, to the word Ralph, add Lane.
- 116, l. 6 from top, for Okirko, read Okisko ; l. 5 from  
     bottom, for Arundale, and Surrey, read Arundel  
     and Surry.
- 123, l. 12 from bottom, for rescue, read secure.
- 129, l. 2, chap. vii. for Syreonnell, read Tyreonnell.
- 132, l. 13 from bottom, for tena, read terra.
- 136, l. 9 from top, for Bane, read Barre.
- 144, l. 12 from bottom, remove comma from Niewer  
     Ainstel.
- 152, l. 17 from bottom, for Gulielmar, read Gulielma.

## Page.

- 155, l. 29 from top, omit comma between myrtle wax.  
157, l. 5 from top, for Cæcil, read Cœcil.  
173, l. 3 from top, for forces, read focus.  
183, l. 29 from top, for cartigat, read castigat; line 18  
from bottom, for audisque, read audique.  
190, l. 21 from bottom, for compliment, read comple-  
ment.  
204, l. 3 from top, for distinction, read destination.  
216, l. 7 from bottom, for Phelps, read Philips.  
218, l. 1 from top, for rallied, read sallied.  
271, l. 2 from bottom, for distresses, read distress.  
272, l. 14 from bottom, for 1781, read 1782.  
290, l. 9, Chapter II. for Sciota, read Scioto.  
337, l. 5 from top, for 17th January, read 17th February.

The editors offer as an apology for the long list of Errata, in this work, that the Author resides at Wethersfield, Connecticut; a distance of more than 400 miles from Buffalo; which rendered it impossible for him to examine and correct the proof-sheets; and the Printers were not accustomed to read his writing. The Author has endeavored to make out the Errata, in as correct a manner as possible, from a perusal of a copy of the work.

## INTRODUCTION.

The discovery of America, may be considered as one of the most important events in the annals of man. It will ultimately be productive of the greatest consequences to this world.

The first outlines of the history of America, I have compressed into the following chronological form, shewing in the concisest manner, the first adventures which led to the discovery and settlement of the several parts of the New World:

Christopher Columbus, (a native of Genoa,) under the patronage of Ferdinand and Isabella, King and Queen of Spain, discovered the Islands of St. Salvador and Cuba, in the West-Indies, and returned to Spain, A. D. 1492.

Made a second voyage, which proved unsuccessful, 1493.

Made a third voyage, and discovered South America, 1498.

Americus Vesputius, under the patronage of the merchants of Seville, followed the track of Columbus; touched upon the Continent of South America; returned; published a pompous account of his voyage and discoveries, and gave his name to the Continent of America, 1499.

John Cabot, a Venetian, obtained a grant from Henry VII. of England, for foreign discoveries; explored the coast of North America; touched upon the coast of Labrador, and returned to England, 1496.

The next year he explored the whole extent of the American coast, from Davis' Strait to Florida; discovered Newfoundland, and returned to England, 1497.

Sebastian Cabot, (son of John Cabot,) under Henry VII. pursued the adventures of his father; visited Newfoundland, and carried several natives to England, 1502.



- Alvarez de Cabral, on his passage to India from Lisbon, (Portugal) discovered Brazil, 1500.
- Juan Leon, an adventurer from Porto Rico, discovered Florida, gave it its name, and attempted a settlement, 1513.
- Terra Firma, (on the Continent of South America,) was settled by Spain, 1520.
- Cortez, the Spanish adventurer, conquered Mexico, 1521.
- The next adventurer was Stephen Gomez, a Spaniard, who explored the coast from Florida to Cape Race, latitude 46 deg. north, in search of a north-west passage to India, 1525.
- Pizarro, another Spanish adventurer, conquered Peru, 1540.
- Ferdinand de Soto, who had served under Cortes in the conquest of Mexico, sailed from the Island of Cuba, with a military force of 900 men, and landed in Florida, in quest of the wealth of another city of Mexico. 1539.
- He traversed the interior, through the Chickasaw country, crossed the Mississippi, and proceeded up Red River, a very considerable distance, where he died, at the end of three years. His troops returned to the Mississippi, constructed such shipping as would convey them down the river, and thus returned to Cuba under Alverdo their leader, 1542.
- The Portuguese settled Brazil, 1549.
- Francis I. King of France, made some efforts for discoveries in the New World, by John Veresano, a Florentine; but he was lost in his second adventure, 1524.
- Ten years after this, Francis I. made another effort, by James Quartier, who touched at Newfoundland; discovered and gave name to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and made an unsuccessful attempt to find a passage to China, 1534.
- The next year he explored the St. Lawrence, up to the rapids; wintered in the country, at a Fort which he built on the Isle of Orleans, and in the spring, carried several of the natives to France, 1536.

James Quartier pursued his adventures under the same patronage, to complete a settlement in Canada, or New France, where he remained, at a place which he named Charlebourg, about two years, and then retired to Newfoundland, 1540.

Francis I. sent out other adventurers to strengthen the settlements in Canada; but they all failed, 1542.

About this time began the Newfoundland fisheries, which have since proved so profitable to the world.

The French, under Chattillon, made some further discoveries in East Florida, and attempted a settlement, which failed, 1552.

About this time, several French adventurers visited the coast in quest of a passage to India, and returned to France. Commodore Ribault, was dispatched from France by the Admiral Coligni, with two ships, to plant a colony in North America. He touched at Port Royal, (South Carolina,) landed his men, built a fort, and called it Charles, where he left a colony of twenty or thirty men, under Captain Albert, and returned to France, 1564.

This colony was overpowered by a fleet of six vessels from Spain, and all massacred, 1566.

The French, with a fleet of three ships, revenged on the Spaniards, the murder of their countrymen, and destroyed the Fort and settlement, 1568.

The next adventurer that visited the coast, was Captain Frobisher, who sailed from England in quest of a North-West passage to India; but being obstructed by the ice, he abandoned the enterprise, and returned to England, 1576.

This year Sir Francis Drake doubled Cape Horn, and discovered New Albion, upon the western coast, north of California.

Queen Elizabeth granted letters patent to Sir Humphry Gilbert, for foreign discoveries, and in his adventures he touched at Newfoundland, and from thence to the Continent, and took possession for the crown of England. He was lost in a storm, 1583.

The coast of Virginia was discovered; named after the virgin Queen, and settled by 107 persons, near Roanoke, by Sir Walter Raleigh, 1585.

The next year this colony returned to England, with Sir Francis Drake, 1586.

Sir Walter Raleigh sent out seven ships, with another colony, to the same settlement on the Roanoke, where they endured extreme hardships, and were in their turn, conveyed back to England, by Sir Francis Drake, 1587.

Sir Walter sent out Governor White with a colony, to strengthen the former colony at Roanoke, with a charter and a regular form of government; but they were gone, and Governor White left a colony of 115, at Roanoke, and returned, 1588.

Governor White came over again, to recruit the little colony in Virginia; but alas! they had all shared the fate of his former colony, and not a vestige of them remained, 1590.

With this colony, came out Manteo and Towaye, two natives who had been carried to England by former adventurers. The former was baptised in August, which is not only the first convert amongst the natives, but the first notice of any religious rite in all these numerous adventures. At the same time, a daughter was born in the colony, of a Mrs. Dare, whom she called Virginia. This was the first christian birth in North America.

A Spanish expedition under Juan de Fuca, was sent out from Mexico, to explore a North-West passage, who discovered the strait that bears his name, latitude 48 north. and returned, 1592.

In the reign of Henry IV. of France, an expedition sailed under De la Loche, *consisting of convicts*, to conquer and settle Canada. De la Loche landed forty on the isle of Sables, where they languished seven years, and then twelve returned to France, where they were pardoned, and received fifty crowns each, from the King, to recompense their sufferings, 1598.

This year Cape Cod, Martha's Vineyard, and Elizabeth Island, and Dover Cliff, were discovered by Bartholomew Gosnold, and thirty-two adventurers, who made an attempt to settle on Elizabeth Island; but failed and returned to England, 1602.

At this time not one solitary English, French, or Dutch, settlement had been made, on the whole

coast of North America, through the long period of adventures, for 110 years.

The English made two adventures to Virginia, and not finding the third colony at Roanoke, and being roughly handled by the natives, they all returned to England,

1603.

The French began their settlement at Fort Royal, on the Bay of Fundy,

1604.

The English, under Captain Weymouth, explored the coast of the Province of Maine; made no settlement, but carried off several natives, and returned,

1605.

This year James I. divided Virginia into two colonies or districts, (for there was not a settlement in either,) the southern was bounded on the 34th and 41st degrees of north latitude, and styled the first colony, and granted to the London Company. The northern or second colony, was included within the 38th and 45th degrees of north latitude, and granted to the Plymouth company,

1606.

Each of these companies consisted of a President and twelve assistants, to govern the affairs of the colony; with express prohibitions to settle within one hundred miles of each other.

The next year another colony commenced the settlement of Jamestown, on James River, under Captain Newport,

1607.

This was the first settlement planted in North America.

The Plymouth Company sent out Admiral Sir Rawley Gilbert with one hundred planters, to North Virginia, with Captain George Popham for their President. Admiral Gilbert touched at Sagadahoc, (Kennebec) River; landed forty-five men, with their President, and the rest returned to England. At the same time a company from St. Malo, in France, founded Quebec,

1607.

The sufferings of the Sagadahoc colony; the loss of their store-house, by fire, and of their President, induced them to return to England, the next season,

1608.

The same year Jamestown was burnt.

This year the London Company sent out supplies and a recruit of two hundred persons, to

strengthen the colony at Jamestown, which now amounted to five hundred, 1608—9.\*

Admiral Somers, on his passage to America, with a part of this little fleet, was wrecked on one of the Bahama Islands, and lost his ship; but the crew and passengers were all saved, and remained there until the next year, when they were taken off by Lord Delaware, on his passage to Virginia.†

The colony at Jamestown was now reduced to sixty, and had all embarked for England; but meeting his Lordship at the entrance of the Bay, they were induced to return with him and resume their settlement at Jamestown, June 10th, 1610.

Here commences the history of Virginia.

This year Sir Thomas Dale and Sir Thomas Gates, sent out each 300 men, with cattle, swine, &c. for the settlement, 1611.

In the year 1607—8, Captain Henry Hudson received a commission from King James I for foreign adventure, and in the service of the East-India Company, sailed in quest of a North-West passage, 1607—8.

In 1609, he left this service in disgust, and prosecuted his adventures in the service of the Dutch. He entered North River, which he called by his own name, 1609.

This adventure gave rise to the Dutch settlement at New Netherlands, 1613.

Conception Bay, in the Island of Newfoundland, was settled by John Gray, under a patent from King James, 1613.

This year Captain Smith, with two ships, sailed to the coast of North Virginia, and took out with him, *Tantum* or *Squantum*, an Indian formerly carried to England, by Captain Weymouth, in 1605. Captain Smith landed *Tantum* at Cape Cod, and explored the Massachusetts Bay, and re-

---

\*The same year the Rev. John Robinson removed with his flock, to Holland.

†By some it is understood that they built a vessel and sailed for Jamestown, without the assistance of Lord Delaware.

turned to England in one vessel; but left the other with Captain Hunt, who touched at Sagadahoc River, and decoyed on board, twenty Indians, and carried them to Spain, where he sold them for £20 each, as slaves,

1614.

This perfidious act proved highly prejudicial to the trade, hereafter.

When Captain Smith returned to England, he drew a chart of this coast, and called it New-England which still continues.

This year William Baffin, in search of a North-West passage, discovered the Bay that bears his name,

1616.

About this time a sweeping sickness amongst the natives, desolated the coast about Massachusetts-Bay, and the tribe of Patuxet was wholly destroyed. This opened the way for the settlement of the Puritan Colony at New-Plymouth,

1620.

The following Chronological Summary, will show the order of time in which the settlements in North America, but more particularly in the United States, commenced. Also the order of time in which the several new States were admitted into the Federal Union:

### CHRONOLOGICAL SUMMARY.

Quebec, (capital of Lower Canada,) settled by the French,	1608.
Newfoundland, by the English,	1610.
Virginia; first settlement at Roanoke, 1585.— Jamestown, 1607; became permanent,	1610.
New-York,	1610—1614.
New-Jersey, as a part of New-Netherlands, at the same time. First settlement at Elizabethtown, about the year,	1664.
New-Plymouth, by the Puritan Colony,	1620.
Nova Scotia, by the Scotch under Sir William Alexander,	1622.
Confirmed to the English by France, after several changes, at the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle,	1648.
New-Hampshire.	1623.

Delaware and Pennsylvania, by the Swedes and Fins,	1627.
Massachusetts-Bay,	1628.
Maryland,	1633.
Connecticut and Rhode-Island,	1635.
New-Jersey, under a grant to the Duke of York,	1664.
Carolina, at Albemarle, (Northern Colony,)	1650.
Do. at Port Royal. (Southern Colony,)	1670.
Charter surrendered to the crown of England and government divided,	1729.
Georgia,	1733.
Vermont, settled from New-Hampshire,	1764.
Admitted into the Federal Union,	1791.
Kentucky, settled,	1773.
Admitted into the Union,	1792.
Tennessee, settled,	1754.
Admitted into the Union,	1796.
Ohio, settled,	1787.
Admitted into the Union,	1802.
Louisiana, settled by the French,	1699.
Purchased by the United States, of France, for 15,000,000 dollars,	1803.
Became a State and was admitted into the Union,	1812.
Indiana, became a State and was admitted into the Union,	1816.
Mississippi, originally a part of Georgia, admit- ted into the Union,	1817.
Illinois, became a State and was admitted,	1818.
Alabama, originally a part of Georgia, admitted,	1819.
Missouri, a part of the Louisiana purchase ad- mitted,	1821.
Maine, originally a part of Massachusetts ad- mitted,	1821.
Michigan, became a Territorial government,	1800.
Arkansas, a part of the Louisiana purchase, do.	1819.
East and West Florida, ceded by Spain to the U- nited States, and became a Territorial govern- ment,	1821.

By this table may be seen the most rapid and extensive settlements, that have ever been witnessed in the family of man; embracing an extent of territory, from the Gulf of Mexico on the south, to Hudson's Bay on

the north; and from the shores of the Atlantic on the east, to the interior wilds of Louisiana on the west.— More than 2000 miles square, and embracing a population of more than fourteen millions of free people. All accomplished in the space of two centuries. Those very two centuries in which the Reformation waded in blood in Europe, and found a retreat in the wilds of America.



# HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

## PART I.

### CHAPTER I.

#### *Commencement of the Settlement of New England.*

##### PLYMOUTH.

THE commencement of the reformation in England, under JOHN WICKLIFFE, in the 14th Century; the rise of Disciples of WICKLIFFE called Lollards; their principles, their persecutions under Henry VIII. and the succeeding reigns; their flight to Germany, and Switzerland; the refinement of their principles and modes of worship, under the advice of John Calvin, the great Apostle of Switzerland; which gave to their Church the title or name of Puritans; their return to England, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth; their persecutions in the reign of James the 1st; their flight to Holland, in the year 1608, under the pious John Robinson, their pastor, are all faithfully recorded in Neal's history of the Puritans, and in Hume's history of England.

Let us now accompany a part of this little flock to the wilds of America, and witness how God rolls on the successive events of his providence, to accomplish his purposes and designs.

Twelve years this little flock enjoyed their religion in peace amongst their brethren in Holland; but the abuses of the Sabbath, together with the confusion of business, and the general character of the Dutch, rendered their residence irksome: they therefore resolved to make one more effort to find a retreat, where they might enjoy the religion of their hearts in peace. To effect this, they turned their attention to the shores of North America.

They sent their agents to England to negotiate with the London company, who were at that time making efforts for the settlement of Virginia, and obtained a patent for their accommodation, 1619. In July, 1620, a part of Mr. Robinson's congregation, tore themselves from

their beloved pastor and friends, and embarked for England, where they landed to complete the preparations for their voyage.

In August they embarked at Southampton, and set sail for America; but were constrained to return, on account of the leakiness of one of their vessels. On the 6th of September, they took their departure from Plymouth, and on the 18th of November came to anchor in the harbour of Cape-Cod.

Their object was to join the Dutch colony at Manhattan, at the mouth of the Hudson river; but the Dutch captain defeated this object, by touching at Cape-Cod, at the entrance of Massachusetts-Bay.

Such had been the severities, and distresses of the voyage, that they preferred landing upon this solitary coast, to encountering again the perils of the deep, at this late season of the year. They accordingly made the necessary arrangements for landing, upon this dreary, desolate, inhospitable waste. To effect this, they first poured out their souls to God in prayer, and thanksgiving, for his preservation, and deliverance; they next drew up, and subscribed a solemn compact for the government of the colony; and when this had been duly executed, by twenty-four heads of families, and seventeen single men, making forty-one subscribers, in behalf of the whole; which amounted to one hundred and one; they proceeded to elect Mr. John Carver as their Governor for one year.

Thus having organized their little colony, they proceeded to land their families, and effects, and to imprint the first footsteps of civilized man upon this desolate shore of the New World.

This being accomplished, they fell on their knees, and poured out their souls renewedly, in prayers and praises with thanksgiving, and dedicated their hearts, their lives, and all that they possessed to God their deliverer; and committed themselves to his most holy keeping,—November 20th, 1620.

When they had celebrated the first Sabbath in this little colony, and thus rendered the shores of this howling wilderness vocal with the praises of their God, they commenced the labours of the week, in exploring the coast, in the shallop; and the forest with an armed party, to spy out the land, and discover the face of the country.

in quest of a permanent residence. In all their several attempts to explore the forest, they discovered the savages, who sometimes fled at their approach, and at others annoyed them with showers of arrows, and the horrors of their savage yells, but the report of their fire-arms awed them into submission, or held them at bay.

On the 17th of December, they discovered a site, at the bottom of a spacious, delightful bay, which attracted their attention, as being best adapted to their necessities, for a permanent residence. There they planted their little colony, and called it Plymouth, in honor of the port, that witnessed their last adieu to the land of their fathers. There they erected their dwellings, which formed the first village in New-England; a village of log huts; here they again celebrated the sabbath, and the wilderness again became vocal with the praises of their God. Thus they planted down upon the borders of an unbounded forest, at the commencement of a New-England winter; without support, excepting the scanty remains of the voyage; and without friends to succour or protect them: before them was the wilderness, full of the habitations of cruelty; behind them that ocean, with its boisterous and tempestuous billows, which had borne them to these remote regions. In their dwellings a mortal sickness soon prevailed, that raged through the winter, and swept off forty-six of their number. To add to this and other calamities, their store house took fire, and consumed much of their valuable effects. Here was a picture of distress, that opened a field for the display of the virtues of that religion, which they had forsaken fathers and mothers, houses, and lands, and even their dear native country, the land of their fathers, and thus jeopardied their lives upon the ocean, and in the wilderness, to secure and enjoy. This field of distress became to them a field of delight; in the midst of their sufferings their hearts were unappalled, they trusted in God, and he was their deliverer.

In the midst of this distress, a friendly Indian who spoke English, came into their village, and exclaimed *welcome English, welcome English*. By this Indian they learnt the geography of the adjacent country, the names, and number of the tribes in this region; particularly that the tribe of Patuxet, which had possessed the section on which they had landed, had shortly before been cut

off by a mortal sickness. Through the instrumentality of this Indian, a friendly intercourse was opened with the neighbouring tribes, and a friendly conference introduced with the neighbouring chiefs; he taught them also how to cultivate the Indian corn.

In the course of the winter, they formed themselves into a military company, and chose Miles Standish for their captain, who became to the colony a distinguished chief. The first military display of Captain Standish, appears in his conducting the great Sachem Massasoit, upon a friendly interview with Governor Carver, March, 1621. At this interview a treaty of alliance, offensive, and defensive, was concluded, with an interchange of great civilities. The Governor kissed the hand of the Sachem, and the Sachem the hand of the Governor; and the treaty was religiously observed for more than 50 years. Captain Standish became the champion of the colony, exhibiting specimens of distinguished coolness, intrepidity and bravery, that rendered his name a terror to the savages, and greatly endeared him to the colony. In the midst of these scenes, died Governor Carver, April, 1621, and was succeeded by Governor Bradford.

This year they continued to explore the country, cultivate the ground, and maintain upon just and equitable terms, their friendly intercourse with the natives. And in autumn, they were blest with plentiful supplies for the approaching winter.

This friendly intercourse excited the jealousy of the Naragansett and other tribes, yet more remote, which produced some collisions with the friendly tribes; but them, the colony soon quelled by the terror of their fire-arms.

At this time (Nov.) a ship arrived from England, with thirty-five passengers, by which they learnt the distracted state of their country; amidst the trying scenes of privilege and prerogative, and they rejoiced in the God of their comforts, who had given them a quiet retreat amidst the savages of the forest, where they might enjoy the religion of their hearts.

During the administration of Gov. Bradford, a patent was obtained for the Plymouth company, from King Charles I. in the name of Wm. Bradford, his heirs, associates and assigns, which defined the limits of New-

England, and confirmed their former title against all encroachments from the crown or foreign adventurers; and gave them the right of holding the country, either by purchase or conquest. This patent gave strength to the colony, and opened a commercial intercourse with England, in their fur trade, which proved useful and profitable to the parties.\*



## CHAPTER II.

## MASSACHUSETTS.

In the year 1625, died King James I. and was succeeded by his son Charles I. That fire of civil and religious controversy, which distracted the reign of James I. was kindled into a flame in the reign of Charles I. by the madness of the King, his ministers and prelates; at the head of whom stood the Duke of Buckingham and Bishop Laud. These scenes of distress and persecutions, drove into voluntary banishment, many of those sons of liberty and virtue, which increased the colony of Plymouth, and augmented her strength. Some of the best blood of the nation, looked to the wilds of America for a retreat and actually obtained patents from the crown, to accomplish their designs.

In the year 1627, King Charles I. granted a patent to Henry Roswell and others; constituting them a body politic, under the name of "the Governor and company of Massachusetts Bay, in New-England, &c." This patent was confirmed by the Plymouth company, and extended three miles north of the Merrimac and three south of the Charles river, and from the Atlantic on the east

---

\*Note.—On the 3d of Nov. 1620, King James granted a patent to the Earl of Warwick and others, (to the number of about forty) and their successors; styling them the council of Plymouth, in the county of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New-England, in America. This charter include all that part of America that lies between the 40th and 48th degrees of north latitude.

to the Pacific on the west; which laid the foundation of the colony of Massachusetts. A settlement commenced this year, at Naumkeag, (Salem) by an emigration from England, under the administration of Capt. John Endicott; this was augmented the next year, by another emigration, to the number of three hundred.

In 1629, John Winthrop and Thomas Dudley, were chosen Governor and Lieutenant-Governor, of the colony of Massachusetts, with Sir Richard Saltonstall and seventeen others, as Assistants; and in 1630, they arrived from England, with their charter, accompanied by an emigration of about fifteen hundred souls. This accession of wealth, numbers and character, gave new energies to New-England, and called forth the homage of their hearts, in gratitude and praise to God, by a public thanksgiving.

On the 30th of July, 1630, the first christian church was formed in Boston,\* and in August following, the first general Court was held. Justices were regularly appointed, as in England, and a regular support for the gospel, was provided by law. During this year, the settlements at and about Boston, progressed rapidly; and the log huts, with thatched roofs, had become so numerous in Boston, that it became necessary to build the first Meeting-House.

In the spring of 1631, the General Court resolved, "that the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor and Legislature, should be chosen by the freemen only; that none should be admitted to the freedom of the company, but such as were chosen members, who had certificates from their ministers, that they were of orthodox principles, and that none but freemen should vote as electors, or act as Magistrates or jurors." Seven men were chosen in Boston, to regulate the distribution of the town lands, which originated the custom of choosing *selectmen*, to regulate town affairs, throughout New-England.

This year the French from Le Arcadia, (Nova Scotia) seized on a trading establishment at Penobscot, owned by the Plymouth company, (erected 1628) which kindled a fire that was never fully extinguished until the peace of 1763.

In 1632—3 and 4, several emigrations from England

---

\*Indian name *Shawmut*.

arrived and settled the towns of Ipswich, Medford and Newberry. The churches had now extended more than thirty miles around Boston, and God sent out to them faithful pastors after his own heart. Amongst the most distinguished of the day, were a Higginmore, a Parker, a Noyes, a Woodbridge, a Chauncey, and others, whose praise is in the churches.

At this time a friendly negotiation for mutual aid, support and defence, took place between the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay, which proved highly important to the parties.

The flattering prospects of the Pilgrims in New-England, were soon published in England, where the spirit of bitterness and persecution continued to rage, and many were induced to abandon their country, and fly into voluntary banishment, to join the standard of the church in the wilderness. Amongst the most distinguished, were a Harris, a Hooker, a Cotton, a Stone, with Sir Henry Vane, and others, all pious and godly men, who held the first distinctions in the civil and religious establishments of New-England.

In 1634, the General Court passed a bill of rights, which guaranteed to the citizens of Massachusetts, the fundamental principles of civil and religious liberty; which remained during the continuance of their charter, and which, with little alteration, they have continued to enjoy to this day.

About the year 1629, the Indian claims to the southern section of New-Hampshire, were extinguished by John Wheelwright and others, of the colony of Massachusetts; but their efforts to settle it were feeble, and they sold their claims to two adventurers in England, Mason and Georges, who attempted to divide New-England into twelve Lordships, under a Viceroy or Governor General. The whole plan failed, although it was sanctioned by King Charles I. and Georges vested with the supreme authority. Mason died early, and Georges, with all his schemes, languished and finally expired, without producing one solitary settlement.

About the years 1633 to 40, settlements commenced at Portsmouth, Dover, Hampton and Exeter, but they were soon after assigned over to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts Bay.

In 1538, the great earthquake, (so called) was felt

throughout the country, which fixed a remarkable epoch in the annals of New-England.

In 1639 and 40, the settlements progressed rapidly, and improvements kept pace with the settlements. Religion was the first object of attention in New-England; next their civil government, and regular system of education. To effect these great objects, they built Meeting Houses in all the towns; provided for, and settled Ministers; they established regular civil and judicial courts, throughout the colonies; and each colony maintaining its independence. They established regular schools, by law, throughout their towns, and in 1639, the colony of Massachusetts laid the foundation of the College at Cambridge, by appropriating, as a permanent fund, the sum of £400, which had been granted in 1636, for a public school. In 1639, the Rev. John Harvard, Minister of Charlestown, made a bequest to the College, of five hundred and forty pounds, which conferred upon the institution the honor of his name. In 1649, the General Court granted to the College, the avails of the ferry at Charlestown; and the Rev. Henry Dunster, became their first President. To give permanence and respectability to the College, the General Court appointed the Magistrates and teaching Elders of the six nearest towns, together with the President, as a perpetual government.

In 1650, the General Court gave to the College, a charter which appointed a new corporation, consisting of seven, who were to be elective, under the title of *the President and fellows of Harvard College*. These two branches united, composed the Legislature of the College. Professorships in all the branches of science, have been regularly endowed in this College, (now University of Cambridge) by a Hollis, a Hancock, a Boylston, a John Alford, a Gov. Bowdoin, and others, whose names distinguish their several Professorships. This institution began early to flourish, and has continued to flourish down to this time, when the number of students generally amounts to about 300.

Printing was introduced into the colony, as early as 1639, and a weekly paper soon commenced at Cambridge.

In 1640, a system of laws, to the number of one hundred, as established by the General Court, styled the "Body of Liberties." In this system, it was a fixed



principle, "that no injunction should be laid upon any church, church officer or member, in point of doctrine, discipline, or worship, besides the institution of the Lord." Whenever any law should prove defective, "the word of God was to become the rule of decision."

At this time, more than four thousand families had fled from the persecutions of their suffering country, and taken refuge in the wilds of New-England. The expense of this numerous emigration, was estimated at about two hundred thousand pounds sterling, exclusive of the price paid to extinguish the Indian titles to their lands; and all these efforts were made to lay the foundation of that civil and religious liberty, which they have transmitted down to us, their descendants, and which we so richly enjoy.

At this time, settlements had commenced in the colonies of New-Hampshire, Connecticut, New-Haven, and Rhode-Island, and were rapidly progressing.

In 1643, commenced the General Confederacy of New-England. This compact became the palladium of New-England; and its good effects have been felt through the whole period of her political existence, to this day. The same language, laws and religion, united to the same pursuits, gave the same manners, customs and habits, to the whole; and rendered them one common family.

I will now proceed to bring forward the other colonies of New-England, to the time of this confederacy.



## CHAPTER III.

### CONNECTICUT.

This district of country, lying south of Massachusetts and west of Plymouth, was granted by the Plymouth council in England, to the Earl of Warwick, and confirmed by Charles I. 1630, extending 129 miles west of the river Narragansett.

In 1631, the Earl of Warwick conveyed this grant to the Lords Say and Seal, and Brook and associates, in trust for the pilgrims.

In 1632, the Plymouth colony sent out adventurers to

explore the country, by land. They also explored the coast, and sailed up the Connecticut, as far as the mouth of the Windsor river, where they erected a trading house.

The Dutch settlers at Manhattan, at the mouth of the Hudson river, explored the coast upon the Sound and commenced a settlement at Branford; they also explored the Connecticut and erected a small fort at the mouth of the little river at Hartford, which site retains the name of Dutch-point to this day.

In 1633 a settlement commenced, and a fort was built at the mouth of the Connecticut, by a company from England with Mr. Fenwick at their head, under the patronage of Lords Say and Seal, and Brook, and the place continues to retain the name of Saybrook. This settlement obtained a grant of the river Connecticut, by a treaty with the Pequots, which embraced the adjacent country indefinitely, 1634.

In 1635, a little colony of about 100 persons, from the towns of Dorchester, Newton and Cambridge, in Massachusetts, removed in a body, across this howling wilderness, with their families and effects, and in fourteen days they traversed the desert, which for the first time, became vocal with the praise of the true God. They explored the banks of the Connecticut, at Windsor, near the mouth of the Scantic, a part of the company passed over the Connecticut, and planted down near the mouth of Windsor river, in anxious expectation of their effects, and supplies for the approaching winter, which they had sent round by water. Here the scenes, and distresses of the pilgrims of Plymouth were renewed; they were in the midst of numerous, fierce, savage tribes; divided from their friends by a pathless desert; their effects and supplies were all lost on their passage, and the blasts of a New-England winter, threatened them with inevitable ruin. They fed on such game as they could find, together with acorns, and even the bark of trees, through the winter, and when spring returned, their hearts expanded with gratitude, and praise, to God their deliverer.

In October 1636, a company from Watertown (Massachusetts,) settled at Wethersfield, and in 1637 a company from Newtown, (Massachusetts,) with their pious clergyman, the Rev. Mr. Hooker, commenced their march, with their flocks and herds; traversed the desert,

as the Windsor company had done before, and commenced a settlement at Hartford.

These settlements laid the foundation of the colony of Connecticut, by a solemn compact, bearing date January 14, 1639; this compact was confirmed by King Charles II. 1662, and continued as the palladium of Connecticut, down to the year 1818, when it was superceded by the new constitution.

In 1636, the first court in Connecticut was held at Wethersfield.

The Pequot war had opened a field for exploring the country, as well as for conquest, and led also to the settlement of New-Haven. This was effected by a company from Boston, with the Rev. John Davenport at their head; a man of great piety and worth; accompanied by Messrs. Eaton and Hopkins, (two noted London merchants,) who settled the town of New-Haven, 1638. There the first sermon was preached under a large spreading oak, April, 1638; which gave rise to the celebrated song of the Pilgrims; "*Around the huge oak.*"

This settlement at New-Haven, formed an independent compact, very similar to that of Connecticut; and the two colonies remained independent, until their mutual union in 1665.

The government of the colony of New-Haven was more immediately a Theocracy, than either of the other colonies in New-England. The church was at the head of the colony, and the learned and pious Mr. Davenport, was at the head of the church. They held all things in common; all purchases were made in the name of the colony, and all lands apportioned by a regular distribution. None were admitted as freemen, but such as were church members; of course all the officers of the colony were men of religion. This fundamental principle of the colony, was confirmed by their first general court, held at N. Haven, Oct. 1639. This court consisted of the Governor, Lt. Governor, magistrates, and two representatives from each town, to be chosen annually. This general court was vested with legislative, and judicial powers; with the right of appeal, in all cases, to the supreme court; which was composed of all the magistrates in the colony; six of whom constituted a quorum.

Thus organized, this Theocracy took the word of God

for the rule of their faith, and practice; and his moral, and judicial laws, for the basis of their civil code.

The Antinomian absurdities, that were distracting the church in Massachusetts, when Messrs. Davenport, Eaton and Hopkins arrived there, from England, led them to guard this colony against similar evils, in their first foundation; and the purity of the church, which grew out of this, as well as their civil, and judicial institutions, have proved lasting monuments of the wisdom, and piety of their founders.

In 1643, the colonies of Connecticut, and New-Haven entered into a confederacy with the colonies of Massachusetts, Plymouth, and New-Hampshire, for mutual aid and defence.



## CHAPTER IV.

### RHODE ISLAND.

The Pilgrims carried with them into the wilds of America, the same civil, and religious principles, which prevailed in England, in the time of the commonwealth, and there formed the basis of their civil, and religious institutions.

Impressed with the extremes of these virtues, the Rev. Roger Williams emigrated from England, and settled at Salem, as assistant to the Rev. Mr. Skelton, 1631. Mr. Williams soon disclosed the following sentiments: 1. "that such churches, or church members, as had held communion with the church of England, should manifest their repentance by a confession. 2. That it is not lawful for the godly to hold communion with the ungodly, either in prayer, or in an oath. 3. That it is not lawful for the unregenerate to pray. 4. That the magistrates ought to be excluded from all interference in religious matters, and that whatever controuled a free toleration of religious sentiment was persécution; and lastly that king Charles' patent was founded in injustice, and therefore a nullity."

These sentiments, openly and publicly avowed, led the colony of Massachusetts to call Mr. Williams to an account, and banish him from their limits. Mr. Will-

iams fled into the wilderness, and settled upon the banks of a noble river, near the confines of Massachusetts, where he began a settlement, which he called Providence; commemorative of his providential deliverance, and preservation. This commenced the settlement of Rhode-Island, 1636. In 1638, William Coddington, a rich and respectable Merchant of Boston, together with the Rev. John Clark, and sixteen others, removed from Massachusetts, and purchased the Island of Aquineect, which they called Rhode-Island, (in allusion to the Island of Rhodés,) where they commenced a settlement.

In 1639 Newport was settled, and they formed a civil compact, and chose Mr. Coddington their first chief magistrate.

In 1640 the inhabitants of Providence associated in a form of government, and the settlements in the colonies progressed rapidly. These compacts were purely democratic, and embraced the whole field of religious toleration.

In 1644, they, through Mr. Williams, obtained a patent from the Earl of Warwick, which guaranteed to them the right of governing themselves. They proceeded to elect a president, and four commissioners, as conservators of the peace, together with a Legislative Court of commissioners, consisting of six, whose acts were binding, unless repealed by the freemen. In May 1647, the first General Court enacted a body of laws, that gave permanence to the government.

In 1652 the charter of the Earl of Warwick, was dissolved by order of Parliament; but was again resumed soon after, and continued until 1663, when they obtained a regular charter from king Charles II. under the title of "the Governor and company of the English colony of Rhode Island, and Providence Plantations."

This charter placed Rhode Island upon the same footing as the colony of Connecticut, and authorised them to pass and repass through, and traffic with, any of the colonies in New-England.

The first Legislative Council that assembled under this charter, by a special act, excluded Roman Catholics from the liberties of freemen, and thereby from the government.

At the commencement of the reign of James II. who

was a Catholic, they were brought to smart in their turn for their intolerance. James ordered a writ of *Quo Warranto*, against their charter, and placed Rhode-Island under the government of Sir Edmond Andros, Governor of Massachusetts, 1686.

The Revolution in England, of 1688, which stripped James II. of his crown, and sent him into banishment, caused the recovery of Rhode-Island; she resumed her charter, and has continued to preserve it.

In 1764, Nicholas Brown, Esq. founded the University at Warren, which bears his name, by a donation of \$5000. This was removed to Providence, shortly after, where it became flourishing and respectable.

We will now carry forward the Pequot war.



## CHAPTER V.

### HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS, CONTINUED.

*Pequot War.*—We have noticed the planting of the colonies of Plymouth, Massachusetts, Connecticut, New-Haven and Rhode-Island, down to the time of the New-England Confederacy. We will now consider an attempt of the natives, to destroy the settlements of Connecticut, and give a summary sketch of the Pequot war.

When the English explored the Connecticut river, in 1634, the Pequots murdered a Captain Norton, with six of his company, which showed the hostility of their character. In 1636, they murdered a Mr. Oldham, at Block island. These acts of hostility roused the resentment of Massachusetts, and they resolved to punish the outrage and bring the offenders to justice. They accordingly detached Captain Endicot, with 90 men, with orders to take exemplary vengeance on the offenders.—They set sail immediately for Block-Island; promptly executed their commission, and from thence directed their course to Connecticut River, where they took twenty men, and returned to Pequot River, (Thames) where they commenced an attack upon their villages; dispersed the Indians, (about 300) burnt their wigwams, canoes, corn, &c. and returned to Boston.

This roused the resentment of the savages; they as-

saulted the settlement at Savbrook, and an action commenced, in which one of the English was wounded.—Depredations were continued, and it became dangerous for the English to appear abroad in their fields, to pursue their labours. In Autumn of the same year, the Naraganset chiefs entered into a confederacy with the English at Boston, against the Pequots.

The Plymouth colony complained of the aggressions of the Massachusetts colony, against the Pequots; but they justified themselves, by the necessity of the case.

About this time, the Pequots murdered one Tilly, on the banks of Connecticut river, by cutting off his hands, and feet, and thus leaving him to perish.

In May 1637, six men were killed at Wethersfield, and three women; twenty cows were driven off, and three young girls were taken prisoners. This led the settlers to build a stone fort up in a rising ground, near the great meadow, where the whole village retired to pass the night, and where the women and children were received in times of alarm; the men, after this, went armed into the field, to their common labour.

The Dutch, at Manhattan, encouraged the Indians in their hostilities, which led to a union of effort between Connecticut and Massachusetts.

The former furnished 90 men, and the latter 140; these were joined by 20 more from Connecticut, which amounted to 250; and Uncas, Sachem of the Mohegans, united in the war. When the Connecticut troops were assembled for war, the Revd. Mr. Hooker, of Hartford, delivered to them the following address:

“Fellow Soldiers, Countrymen, and Companions, you are this day assembled by the special providence of God; you are not collected by wild fancy, nor ferocious passions. It is not a tumultuous assembly, whose actions are abortive, or if successful, produce only theft, rapine, rape, and murder; crimes inconsistent with nature’s light, inconsistent with a soldier’s valour. You, my dear hearts, were selected from your neighbours, by the godly fathers of the land, for your known courage, to execute such a work. Your cause is the cause of heaven; the enemy have blasphemed your God,\* and slain his

---

\* They had said the Englishman’s *God* was one *fly*, and the *Englishman* was one *squaw*.

servants ; you are only the ministers of his justice. I do not pretend that your enemies are careless, or indifferent ; no, their hatred is inflamed, their lips thirst for blood ; they would devour you, and all the people of God ; but my brave soldiers their guilt has reached the clouds ; they are ripe for destruction ; their cruelty is notorious ; and cruelty and cowardice are always united. There is nothing, therefore, to prevent your certain victory, but their nimble feet, their impenetrable swamps, and woods ; from these your small numbers will entice them, or your courage drive them. I now put the question—Who would not fight in such a cause ? fight with undaunted boldness ? do you wish for more encouragement ? more I give you. Riches waken the soldier's sword ; and though you will not obtain silver and gold, on the field of victory ; you will secure what is infinitely more precious ; you will secure the *liberties, the privileges, and the lives of Christ's Church, in this New World*. You will procure safety for your affectionate wives, safety for your prattling, harmless, smiling babes : you will secure all the blessings enjoyed by the people of God, in the ordinances of the gospel. Distinguished was the honor conferred upon David, for fighting the battles of the Lord ; this honor, O ye courageous soldiers of God, is now prepared for you. You will now execute his vengeance on the heathen ; you will bind their kings in chains, and their nobles in fetters of iron. But perhaps some one may fear that a fatal arrow may deprive him of this honor. Let every faithful soldier of Jesus Christ, be assured, that if any servant be taken away, it is merely because the honors of this world, are too narrow for his reward ; an everlasting crown is set upon his head ; because the rewards of this life are insufficient. March then with christian courage, in the strength of the Lord ; march with faith in his divine promises, and soon your swords shall find your enemies, soon they shall fall like the leaves of the forest under your feet."

This war opened soon, with an action between the Mohegans, and Pequots ; the former were successful ; killed five, took one, and one only escaped. With their prisoners they practised the tortures usual in Indian warfare ; they cut off their heads, and set them upon the Fort. This gave a general alarm ; and the Pequots retired to their forts ; the principal of which was on a hill,



in what is now the town of Groton. At the head of this tribe was Sassacus, a Sachem of great valour, who was considered as invulnerable as a god.

The whole army of Connecticut embarked at Saybrook, entered the Naraganset river, where they were joined by that tribe, landed their forces, and entered the forest in quest of the enemy. They approached one of their forts in dead of night, when the Indians were buried in sleep, and commenced an assault; a faithful dog (the Indian friend and companion) gave the alarm, and the sentinel cried out *Wanux, Wanux*, [English, English!] but before they could awake, and stand in their defence, the English were in the fort; the work of death had begun, and the fort was in flames.\* Here opened a scene of indiscriminate butchery, amidst the flames of their dwellings, the explosion of fire-arms, the shrieks of the wounded, and the groans of the dying, too horrible to be conceived of, or described. More than six hundred Indians fell a sacrifice in this terrible carnage.—This scene kindled in the breasts of Sassacus, and his warriors, the keenest revenge, and at the same time filled them with dread dismay.

When the English were returning to Pequot harbour; (N. London,) a distance of six miles. they were attacked by about 300 Indians, with all their savage fury, and the whole wilderness resounded with the sound of the war-whoop, and the terrors of their savage yells; yet the English were unappalled; they met them with firmness; repelled their attack; drove them into the forest, and they retired to the other fort of Sassacus.

About the first of July, the Massachusetts troops arrived, under the command of Captain Stoughton, with their Naraganset allies; surprised a party of Indians in a swamp; took eighty captives; killed thirty warriors, and spared the women and children alive.

The time of vengeance had fallen upon the Pequots; they had made indiscriminate war upon their neighbours, and they in their turn commenced indiscriminate war, and butchery upon them; and killed and destroyed all in their way.

---

\* An Indian fort consists of a compact number of wigwams, or huts, inclosed by palisadoes.

Captain Stoughton pursued the fugitives into the heart of Connecticut; but they eluded his pursuit, and made their escape. On his return to Pequot, he discovered about one hundred Indians in a swamp; commenced an attack, and put them to flight, killed, and took about one half; and distributed his prisoners amongst the Naragansets, or sent them to Boston.

Soon after, the Massachusetts and Connecticut troops formed a junction, and set sail for Quinnapick, now New-Haven; killed and took eight more, on their passage, at a point of land, (now Guilford,) cut off the head of a Sachem, which gave name to the point that continues to this day.\*

The object of this expedition was to find Sassacus, who had abandoned his fort, and fled into the wilderness; but the terror of the chief had enlivened his sagacity, and given wings to his feet; he fled to the Mohawks. The remainder of his tribe, which he had abandoned, fled to a swamp, near Fairfield, with their women and children; where they were assaulted, and compelled to surrender; but the men took advantage of the night, whilst the English were securing the women and children; stole away out of the swamp, and made their escape.

The Mohawks, dreading the resentment of the English, cut off the head of Sassacus, and sent it to Boston.

Thus ended the Pequot war, and the whole nation was exterminated. In August the troops returned to their homes, without the loss of one man, by the enemy.—Two only had died, with sickness. Peace was restored.

Before we enter upon that crisis, which fixed the destiny of New-England, known by the name of Philip's war, we will take a survey of the natives of the country, the number of their tribes, local residence, particular chiefs, &c.



## CHAPTER VI.

### NATIVES OF NEW-ENGLAND, WITH THEIR SACHEMS AND TRIBES.

The charter of the colony of Plymouth embraced three

Sachem's head.

Sachemdoms, including many small tribes ; the principal of these tribes were the Naucets, whose Sachem was Mashpee. They lay about the Cape.

On the west of the colony, and extending into Rhode-Island, lay the Packanockets, a numerous tribe, with their great Sachem Massasoit,\* whose influence and controul extended over the neighbouring tribes. The great Philip whose wars we are about to relate, became the Sachem of this tribe, and thus acquired his influence.

West of the Packanockets : extending along the coast, and about the Naraganset Bay, lay the Naragansets. These embraced several smaller tribes, under their great Sachem Miantinimo. This was the most numerous Sachemdom in New-England.

West of the Naragansets, lay the Pequots, whose destruction has been noticed. North of the Pequots lay the numerous tribes of the Haddam, Middletown, Wethersfield, Hartford, and Windsor, which were styled the river tribes ; but the most numerous of all these, was the tribe of Podunk's, at Windsor.

West of the Connecticut, not only upon the seacoast ; but extending back into the country, were various tribes, and Sachemdoms, inhabiting the fertile banks of all the numerous rivers and streams, with which the country abounds.

East of the river Indians, and north of the Pequots, were the Mohegans, which, extended into the now counties of Windham and Holland, who were governed by the great Sachem Uncas. This tribe, with the Pequots, in 1636, could muster one thousand warriors ; and the whole number of Connecticut Indians was then estimated at about 12,000.

The Rhode-Island Indians, at the commencement of Philip's war, were estimated at 2000 warriors, and about one half had fire-arms. Their whole number in this state, in 1636, was estimated at about 8000. The whole number, as well as the particular tribes in Massachusetts at the early settlement, was not known ; but at the commencement of Philip's war, they were estimated at 10 or 12,000.

The great Sachem of Massachusetts, resided upon an

---

\*Who made the first treaty with Governor Carver;

eminence at Dorchester, and his dominions extended, generally, over the adjacent country, lying about the great Bay. The mouth of Charles's river, was the place of general rendezvous for all the neighboring tribes.

In the (now) county of Worcester, by the Narraguck tribe; at Agawam or Ipswich, was another tribe, and at Naumkeag, (Salem) was another Sachemdom that embraced all the tribes in the eastern part of Massachusetts proper.

In New Hampshire, the Newechewannock, Wammoset, Patucket, Am-kenig, and Pennecook tribes, dwelt upon the principal rivers.

In the Province of Maine, the Norridgewock, Kennebeck, Penobscot, and several other tribes, dwelt upon the principal water. These were denominated Iroquois; and with the more eastern Indians, (called Abnagones) were numerous and warlike, and almost perpetually at war with the English.

The whole number of the New-England Indians, could never be exactly known; but it was at all times, sufficient to have destroyed the English before the settlement of Connecticut, and the destruction of the Pequots, after that time, the English had become too strong, and they were able to quell an insurrection of all the tribe, when united in one Grand Confederacy, and armed with muskets; as may be seen in the following war, styled Philip's war.

*Philip's War, 1675.* During a period of 55 years, the English had lived quietly with the savages of New-England; excepting the war which exterminated the Pequots, and some small collisions with the Narraganset, and other small tribes; but this war commenced as a war of extermination, by a coalition of all the tribes of New-England. This plot was communicated to the English, by a friendly Indian; but it was too late. He paid for his friendship, by falling a sacrifice to savage resentment, the next day, and the war opened by an attack upon the people of Swinney, as they returned from meeting on the Sabbath. In this attack, two men were killed and one wounded; the people dispersed and fled; the Indians pursued, and eight men were killed.

A body of four hundred thirty, was despatched from Boston into the enemy's country, and rescued Philip in his retreat. They commenced an attack, and dispers-

ed the savages, with the loss of one man killed, and one wounded.

They next compelled the Naragansets to a peace, and returned to Boston.

The English at Boston, hearing that Philip had fled to the Nipmucks, sent an embassy to renew the treaty with that tribe; but Philip was there, and excited them to war. The embassy was received by the explosion of an Indian ambush, which killed eight of the mission, and wounded their chief; the rest fled to a neighboring village, where they all assembled in one house.

Philip with his Indians pursued, burnt the village, and surrounded the house. Here commenced one of the most memorable attacks recorded in the wars of New-England. An incessant discharge of musketry pierced the house on every side, accompanied with the most Indian savage yells; but all without effect, excepting the loss of one man killed. They then set fire to a cart, loaded with swinging tow and other combustibles, and moved it up against the house; yet even this was extinguished by a special providential shower of rain. At this critical moment, Major Willard arrived with a party of English, and put the enemy to flight, with very considerable slaughter.

The enemy next appeared at Deerfield, on Connecticut river, and laid waste to the village. They next attacked Northfield, and killed eight men, and cut off Captain Burr, who was sent to the relief of Northfield, with a party of thirty men. Captain Lathrop, who was sent from Boston, to the relief of Deerfield, with a party of eighty men, and teams; fell into an Indian ambush, and lost 70 of his men, who were all buried in one grave.

This scene was distressing beyond what the Pilgrims had ever experienced; the whole country was filled with consternation and distress.

A Captain Mosely, who was near with a body of men, flew to the relief of his friends; dispersed the enemy, who fled and left 136 killed and wounded on the field.— Captain Mosely lost only two men.

The Indians next appeared at Springfield, and burnt 32 houses. This alarmed the General Court, then sitting at Boston, and they appointed a civil and ecclesiastical committee to inquire into the state of New-England; if possibly, they might discover and correct those crying

sins, that had brought such heavy judgments upon the land. The committee reported agreeable to their appointment, and a general reformation of manners and morals, were recommended.

The ravages of the enemy, had now become general in Massachusetts. Before the flames of Springfield were extinguished, 7 or 800 Indians attacked the town of Hatfield; but they were repulsed with very great carnage, and fled to Naraganset, and took refuge in a strong hold in the midst of a dismal swamp, where they felt secure. This fort was situated upon a rising ground in the midst of the swamp, and surrounded with palisades and trees so constructed as to be impenetrable; with but one entrance, which lay over a water, upon a single tree, and this pass was strongly guarded. In this fort were collected about 4,000 Indians.

The forces of New-England, consisting of about eighteen hundred men, and 160 friendly Indians, now rallied to the combat, under General Winslow. They pursued the enemy in the midst of frost and snow, with the greatest possible rapidity, and overtook a party at the entrance of the swamp, who exchanged one shot and fled to their strong hold. The English advanced and commenced an attack upon the fort; but were repulsed with loss. They soon renewed the attack with redoubled ardor, and entered the fort amidst a tremendous explosion of musketry, and put all to the sword that fell in their way; excepting about 360 warriors, and three hundred women and children, that were taken, and the rest fled and made their escape. The English next set fire to about 600 wigwams, which exhibited a solemn and awful scene. Amidst the rage of the flames, were heard the shrieks of the aged and the sick, the infant and the mother, and the groans of the dying. With all this distress, was connected the destruction of their domestic stores and magazines of corn. More than 1600 warriors were slain, and the affrighted fugitives became the miserable victims of death, the ensuing winter, for the want of those very stores, whose destruction they now witnessed.

This was a glorious day to New-England; although they had purchased this victory with the loss of six brave Captains and about 230 men, killed and wounded; yet God had given their enemies into their hands, and broken the strength of the Canaanite in the land.

It was now the 20th of December, and the driving snow and piercing cold, were very distressing to the wounded amongst the English; yet their sufferings were small compared to those of the savages, who had lost their all, in this murderous conflict.

Although the strength of the Canaanite was now broken, yet the same power in Canada that had furnished fire-arms for the war, now furnished allies to fill their ranks, and carry on an Indian predatory war.

In January, they laid Mendon in ashes. In February they destroyed Lancaster, and carried off the inhabitants into captivity; particularly Mrs. Rowlinson, the wife of their Minister, who was then absent.

The same torch consumed part of Marlborough, Sudbury, Chelmsford, and Medford; and even Plymouth witnessed the loss of two of her families. In March, they carried the torch into Warwick, Marlborough, and Sudbury again, Northampton and Groton, and committed a massacre at Springfield.

The English pursued the war with energy; but they suffered severely from the musketry of the savages, who had become fierce as bears bereft of their whelps.

This war of extermination, raged through the month of March, and near the close of the month, the towns of Rehoboth, Providence and Andover, suffered severely by conflagration. Sudbury was again attacked by about 500 Indians, and felt the loss of her brave Captain, and more than 50 men. The savages wreaked their vengeance on their prisoners, with the most cruel tortures.

These scenes of desolation, and distress called up the attention of the Pilgrims to a sense of their situation, and led them to eye the hand of God in these judgments, and to pour out their souls to him in the deepest humility, fasting, and prayer. One general spirit of supplication prevailed throughout the churches of New-England. God heard their prayers, and gave them a gracious answer of peace.

The ravages of the enemy were soon closed, for the want of supplies; and the parties which were scattered about the country, were hunted like wild beasts, by the united forces of Massachusetts and Connecticut. They were driven from Bridgewater, Medfield, Northampton, Hadley, Hatfield, and Rehoboth, with severe loss, and carnage.

These signal victories opened the hearts of the people of Massachusetts in a public thanksgiving to Almighty God, for the successes in the war.

The scene was now changed. The Maquas, a powerful tribe, resented some wrongs which they had suffered from Philip ; rose in arms ; fell upon his flying parties, and butchered them without mercy.

Struck with despair, Philip fled to Mount Hope, and his people sought safety by flight.

The troops of Massachusetts and Connecticut again entered the country of the Naragansets, and triumphed over their enemies, wherever they found them ; killing and destroying more than 2000 of the savages. Last of all they discovered the great Philip in one of his swamps, shot him, and carried his head to Plymouth, where it heightened the gratitude of their public thanksgiving, and gave a new zest to the joy of their hearts.

Thus fell great Philip, the head of this terrible confederacy against the Pilgrims of New-England ; and with him all hopes of further success in this bloody, savage war.

To recount the exploits of the heroes of New-England, who distinguished themselves in this memorable war, would exceed the limits of this work. Such coolness and bravery, as well as intrepidity and skill, as were displayed by both officers and troops, have rarely if ever been recorded ; and such a terrible overthrow, has perhaps never been witnessed since the days of Joshua, in the ancient Canaan.

Such was the severity of the war, that New-England lost more than 600 of her valiant sons, who fell in the field, or suffered a miserable captivity. Almost every family, was in mourning ; more than 600 buildings, (mostly dwelling houses,) had been burnt ; property to a great amount had been destroyed, and the colonies were greatly in debt. Yet they sustained all this loss, with becoming patience and resignation.

We will now carry forward the colony of New-Hampshire.



## CHAPTER VII.

## NEW-HAMPSHIRE.

"In the month of September, 1679, King Charles II. caused the following commission to be issued under the great seal of the realm, for the government of New-Hampshire.

"After inhibiting, and restraining the jurisdiction exercised by Massachusetts over the towns of Portsmouth, Dover, Exeter, and Hampton, and all other lands extending from three miles north of the Merrimac, to the Province of Maine, this commission appoints John Cotton, Esq. President for one year, and until another shall have been appointed by the same authority; also Richard Martin, William Vaughn, with four others, to be of the council, who were authorised to choose three others in the province, to be added to them. The President to appoint a deputy to preside in his absence; and the President, or his deputy, with five counsellors, to form a quorum. They were to meet at Portsmouth, in twenty days after the arrival of the commission, and publish it. They were constituted, a court opened for the administration of justice, according to the laws of England, so far as circumstances would permit: reserving the right of appeal to the king in council, for actions of fifty pounds value. They were to appoint military officers, and take all needful measures for defence against the common enemy. Liberty of conscience was allowed to all protestants; those of the church of England to be particularly encouraged. For the support of government they were to continue the present taxes, until an assembly could be called; to which end they were to issue writs of election, within three months, under the province seal for calling an assembly, to whom the President should recommend the passing such laws as should establish their allegiance good, order, and defence; and the raising taxes in such manner, and proportion, as they should see fit. All laws to be approved by the President and council, and then to remain in force until the king's pleasure could be known: for which purpose they should be sent to England by the first ships.

In case of the President's death, his deputy to second

him; and on the death of a counsellor, the remainder were to elect another, and send over his name, with the names of two other meet persons, that the king might appoint one of the three.

The king engaged for himself and his successors, to continue the privilege of an assembly, in the same manner and form, unless by inconvenience arising therefrom, he or his heirs should see cause to alter the same."

On the first of March 1680 the first legislative assembly was convened, according to this commission, or charter. They proceeded to declare the colony of New-Hampshire free, and independent of the colony of Massachusetts, and to enact wise and salutary laws.

The peace of this government was of short duration. Mason\* came over, and demanded a seat in government, which was granted; but he soon returned to England in disgust, and made a partial surrendry of his claims to the crown, and mortgaged the remainder to Edmond Cranfield, Esq. who was appointed Lieutenant-Governor, and commander in chief, of New-Hampshire.

In 1682, Cranfield repaired to his government with a commission from the crown, with "full powers to call, adjourn, prorogue, and dissolve general courts; to have a negative voice in all the acts of government, to suspend any counsellor at his will, (which barred his future election,) to appoint a deputy Governor, judges, justices, and other officers; and to exercise the powers of vice admiral."

Here commenced a new order of things. Cranfield arrived, disclosed his commission, and commenced a system of tyranny and persecution. A new assembly was called, many new laws were enacted, and a docteur of £250 voted the governor, which softened, for a time, the rigors of his administration. The assembly was adjourned.

In January, 1683, the assembly met according to adjournment. New collisions sprang up, and the governor dissolved the assembly; this threw the colony into confusion, and the cry of "*Liberty and reform*," became the order of the day.

These scenes led to new troubles. Mason appeared again; set up his claims, and demanded that all lands

---

\* Son and heir of the original grantee.

and estates should be held of him by lease, upon an annual rent ; and the governor favoured the claim. The people resisted, prosecutions commenced, and judgments were rendered in favour of Mason ; but he could not obtain any consideration ; all was anxiety and alarm, and the people petitioned the king.

The governor called an assembly to quiet the people ; but they were not cordial to his views, and he dissolved them. The governor next commenced a religious persecution, upon the English statutes of nonconformity, and actually obtained judgment against the Reverend Joshua Moody, minister of Portsmouth, one of the worthies of New-England, and committed him to prison, for the term of six months, without bail.

The governor next attempted to levy taxes, by the advice of his council, without the consent of the assembly ; which roused the people to a just sense of their rights ; and they exhibited such complaints to the king as caused his removal ; and Barcton, the Lieutenant Governor, succeeded to the chair ; where he remained until succeeded by Dudley, as President of New-England.

The spirit of liberty, which prevailed throughout the colonies, gave great offence to the king,\* and he determined to check and control it : accordingly he appointed Sir Edward Randolph, as the special agent of the crown, to remove all their charters by writs of *Quo Warranto*, and *Scire Facias*, and appointed Joseph Dudley, Esq. President, and Sir William Stoughton vice President, with Simon Bradstreet, Robert Mason, and thirteen others as Counsellors. This government embraced Massachusetts, New-Hampshire, Maine,† and Rhode-Island.

This form of government commenced May 1686 to the utter exclusion of those legislative assemblies, which had become so offensive to the governors of the crown. From this council of the country were selected judges of the county courts, with right of appeal to their supe-

---

\*James II.

†Sir Ferdinand Gorges had obtained of the crown a charter of this district, extending from the river Piscataqua, to Sagadahock, in the year 1620 ; but failing in his attempts to settle the country, it was annexed to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, about the year, 1652.

rior courts, to be holden at Boston, and from thence to the crown. Justice courts, and probate courts, were organized under this government, and a complete new order of things commenced in New England.

To strengthen this government yet further, Sir Edmond Andros, late governor of New York, was appointed Captain general, and commander in chief over the colonies of New-England, not including Plymouth. To this government a council was added, five of whom, with the governor, made a quorum, with powers almost unlimited. To this government the colony of New-York was annexed.

This new order of things in New-England, arose out of the change which had taken place in England.—Charles II. had died, and James II. succeeded to the throne, 1685. The people of England were groaning under his despotic sway, as well as the colonies.

When the people of England expelled James from the throne in 1688, and conferred it on William and Mary, the people of Boston rose in arms, seized Andros and sent him to England,

In this unsettled state of things the colonies resumed their charters, and New-Hampshire again, put herself under the protection of Massachusetts.

About this time, the heirs of Mason sold their claims for £750, free from entail, to Samuel Allen, of London, and he obtained a commission for the government of New-Hampshire, with the appointment of John Usher, his son-in-law, as deputy governor, with full powers in Allen's absence; together with twelve counsellors, who acted under the crown, independent of the legislative assemblies.

In 1692, Usher took possession of his government, in the midst of an extensive Indian war, which filled that country with distress, and drenched it in blood. The Indians of Nova Scotia, and Carriacou, became engaged in this war, and like the war of Philip, it was a war of extermination.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## NEW-HAMPSHIRE, CONTINUED.

*King William's war.*—The revolution in England which drove James from his throne, threw him into the arms of Lewis XIV. king of France; brought William, Prince of Orange, with Mary, his wife,\* to the throne of England, and involved the nation in a war with France.

The passions which kindled this war, extended to New-England; and through the instrumentality of the Baron de Castine, (who resided at Penobscot,) and the governor of Canada, the eastern Indians were induced to take up the hatchet. The Baron had received some pointed injury from Sir Edmond Andros, during his administration. And about the year 1676, 400 Indians, upon the river Cocheco, had been seized by a Major Waldron; sent abroad, and sold as slaves.

Part of these Indians had now returned, and were thirsty for blood. These facts added to the national war, were the cause of immediate hostilities.

The savages surprised the town of Dover, upon the Cocheco, where they murdered Major Waldron in a most barbarous manner, with 22 others, and 29 were carried captives to Canada; five or six houses, with the mills, were burnt, and the savages made their escape.

They next surprised a village on Oyster river; killed 18 men at work, seized a block-house; murdered several children, and carried the women captives to Canada.

When winter set in, Count Frontenac, Governor of Canada, let loose his savages in three divisions, accompanied with French Canadians, who spread carnage and desolation throughout the English settlements, on their frontier. 1690, Schenectady (a Dutch settlement on the Mohawk,) fell the first victim.

A settlement at Salmon Falls, was next surprised by another party; a sharp action commenced, 80 men, women and children were either killed, or taken; the village was plundered, and the cattle driven off.

A party of 140 men pursued, overtook and dispersed

---

\*Daughter of James II.

the savages, after a sharp action, and brought back the spoil.

In the spring, a third party from Quebec, surprised and destroyed the settlement at Casco, and the eastern settlers abandoned their villages, and fled to Wells.

Alarmed at this daring enterprise, the colonies of New-England, resolved to destroy the power of the French in Canada, at a blow. They accordingly united in fitting out a fleet and armament against Quebec; under the command of Sir Wm. Phipps; but the season was too far advanced, and the expedition failed. The expenses of this expedition, caused the first paper money in New-England.

This war continued to rage, and the eastern settlements suffered very severely, down to the peace of Ryswick, 1697. In the winter following, hostilities ceased in America, by the treaty of Casco.



## CHAPTER IX.

### HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS, CONTINUED.

*Massachusetts.*—The character and adventures of the first settlers of Massachusetts, have been noticed, with the charter obtained from Charles I. and the spirit and genius of their government, the loss of their charter in the reign of Charles II. 1684; together with the union of the governments of Massachusetts and New-Hampshire, under Governors sent out by the crown, under James II. 1686, have also been noticed. Upon the accession of William and Mary, Sir Wm. Phipps was appointed Governor of Massachusetts, and arrived at Boston, with their new charter, May 14, 1692. This charter embraced all the limits of the old, together with the colony of Plymouth, the Provinces of Maine and Nova Scotia; extending to the river St. Lawrence on the north, and the South Sea on the west, excepting New-Hampshire and New-York.

The council who were named in this charter, were mostly descendants of the first worthies of Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies, and were generally of the old council.

The most important subject that interested the public

at this time, was the confusion of witcheraf, that desolated the town of Salem. For the honor of New-England, it is strongly to be desired that a subject so disgraceful in itself, might have been forever buried in oblivion. The particulars of this contemptible transaction, may be found in Hutchinson's history of Massachusetts Bay.

During the administration of Sir Wm. Phipps, he attempted the reduction of Canada, by an expedition against Quebec, which failed; and upon his return to Boston, he fell into a controversy with the Captain of an English frigate, which occasioned him a voyage to England, in his own defence, where he died, February 18, 1697.

In 1696, Lord Bellmont was appointed Governor of New-York, Massachusetts and New-Hampshire. His Lordship arrived at Boston, in May, 1699, and entered upon his high commission, as Governor of New-England. During the first year of his Lordship's administration, he entered with zeal and spirit into a system of measures for the suppression of piracy, and was so fortunate as to seize, in the port of Boston, the noted pirate Kid, and caused him to be executed. Many other pirates were taken, and the infamous practice generally suppressed.

In the year 1700, his Lordship returned to New-York, where he died, March, 1701: and the government devolved upon Lieutenant Governor Stoughton. He died May, 1702, and was succeeded by Governor Dudley, whose administration was in all respects, the reverse of that of the Earl of Bellmont. *The people's journal.*

In 1703, an Indian invasion commenced from Canada, and the storm first broke upon Deerfield. Forty persons were killed, and about 100 captives were carried off into the wilderness, on their way to Canada. Amongst the captives, were the Rev. Mr. Williams, their Minister, with his wife and five small children.

When the savages had collected their prisoners and booty, they set fire to the village and made a hasty retreat,—February, 1703.

On the second day, the strength of Mrs. Williams, began to fail, and her husband was called to witness a most distressing scene: her nose and his hand put into her head, and she expired without a groan. About twenty

others shared the fate of Mrs. Williams, on their way through the desert; and on the 25th of March, the survivors reached Canada, where they were treated with humanity by Governor Vaudreville. This war continued to rage, until it was closed by the peace of Utrecht, 1713.

On the death of Queen Ann, August, 1714, the House of Hanover succeeded to the throne of England, under George I. who sent out Colonel Burgess, as successor to Governor Dudley, and Colonel Tabor, was appointed Lieutenant-Governor.

In 1716, Colonel Shute succeeded Governor Burges, and William Dummer, Esq. was appointed Lieutenant-Governor. This administration was more oppressive than that of Governor Dudley; and in the year 1720, the dissensions in the government, the depreciation of the paper money, and the ravages of the eastern Indians, involved the colony in disorder and distress. The people now began seriously to feel the loss of their liberties under their new charter, with its despotic crown Governors. At this time the small pox broke out in Boston, which caused the first inoculations in New-England.

In 1722, the strife between principle and prerogative, became so serious, that the Governor deserted his government, and returned to England, and the Lieutenant-Governor took the chair.

His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor, met the Assembly with a very conciliatory address, which was kindly received, and as kindly answered by the following address, from an aged Senator, Mr. Sewall, who had been assistant under the old charter:

“If your honor and this honorable board please to give me leave, I will speak a few words, upon this solemn occasion.

“Although the unerring providence of God has brought your Honor to the chair of government in a cloudy and tempestuous season, yet you have this for your encouragement, that the people you have to do with, are a part of the *Israel of God*, and you may expect to have of the prudence and patience of Moses, communicated to you, for your conduct. It is evident that the Almighty Saviour counselled the first planter, to remove and settle here, and they dutifully followed his advice: therefore he will never leave nor forsake them nor the is; so that you must needs be happy in seeking their happiness and



welfare, which your birth and education will incline you to do. *Difficilia quæe patet.* I promise myself that they who sit at this board, will yield their faithful advice to your Honor, according to the duty of their place."

This address needs no comment.

We will now bring forward the history of Connecticut.



## CHAPTER X.

### HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS, CONTINUED.

*General offers of Connecticut.*—In 1633, the title of Lords Say, and Seal, and Buckle, was conveyed to the colony of Connecticut, for £1000.

In 1650, Commissioners of the United Colonies of New-England, and the colony of New York, settled by arbitration their line of division and bounds.

In 1657, died Governor Eaton, greatly beloved in New England.

In 1661, the colony of Connecticut, by their agent John Mason, extinguished, by purchase, all the Indian claims to the colony; and in 1662, they obtained from King Charles II. that charter which constituted them a body politic, with the confirmation of their ancient grant from the Earl of Warwick. This patent or charter embraced a width of 120 miles, from the south line of Massachusetts, which interfered with the patent of the Duke of York, and the settlement of the Dutch at Manhatoes; also upon the settlements in New-Jersey and Pennsylvania.

In 1664, this claim was overruled, and the sea fixed as the south boundary of Connecticut.

The charter of Charles II. included the colony of New-Haven; but the two colonies were not united until 1665, when it became necessary to form a union of interest to protect their chartered rights.

At this time the king sent out three commissioners to inquire into the state of the colonies.

In 1672, the MS. Laws of Connecticut, were digested into a regular code, and printed at Cambridge (Massachusetts,) in a small folios, with duplicate blank pages,

for the insertion of all subsequent laws; and in 1699 the blanks were filled.

In 1674, Sir Edmund Andros, governor of New-York, claimed all the lands west of the Connecticut river; and at the head of a military force, commenced an attack upon Saybrook; but was repelled in a dignified, and soldier-like manner, by Captain Thomas Bulfinch of Hartford, who commanded a strong military force at that station. Sir Edmund withdrew his forces, and embarked for Long-Island.

In 1675, commenced the famous Indian war, which has been noticed under the head of *Phillip's war*.

From the year 1677 to 1683—4, a succession of controverted claims arose between Connecticut and Rhode-Island, which ultimately terminated in favour of Connecticut.

In 1683—4, Governor Dongan, succeeded Governor Andros, in the colony of New-York, and an amicable adjustment took place between that colony and Connecticut, in settling their boundary line as it now stands.

In 1685, King James II. succeeded to the throne of England upon the death of his brother Charles II. and he sent out Edward Randolph with writs of *Quo Warranto* against the Charter of Connecticut, and the colony was thrown into a high state of alarm.

In December, 1686, Sir Edmund Andros arrived at Boston, with a special appointment from the crown, as governor general of New-England.

At the usual October Session of the assembly in Connecticut, 1687, Sir Edmund arrived at Hartford with his suit, and a military escort of more than 60 men; demanded the charter, and declared the government dissolved. Cool deliberations ensued, with strong remonstrances against the measure, until evening; when the candles were lit, and the charter was brought in, and laid upon the table, amidst a great collection of spectators, and an anxious, distressed assembly, awaiting the crisis for the surrender of their liberties. At this eventful moment the lights were extinguished; the charter was instantly removed, by some (then unknown\*) hand, and placed in the hollow of an aged oak, standing in

---

\*Afterwards avowedly the act of a Captain Wadsworth.

front of the seat of the Hon. Samuel Wyllys, then a member of the assembly. All was quiet, the candles were relit; but the charter was irrecoverably gone.

Stung with rage, and disappointment, Sir Edmond retired, and the next day, issued the following proclamation.

“At a general Assembly held at Hartford, October 31, 1687. His Excellency Sir Edmond Andros, Knight, and Captain General, and Governor of his Majesty’s territories and dominions in New-England, by order from his Majesty king James II. king of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, the 31st of October, 1687, took into his hands the government of the Colony of Connecticut, it being by his Majesty annexed to Massachusetts, and other colonies, under his Majesty’s Government.”

In this form did this modern Nero enter upon the administration of his government. Smooth were his promises; but bitter and severe were his measures; and his government was truly despotic.

In 1683 he was appointed governor of New-York, and the same imperious sway, reigned throughout the whole. *The people mourned.*

This rod, although severe, was not of long duration; God heard the cries of his people, both in America and England, and raised up William, Prince of Orange, with Mary his wife, to fill the throne of England; and in 1689, the news reached America; the people of Boston rose in arms, seized Andros, and sent him to England. The governor, and council of Connecticut resumed the government; and Captain Wadsworth restored the charter, from *charter oak*. *The people rejoiced.*

The war in Europe which followed this revolution in England, involved New-England in an Indian war, which has been noticed under New-Hampshire, as king *William’s war*.

Amidst the distress of this war, in 1694, Col. Benjamin Fletcher entered upon his appointment as governor of New-York; vested with full powers to command the militia of Connecticut, and the neighbouring colonies. At the October session of the assembly, Colonel Fletcher came to Hartford and demanded the surrendry of the militia, in his Majesty’s name, and in the most laconic terms; which was refused. Colonel Fletcher ordered

the train-bands of Hartford to assemble for duty, and they obeyed his orders. Colonel Bayard his aid, attempted to read the commission of Colonel Fletcher; but Captain Wadsworth ordered the drums to beat, which interrupted Colonel Bayard; this was repeated again and again. When Captain Wadsworth found that Colonel Bayard was determined to proceed, he turned to his Excellency, and said:—*Sir, if I am interrupted again, I will make the sun shine through you instantly.* His Excellency withdrew from the scene, and returned immediately to New-York.

In May, 1698, General Winthrop was raised to the chair of the colony of Connecticut, and the Assembly, by a special act, was formed into two Houses, termed the upper and lower house of Assembly. In May, 1699, the two Houses acted separately, for the first time.

In 1701, the General Assembly, at their May session, resolved that the October session, hereafter, should be held at New-Haven; and that the Supreme Court should be held, hereafter, at New-Haven, on the first Tuesday of October, annually.

This year King William died, and was succeeded by Queen Ann.

In 1703, Queen Ann declared war against France. This again opened the frontiers of the northern colonies, to the ravages of an Indian war, which continued to rage down to the peace of Utrecht, 1713.

In 1707, died governor Winthrop, who was succeeded by governor Saltonstall.

The year 1709 became memorable for a general union of the northern colonies, in an expedition against Canada, under the command of General Nicholson.

The year 1710, also became memorable for the capture of Port-Royal, (Nova Scotia,) by the united efforts of New-England, assisted by a fleet and armament from England, all which was intrusted to the command of General Nicholson.

In 1711, Queen Ann sent out another fleet and armament to co-operate with the colonies against Canada, and general Nicholson was honored with the command. The colonies entered with spirit, and zeal into the enterprise: but their fleet was shattered and destroyed in a fog, at the mouth of the St. Lawrence. The whole plan

was defeated, and the remainder of the fleet returned to England.

*Yale College.*—In 1699 and 1700, a number of the Ministers of Connecticut, at their private meetings, contributed a few books as the basis of a library for a College, and appointed one of their number as librarian, and ten others of their number, as trustees. This effort became popular; and in 1701, an act of incorporation for the College was obtained at the October session, and in November, the Rev. Samuel Pierson, of Killingworth, was chosen the first Rector. The College continued in his parish during his life.

In 1702, the first Commencement was held at Saybrook.

In 1703, a general contribution was raised throughout the colony, to erect a suitable building for the College.

1703, was rendered memorable by the convention of the Synod at Saybrook, which established the famous Saybrook Platform upon the basis of the Westminster and Savoy confessions of faith.

In 1713, the College library had increased to the number of 900 volumes, and 46 graduates had received the honors of the College.

In 1714 Rector Pierson died, and was succeeded by Rector Andrews, of Milford. From this time the classes were divided between Milford and Saybrook, until 1717, when a majority of the students assembled at Wethersfield, under the care of the Rev. Elisha Williams. The same year, a fund of about \$1500, was raised by subscription, to build a house for the College, and the Commencement was held at New-Haven.

In 1718, the College was handsomely endowed by the Hon. Elisha Yale, Governor of the East India Company, which gave to the Institution the honor of his name.

This Institution has continued to flourish under a succession of worthy Rectors and Presidents, down to this time, and now claims an equal rank with the first University in America.

## CHAPTER XI.

## MASSACHUSETTS AND NEW-HAMPSHIRE, CONTINUED.

*Fourth Indian War.*—Through the instrumentality of the Jesuit Ralle, who resided at Norridgewag, the eastern Indians were excited to war against the eastern settlements, at a time when France and England, were at peace in Europe. The Indians began their ravages in 1717, by destroying the cattle, &c. with other excesses. The English repelled these aggressions, and in 1721, a military force was sent from the county of York, to sieze Ralle at Norridgewag, and convey him to Boston. Ralle made his escape, and the detachment seized his papers; these disclosed a recent correspondence with the Governor of Canada, which unfolded the whole intrigue, with the promise of aid in the war.

In 1722, the Indians increased their ravages, carried off several families from Merrymeeting-bay, and burnt the town of Brunswick.

In 1723, they surprised the town of Dover, and extended their ravages on to Lamprey river, killed one man and his child, and carried off his wife and three children. In 1724, several repeated attacks were made upon these settlements, and many of the English were either killed or carried into captivity. These depredations roused up the English, and they sent another detachment to Norridgewag; killed Ralle the Jesuit, and about 80 Indians; destroyed his church, &c.

This blow roused the resentment of the Indians, and they renewed their depredations with increased ferocity, and many of the settlers soon fell a prey to their savage barbarities. The war now raged with violence; a Captain Lovewell, with his company, were ambushed in the wilderness, by a numerous party of Indians, and after a desperate conflict, they secured their retreat, with the loss of their brave Captain, and twenty-three of their number, killed and wounded.

The severity of this action, caused the Indians to withdraw, and a negotiation with the Governor of Canada, soon after commenced, that led to a cessation of hostilities, and the restoration of several captives.

A treaty was held at Boston, in the spring of 1726; the conditions of peace were ratified at Falmouth, soon

after; and trading houses were erected in many parts of the Indian country, which served to promote a good understanding between the parties.

As soon as this war was closed, the old leaven of discord began to prevail in the government.

Upon the accession of King George II. Governor Burnet was appointed Governor of Massachusetts and New-Hampshire, 1727. In July, 1729, he arrived at Boston, and entered upon the duties of his administration. A controversy about a permanent salary, opened with the first session of the General Court, and continued to rage with bitterness, between the parties, until September, 1729, when the Governor died, and closed the contest.

In August, 1730, Governor Belcher arrived in Boston, as successor to Governor Burnet, and the old quarrel was revived. Although the point respecting permanent salary, was overruled by the General Court; yet others sprang up and raged until Governor Belcher was removed, and Governor Shirley succeeded to the chair, 1740.

Under this administration, the old controversy was healed; but a land bank, and paper money, greatly distressed the province of Massachusetts.

The Spanish war, which commenced this year, gave some diversion to the parties; turned their attention to the defence of the Province, and prepared them to meet the approaching French war.

Amongst the last acts of Governor Belcher's administration, was the settlement of the boundary line between Massachusetts and New-Hampshire. This long and sharp controversy was finally closed by commissioners appointed by the crown, who settled it according to the charter of Massachusetts. The next year, this boundary line was duly established, and the colony of New-Hampshire, became independent of Massachusetts.—Benning Wentworth, was appointed Governor of the former, and William Shirley, Governor of the latter.

Governor Wentworth sailed for America, soon after his appointment, where he arrived in December, 1741; and was hailed as the immediate deliverer of the colony.

Governor Wentworth maintained a good understanding with Governor Shirley, and their measures were pursued with general harmony.

The Spanish war continued to rage, and in 1749, the French took part with Spain, and were involved in the

contest. This French war brought on collisions between Nova Scotia and Cape Breton, and the eastern colonies: and involved them in the war. The French commenced a successful attack upon the Island of Cap-sau, which was defended by a small block-house, and captured the garrison; but an attack upon Newfoundland, at the same time, failed.

They commenced another attack, soon after, upon Annapolis, (formerly Port Royal,) but were repulsed with loss. These attacks, laid open the northern and eastern frontier of New-England, to the renewed ravages of the savage foe.

Louisburg,\* next to Quebec, had then become the strongest fortress in America, and was to France, a strong hold of more importance than even Quebec.

It had now become an object of the first importance, that the colonies should possess or destroy, this Dunkirk of America. Governor Shirley conceived the plan, and communicated his views to Governor Wentworth, who approved of the measure.

To prepare the way for this important enterprise, Governor Shirley, obtained a grant of £200, from the General Court, to strengthen the castle at the entrance of Boston harbour, together with the frontier posts generally, and the fortress of Annapolis, in Nova Scotia. He next opened his plan to the British Ministry, and requested a naval armament for the purpose. In February, the Governor opened his plan to the General Court, under the injunction of an oath of secrecy; but the boldness of the measure, astonished the Court, and they rejected it, as an enterprise too great, even to be attempted. The merchants of Boston, and the friends of Governor Shirley, opened the subject anew to the Court, by numerous petitions, and the question was carried by a majority of one.

All parties at once entered with zeal and spirit into the measure. The Governor next laid an embargo throughout the colony, and sent despatches to the other colonies, as far south as Pennsylvania, requesting an embargo, and a cordial co-operation in an expedition against Louisburg, which was rejected.

New England stood alone to prosecute the plan.—

---

\*This city stands upon the Island of Cape Breton.



Massachusetts raised three thousand, two hundred and fifty men, exclusive of commissioned officers; Connecticut, five hundred, and Rhode-Island and New-Hampshire, each three hundred. The naval force consisted of twelve ships, with numerous transports; and in three months, General Pepperell embarked with 4,000 troops. On the 24th of March, the fleet sailed for Nantucket, and arrived at Canso the 4th of April, 1745.

Roger Wolcott, Esq. Lieutenant-Governor of Connecticut, appeared at the head of the colony troops, and held the second command in the expedition.

Governor Shirley had sent a request to Commodore Warren, upon the West-India station, to support the expedition with his squadron; but he declined to engage without orders; the Commodore, however, received orders from the Admiralty, in a few days, and on the last of April, joined the expedition with his squadron.

On the 30th of April, the troops were all landed at Chapeauroque; the fleet took their station off the harbour of Louisburg, and the city was invested before they had knowledge of the expedition. Such was the general surprise, that the troops destroyed all the houses and stores without the walls, and took the grand battery, without exchanging a shot. Thus having entered upon the arduous duties before them, they next drew their cannon through a deep morass, covered by the fire of the main battery, which they had taken from the enemy; this fire became very alarming and destructive to the town. Having surmounted the difficulties of the morass, and constructed batteries for the cannon, they were now prepared to co-operate with the fleet, in one general attack upon the town.

At this critical moment, a store-ship from France, appeared off the harbor, for the relief of the garrison, and was taken by the New-England fleet. This was a valuable acquisition to the besiegers, and a severe blow to the besieged.

The General next ordered a detachment of 400 men, to attack and carry the island battery, which failed with the loss of 60 men killed, and 116 taken prisoners. This occasioned the General to send an express to Boston, for a reinforcement.

Massachusetts sent on 400 men, and Connecticut 200;

and at this eventful moment, one 60. and one 40 gun ship, arrived from England, and joined the fleet, May 22.— Early in June, two 60 gun ships, and one of 86 guns, arrived, which augmented the squadron to eleven sail, besides the provincial fleet.

Elated with his prospects, the General pushed the siege by a heavy cannonade from his batteries, which silenced the harbour battery; demolished the west gate, and greatly distressed the town. At the same time the fleet made a movement to enter the harbour, and co-operate with the troops in a general assault. Alarmed at these movements, the Governor sent out a flag, and proposed articles of capitulation. These were rejected, and others were sent in by the General and Commodore, which were accepted; and on the 17th of June, they entered the town in triumph, and the garrison were embarked for France.

The news of this glorious event, reached Boston, by express, the 3d of July, and spread like lightning, throughout the country. Joy, universal, beamed in every countenance and glowed in every breast, and exultation burst forth from all parts of the colonies.

The French flag continued to wave upon the walls of Louisburg, which decoyed in several India ships, supposed to be worth £600,000 sterling.

Governor Shirley embarked immediately for Louisburg, and persuaded the most of the army to continue in garrison through the winter, and took the command until his Majesty's pleasure could be known.

An armament of seven ships of the line, sailed from France, early in July, 1746, destined for the conquest of Nova Scotia, with orders to touch at Louisburgh; but upon intelligence at sea, of the fall of Louisburg, they returned to France.

The boldness of this enterprise against Louisburg, and the success with which it was crowned, astonished, not only America, but Europe, and led to a system of measures highly interesting and advantageous, both to England and her colonies.

England contemplated the reduction of Canada, and France contemplated the reduction of Louisburg and Nova Scotia, together with the whole American seaboard, from Georgia to Maine. To effect this, she fitted out her Brest fleet of 70 sail; fourteen of which were of the

line; destined for the American coast. This fleet left Rochelle the 22d of June, with a land force of 3 or 4,000 men, destined for the reduction of Louisburg, and the conquest of Nova Scotia. Detachments of this fleet were seen in those seas and spread a general alarm throughout the American coast; but that God who had planted his church in the wilderness and given her such a signal victory over the strong hold of Louisburg, appeared in as signal a manner for the protection of this conquest. Storms and adverse winds arose, which scattered the French fleet, and drove them off the American coast; some to the West-Indies: some foundered at sea, and the remnant returned to France, with the melancholy tidings that the whole expedition had failed; that one of their Admirals had poisoned himself, through grief, and another had run mad and stabbed himself, through rage and disappointment; and that the remnant of the fleet, had been overtaken by a cold and terrible storm off Cape Sable, where they suffered severely, as they bid a final adieu to the American coast.

Thus ended the French armada against the colonies of America; and thus the church in the wilderness might say with the illustrious Queen Elizabeth, "*Deus fluit, dissipantur.*"

All prospects of success on the part of France, appeared from this time to fail; and the war languished until the 30th of April, 1748, when hostilities ceased, under the preliminaries of Aix-la-Chapelle. In October following, peace was ratified and confirmed: all conquests were given up, and all things remained in *statu quo*.

The people of Massachusetts, now began to feel the pressure of their affairs. A flood of paper money had been issued to support the exigencies of the war; taxes had multiplied, and this paper money had depreciated almost to a cypher; all which threatened the ruin of trade and of morals.

Parliament made a grant to the colonies of New-England, to indemnify the expenses of the capture of Louisburg: and Massachusetts redeemed her paper money with silver and gold, which rendered her medium permanent.

The ravages of the French and Indians from Canada, were carried on through the war and into the year 1749

upon the frontier towns generally, with great severity; and many persons were killed, wounded, or carried away captive to Canada; but the settlements were not burnt, nor the people butchered, as formerly. This partial humanity, the enemy turned to his advantage, by extorting large sums of money for the ransom of their captives, which rendered New-England tributary to Canada.\*

The long contested claims of Mason, in New-Hampshire, had been happily settled by purchase; but the Assembly delayed their acceptance so long, that a company of speculators stepped in; purchased the claim of the heir at law, and took his quit-claim, which threw the colony into a high ferment, and in 1748, these speculators began to grant townships, and settle their lands.—The heirs of Allen took the alarm, and opposed the measure; all which opened a controversy that continued down to the close of the American Revolution.

To increase these difficulties, a contest was opened with Massachusetts, about the support of Fort Dunbar; a controversy sprang up, at the same time, between the Governor and the Assembly, which suspended all the ordinary business of the colony for three years. This brought a reproach upon the colony, both in England and America, and they were considered as in a state of actual rebellion.

In 1752, these troubles were all closed, and the affairs of the colony became tranquil.



## CHAPTER XII.

### GENERAL AFFAIRS OF THE COLONIES.

The peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, which restored again the conquests of France and Britain, in America and in India, lulled the two nations into that state of security, which was improved by France, through a labyrinth of

---

\*New-England lost in this war, 3 or 4000 of her sons, and the wars of the last century have occasioned to New-England, the loss of about 200,000 souls. The loss was felt by New-York as well as New-England, though not in an equal ratio.—*Hutchinson's History.*

intrigues, to carry her ambitious plans into effect, upon a more extended scale than before. To accomplish this, she attempted to unite with Spain, in a family compact, but failed; yet Louis XIV. opened his intrigues in Italy. France at the same time, continued to mature her plans, and sow the seeds of war in America.

By the treaty of Utrecht, France had ceded to England, the whole country of Nova Scotia; but the boundaries had never been defined. Soon after the war, the English built the town of Halifax, in a commanding position, in that country, and sent out a colony of about 3000 families to settle it; this step kindled a fire about boundaries.

France had connected her settlements in Canada, with her settlements in Louisiana, by a chain of military posts, which extended from Quebec to New-Orleans. With these, she expected to command the trade and friendship of the savages of the wilderness.

As the preparations of the parties progressed in America, collisions ensued, until the French and Indians in Nova Scotia, rose in arms and began their ravages.

An armed force at the same time, surprised a fortress, or rather a trading establishment, upon the river Ohio, which belonged to the Ohio Company, of Virginia; murdered the people, and carried off the plunder, to the amount of twenty thousand pounds.\* They next seized on another English fort at the forks of the Monongahela, with a force of one thousand men, and eighteen pieces of cannon.

The French next constructed a strong and regular fortress at the forks of the Monongahela, and called it Fort Duquesne, which established a regular communication between the river Ohio and the lakes, and threatened the ruin of the Virginia company.

The Governor of Virginia, despatched Major George Washington, with a letter to the commanding officer at Fort Duquesne, demanding an explanation. The mission, perilous as it was, was faithfully executed, and the an-

---

\*This company had obtained a grant from the crown, of 600,000 acres of land, lying upon the river Ohio; for the purposes of settling the country and extending a trade with the Indians.

swer of the commandant returned, "that he acted according to orders."

This mission was soon followed by orders from the British Minister, that the colonies should assist Virginia, and repel the French.

A regiment was raised in Virginia, for the service, and Major George Washington, now Colonel, appointed to the command.

South Carolina sent out one company, and New-York sent out two companies, to join Colonel Washington, which formed a force of 400 men.

Colonel Washington, surprised and attempted to cut off a party of French from Fort Duquesne, near the Great Meadows, (so called) which he defeated with great loss; but the next day, De Villiers, the French commander, surprised Colonel Washington, with a strong party of about 900 French and Indians.

The Colonel had erected a stockade, to cover his party, which enabled him to maintain such a desperate resistance, as to obtain an honourable capitulation, and thus brought off his party with safety, by delivering up his temporary fortress, July 4th, 1754.

When the tidings of the depredations of the French, upon the Ohio Company, arrived in England, the Lords of Trade and Plantations, recommended "that commissioners be immediately appointed in America, to effect a union between the colonies, and a league of friendship with the neighboring Indians."

The recommendation was complied with, and a convention of the Governors and principal gentlemen from all the colonies, met at Albany, in the same year.\*

In this Congress, it was proposed "that a grand council should be formed, of members chosen from all the Assemblies, and sent from all the colonies; which council, with a Governor General appointed by the crown, should be empowered to make general laws, and to raise money in all the colonies, for the defence of the whole." This plan was disapproved by the delegates of Connecticut, and the Provincial Assemblies generally; and wholly rejected in England, by the Ministry.

The British Minister, next sent out the following

---

\*This Congress was in session at the time of Colonel Washington's defeat.

plan:—"That the Governors of the colonies, with one or more of their councillors, should form a convention, to concert measures for the general defence; erect forts, and raise such numbers of men, as they should judge necessary; and that they should draw on the British treasury, for such sums as should be thought requisite to reimburse their expenses; Parliament to reimburse the whole by taxes on the colonies, after the war." This plan was rejected by all the colonies.

*Campaign of 1755.*—The campaign opened with the plan of four grand expeditions; the first against Fort Duquesne; the second against Nova Scotia; the third against Crown Point, and the fourth against Niagara.

General Braddock embarked at Cork, January, 1755, with 1500 men, and arrived in Virginia, about the first of March, destined against Fort Duquesne.

The French fitted out a strong armament for the American service, early in the spring; consisting of twenty ships of the line, with frigates, transports, &c. carrying 4000 men, under the command of the Baron Dieskau.

The British Minister despatched a fleet of seventeen ships of the line, and seven frigates, with a land force of 6000 men, under the command of Admirals Boscawin and Holbourn, to watch the motions of the enemy upon the American station.

Both fleets appeared off the coast of Newfoundland, at the same time; but they were so enveloped in the fogs of that coast, that they did not discover each other until all the French fleet had entered the Gulf of St. Lawrence, excepting two 60 gun ships, who fell in with the British fleet and were taken. This action opened the contest upon the water, and the war became serious.\*

The spring opened in America, with an active and vigorous preparation for the war. The legislatures of the several colonies, met and communicated with each other by special messages, to unite and co-operate, with all possible efforts, in raising men for the war.

New-England raised about 5000 men, which joined the northern army at Albany, about the first of June.—

---

\*The English commenced a general attack upon the French commerce, and captured more than three hundred trading vessels, with about 8000 seamen, in the course of the year.

This army, about 6000 strong, besides a large body of Mohawk Indians, under Hendrick their Chief, was entrusted to the command of General Johnson, and destined against Ticonderoga and Crown Point.

Massachusetts sent on a strong detachment to Nova Scotia, to join Colonel Moncton. This expedition succeeded, and by the first of July, Colonel Moncton had taken all the fortresses in possession of the French; disarmed the Arcadians, and sent great numbers of them into New-England.

General Braddock took the command of about two thousand regulars and provincials, in June, and commenced his operations against Fort Duquesne; assisted by Colonel Washington, as his Aid-de-Camp.

Unskilled in the arts of American war, and flushed with the military pride of his nation, he detached the flower of his army, and attempted by forced marches, to surprise the fortress, before an expected reinforcement should arrive from Canada.

Blind to the dangers of Indian warfare, and regardless of the cautious advice of Colonel Washington, he fell into an Indian ambush, within ten miles of Fort Duquesne. The detachment was overwhelmed with the explosion; Braddock and all his principal officers were slain; and Colonel Washington led off the fugitives, with the loss of all their artillery, baggage, and military stores, together with about 700 men. The militia returned to Virginia, and the regulars repaired to Albany, by order of General Shirley, to join the northern army.

When the news of Braddock's defeat reached General Shirley, it gave a general shock to the army, and caused such frequent desertion from the detachment destined against Niagara, that the General was constrained to defer the attack, and content himself with reinforcing and fortifying Oswego, and returning to Albany with the remnant of his army.

General Johnson advanced at the same time, at the head of the northern army, as far as Lake George, and encamped on a rising ground, and secured his position with a breast work, until the cannon, batteaux, &c. could come up, and enabled him to cross the lake.

The Baron Dieskau, who then commanded at Fort Ticonderoga, advanced at the head of a strong body of troops, to surprise and take Fort Edward.



When intelligence of this movement, reached General Johnson, he detached a party of 1000 men, with the Sachem Hendrick and his Indians, under the command of Colonels Williams and Whitney, to intercept their march. Dieskau discovered this detachment, and drew them into an ambush, and surprised them with a sudden explosion. Colonel Williams fell—Hendrick fell, with many other brave officers and soldiers, and the remnant fled to the camp. The enemy pursued, and a warm action commenced; the fugitives rallied under cover of the breast works, and the main body, under General Johnson, mowed down the ranks of the enemy. Dieskau manœuvred and advanced to the attack, with great skill and bravery; but the contest was unequal, and he beat a retreat. General Johnson ordered the charge; the troops leapt over the breast work and pursued the victory. The enemy fled in disorder; the carnage was great; and the Baron Dieskau, mortally wounded, fell into the hands of the victors.

This victory opened the way to Ticonderoga; yet the season was so far advanced, that General Johnson abandoned the enterprise. When he had constructed two Forts, built numerous boats and batteaux, and opened roads to Lake George, he disbanded the levies, and retired into winter quarters at Albany.

Such was the general success of this expedition, that his Majesty created the General a Baronet, and Parliament rewarded him with a present of £8000 sterling; and the army received the applause of the nation.

The depredations of the Indians, continued upon the back settlements of Virginia and Pennsylvania, through the summer and winter of 1755—6.

*Campaign of 1756, in America.*—The war had now raged in America, two years, and upon the ocean one; yet England and France still kept up their negotiations, and war was not declared by either, until Great Britain made her declaration in May, and France in June.

General Abercrombie was appointed to succeed General Shirley, and Lord London appointed commander-in-Chief and Governor of Virginia. The colonies were active and zealous in their preparations for the war; but the Generals did not arrive in America, until June and July.

The plan of the campaign, had been early formed by a council held at New-York, and that of the last, was renewed. The northern expeditions were assigned to the northern colonies, and the expedition against Fort Duquesne, to the southern.

The northern colonies assembled an army of 7000 men at Albany, which added to the regulars, amounted to about ten thousand men.

General Abercrombie arrived in June; but all operations were delayed until the arrival of Lord Loudon, in July.

The General detached Colonel Bradstreet, with a strong party, to convey provisions to the Fort at Oswego, and he executed his commission promptly; but on his return, he fell into an Indian ambush, as he ascended the river Onondaga. He flew to a small island, landed his men, and prepared for his defence. The Indians rose from their ambush, rushed into the water, and commenced a desperate attack. Colonel Bradstreet repelled this attack, by a well directed fire, and the enemy fled. He then advanced with two hundred men against another division of the enemy and put them to flight, in a close and desperate action. He next advanced against a third party, still higher up the river; put them to flight; and in the three actions, destroyed about 150 of the enemy, with the loss of seventy of his party. This action opened his way back to Albany.

Colonel Bradstreet gave notice to General Abercrombie, on his return, that a formidable force of French and Indians from Canada, were on their way against Oswego; and the General detached Colonel Webb, with one regiment, for the relief of the fortress.

On the 29th of July, Lord Loudon arrived at Albany, and took the command. General Winslow, at this time, had advanced to Lake George, and lay with impatience, waiting for orders to advance against Ticouderoga; but the General continued inactive at Albany, with three thousand regulars, until the middle of August. General Webb at this time, commenced his march for the relief of Oswego.

On the 12th of August, the Marquis de Montcalm, who had succeeded General Dieskau, invested the fortress of Oswego, with about 3000 Canadians and Indians, blocked up the river, and opened his trenches. On the

14th, Colonel Mercer, the commanding officer, was killed, and the Fort surrendered.

Thus fell Oswego, the strong hold of the west; defended by 121 pieces of cannon, 14 mortars, 2 frigates, 200 boats, and a garrison of 1600 men, well supplied with provisions and military stores. General Montcalm dismantled the Fort, and carried off the booty into Canada.

With the fall of this Fort, the Lakes Erie and Ontario, with the whole north-eastern frontier, were laid open to the enemy, and the finest settlements fell a prey to their ravages.

General Webb learnt the fate of Oswego, when at the portage, between the Mohawk and Wood Creek, and immediately secured his retreat back to Albany.

Lord Loudon remained safe at Albany, until September, when the provincials were disbanded, and the regulars went into winter quarters, and the campaign of 1756, closed. Dark and gloomy was the winter that followed.

*Campaign of 1757.*—The spring of 1757, opened with new efforts on the part of Great Britain, to prosecute the war in America. An armament of eleven ships of the line, a fire-ship, bomb-ketch, and transports with 6 or 7000 men, sailed from Cork, in the month of May, under the command of Admiral Holbourn and Commodore Holmes, and General Hopson, and arrived at Halifax on the 9th of July. The colonies met this armament with their regular quotas of men; but when they found the object of destination to be Louisburg, they refused to co-operate. They feared to expose their northern and western frontiers, to the ravages of the enemy; but the commander-in-chief was Lord Loudon, and his commands were obeyed.

Lord Loudon sailed from New-York, on the 9th of July, and joined General Hopson at Halifax, with 6000 men, which gave him the command of a land force of about 12,000, and a powerful fleet destined against Louisburg; but all this was too late. Louisburg had been strengthened by the Brest fleet, of seventeen sail and 9000 men from France, and the expedition failed. Lord Loudon returned to New-York, with his accustomed moderation, and repaired to Albany.

Not so with Montcalm; he was not an idle spectator of the farce the Poor of England was acting in America. He like an able General, faithful to his King, his country

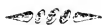
and his honor, cut off Colonel Parker, who was detached with a force against Ticonderoga, and advanced victorious against Fort Wm. Henry. In six days this Fort surrendered to the conqueror, and the garrison marched out with the honors of war, protected by an honorable capitulation; but the savages under Montcalm, regardless of his engagements, broke into the ranks of the garrison, stripped, plundered and butchered them in the most barbarous manner; and General Montcalm was accessory to the scene.

The fall of Oswego had excited general alarm; but the massacre of Fort Wm. Henry, filled the country with distress.

The enemy, elated with these successes, ravaged the frontier, and laid waste, with fire and sword, the fine settlements called the German Flats, on the Mohawk.

At this time there were more than 20,000 British regulars, upon the American station, besides the numerous troops of the colonies; and yet the strong holds of America, were falling into the hands of the French, in regular succession, and the enemy rioted in their ravages, without so much as a field day of opposition. But I forbear; the defence of America, was intrusted to the service of British troops, and a *Peer of England*, had the honor to command.

Early in the season, the provincials were disbanded, and the regular troops, as before, retired into winter quarters.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### CAMPAIGN OF 1758, IN AMERICA.

The affairs of Great Britain, in India, had been as unsuccessful as in America, until a Captain, now Colonel, Clive, appeared, to lay the lasting foundation of the British Empire in India.

Pending the successes in India, Lord Walpole had been removed from the administration, and Mr. Pitt, restored to the helm of state.

With the change in the Ministry, commenced a change of men and measures. New energies sprang up in the

councils, and were diffused to the armies and the nation.

Mr. Pitt announced to the colonies, his Majesty's intention to prosecute the war with vigour, in America, and requested New-England, New-York, and New-Jersey, to furnish 20,000 men, to meet the exigencies of the war, and enter upon the conquest of Canada. Assurances at the same time were given, that all the expenses of the colonies, should be recommended to Parliament, for indemnification.

Fired with true patriotic zeal, the colonies aforesaid, sent commissioners to Hartford, in April, 1758, to concert measures for mutual co-operation.

Lord Loudon had been recalled; General Abercrombie succeeded to the command of the northern army, and the northern colonies promptly furnished their several quotas of men, to the amount of ten thousand.

Alive to the war, and the interests of America. Mr. Pitt despatched a fleet from England, in February, under the command of Admiral Boscawen, for the American station, with a land force under the command of General Amherst and Major General Wolfe. This fleet and armament, when joined to the force at Halifax, amounted to 150 vessels and 14,000 men, destined for the reduction of Louisburg. Early in June, this whole force appeared before this Dunkirk of America.

The fortress was defended by a garrison of 2500 regulars and about 600 militia, commanded by the Chevalier Drucourt, and the harbor was defended by a naval force of five ships of the line, one of 50 guns, and five frigates; three of the latter had been sunk at the entrance of the harbor, to obstruct the English.

The troops were landed with great intrepidity, in the face of a resisting foe; and the town was invested by sea and land. The operations of the siege, were prosecuted with great vigour, for about six weeks, when one of the French ships blew up. The flames communicated to two others, which also blew up. This opened the way for the English Admiral to make a descent upon the harbor, by a detachment of 600 marines in boats, who seized on the other two ships of war; destroyed the one, and towed off the other, and thus the harbor was cleared at a blow. The batteries commenced at the

same time, a heavy cannonade, and the General threatened an assault upon the town.

The Governor offered a reasonable capitulation, which was accepted and on the 26th of July, the city of Louisburg, St. Johns, and the whole coast, from the St. Lawrence to Nova Scotia, were delivered up to the English. This blow in America, added to the successes in India, gave new spirits and new energies to England and America, and opened the scenes of future triumph in the war.

Pending these successes against Louisburg, General Amherst commenced operations with the northern army, against Ticonderoga and Crown Point. He advanced to Lake George, early in July, at the head of sixteen thousand men; and on the 5th and 6th, crossed over and commenced his march for Fort Ticonderoga.

The General, after sustaining some losses in crossing the forests, advanced to the attack of Ticonderoga, before his cannon had come up. The fortress, protected on three sides by water, and on the fourth by a morass, was strongly fortified, and defended by 5000 men, who were covered by an abatis and chevaux-de-frize.

The troops advanced to the charge with great intrepidity; but the contest was unequal; the defence was firm, the conflict sharp and bloody, and the carnage great. The fortress was impregnable and the General ordered a retreat, to save his army from ruin. The flower of the English army were engaged in this desperate contest, for more than four hours, and about two thousand were either killed or wounded.

The General felt the shock and disgrace, and retired with the remnant of his army, to his former position on Lake George.

He next detached Colonel Bradstreet, with three thousand men, to reduce Fort Frontenac.\* Colonel Bradstreet, who had solicited the service, executed it promptly. He traversed the desert to Oswego; embarked upon Lake Ontario, and on the 25th of August, landed his troops and summoned the fortress, which surrendered at discretion. Sixty pieces of cannon, nine armed sloops, and immense quantities of stores and provisions and merchandize, were trophies of this victory.

---

\*This Fort stands at the confluence of Lake Ontario, into the river St. Lawrence.

This success led to another triumph, under General Forbes. The General commenced his march from Philadelphia in July, and advanced into the wilderness, to humble the French at Fort Duquesne. At Ray's town, he was joined by Colonel Washington, at the head of the Virginia regulars, which rendered his army about 8000 strong. General Forbes detached Major Grant, with about 800 men, as an advanced guard, to reconnoiter. This party fell into an ambush; a desperate combat ensued, and a gallant resistance was made; but the English were overpowered by numbers, and beat a retreat with the loss of three hundred men. Major Grant with thirteen of his officers, fell into the hands of the enemy.

General Forbes advanced to the support of his detachment; resolved to carry the object of his destination.— In November, he arrived before the fortress, but the enemy had taken the alarm, abandoned the Fort, and retired down the Ohio to the Mississippi; and Fort Duquesne fell into the hand of the victors. The name of this fortress was now changed, in honor of the British Minister, and the flag of Old England, waved upon the walls of Fort Pitt.

This was a commanding position, which connected the western posts with the great chain of posts on the lakes, and was defended by 50 pieces of cannon, sixteen mortars; and contained a treasure in goods, provisions, and military stores, to the amount of 800,000 livres of France.

The possession of this fortress, gave to the colonies a commanding influence over the Indians in that region, and awed them into peace and submission. General Forbes garrisoned the fortress; made treaties with the Indians, and led back his army to Philadelphia, where he died through excessive fatigue; greatly beloved, highly applauded, and universally lamented.

After the fall of Louisburg, General Amherst repaired with a body of regulars to Albany, and from thence to Lake George, to join the northern army; but the season was too far advanced to admit of further operations; the General disbanded the provincials, and retired with his regulars, into winter quarters, as before.

The success of this campaign, had given a new face to the war. Louisburg had fallen, and the entire con-

quest of Cape Breton, and Nova Scotia, had rescued the fisheries, and covered the whole eastern frontier from the ravages of the enemy. An easy access was opened to the river St. Lawrence, the fortress of Quebec, and the heart of Canada.

The fall of Frontenac and Duquesne, had broken the chain of defence on the west, and thus the way was prepared for the next campaign.

The fleet and remainder of the armament that had triumphed over Louisburg, repaired in autumn, to the West Indies, and Gaudaloupe, Mariagalante, and several other small islands, became the trophies of their victories, in those seas.



## CHAPTER XIV.

### CAMPAIGN OF 1759.

The successes of the last campaign, had raised the confidence of Mr. Pitt, and inspired him with those efforts that led to the conquest of all French America.—Louisburg had fallen, Frontenac and Duquesne, had fallen, and the successes in the West Indies, closed the last campaign gloriously.

The seaboard was thus cleared of the French marauder, and the western frontier of savage depredations; the northern frontier was opened for an expedition into Canada, and the conquest of Quebec. The Minister communicated the plan of the campaign, to the Governors of the northern colonies, and called on them for their several quotas of men, to be raised as heretofore, to the amount of 20,000. The colonies met this requisition promptly. The requisite troops were raised, equipped, and early in the field. General Amherst took the command of the northern army, and began his operations in June. In July, he crossed Lake George, and appeared before Ticonderoga. The garrison blew up their magazine: abandoned the Fort, and retired to Crown Point. The garrison at Crown Point, caught the alarm, and the whole force retired to the Isle Aux Noix.\* The

---

\*In the northern part of Lake Champlain.



General advanced and took possession of these Forts, in succession, without a gun; and thus the keys of Canada were removed. General Anderst next proceeded to construct a naval force, to dislodge the enemy from their strong hold, at the Isle Aux Noix.

During these operations, General Prideaux, with his division of the army, in conjunction with Sir William Johnson and the Indians of the Six Nations, advanced against Niagara; about the middle of July, he invested the Fort, and opened his trenches; but in the midst of anxious hope and active duty, the gallant Prideaux was killed, by the bursting of a cohorn. The command devolved on General Johnson, and the siege was continued with vigor. The French commander, dreading the horrors of a storm, determined to risk a battle. He accordingly marched out with his garrison, and numerous Indian allies, and commenced the attack. The action soon became warm and bloody; the carnage was great, but the conflict was short. The enemy fled; General Johnson pursued. A general slaughter marked the footsteps of the fugitives for more than five miles. De Aubry, their General was taken, and the fortress surrendered to the victors.

With the fall of Niagara, a way was opened to the heart of the enemy: Canada was unmasked, and Quebec and Montreal, became the immediate objects of war.

To effect the conquest of Canada, a formidable naval armament arrived at Halifax, from England, under the command of Admirals Saunders, Holmes, and Durel, together with a land force of 8000 men, under the command of General Wolfe.

---

**Note.**—The city of Quebec stands upon the north side of the river St. Lawrence, and upon a peninsula formed by the junction of the river St. Charles with the St. Lawrence. The city is divided into the upper and lower town, by a ledge of rocks almost perpendicular, and is enclosed by a strong wall upon the land sides, that is capable of a powerful resistance. Below the city lies the isle of Orleans, about twenty miles long and seventeen broad; extending up to the harbor of Quebec, and covered with villages and plantations highly cultivated. Opposite to the western point of the island, stands point Levi, which overlooks both the city and harbor.

As soon as the river was cleared of ice, Admiral Saunders set sail for Quebec, with his whole force, and on the 26th of June, General Wolfe landed his troops upon the island of Orleans, and commenced the siege.

Quebec was defended by a strong garrison, and covered by an army of ten thousand men, under the command of the gallant General Montcalm.

Struck with astonishment at the magnitude of the object before him, General Wolfe commenced his operations; first by fortifying the western extremity of the isle of Orleans, and next by erecting batteries on point Levi.

Admiral Saunders took his station just below the town, to cover the batteries, and divide the attention of the enemy. Admiral Holmes took his station directly above the town.

Thus posted, General Wolfe opened his batteries upon the lower town, and at the same time, landed a body of troops, and commenced an attack upon General Montcalm. Both parties suffered severely in the conflict, but nothing decisive occurred. The troops were withdrawn, the ships removed from their stations, and no impression was made.

General Wolfe resolved on making one more effort to draw General Montcalm into the field. He accordingly landed another strong force, and commenced an attack; but the conflict was unequal, and he was obliged to retire with the loss of more than five hundred men, besides distinguished officers.

General Wolfe next detached Admiral Holmes, with 1200 men under the command of General Murray, to commence an attack upon the French shipping in the harbor of Quebec; this also proved abortive.

The season was now far advanced; all had been done that could be done, and yet the fortress remained inaccessible. The indefatigable efforts of General Wolfe, wasted his strength; his health began to decline, and he wrote to the Minister, that he began to despair of success.

Stung with chagrin at his own, as well as his country's disappointment, General Wolfe called a council of war, in which it was determined to carry the war, if possible, upon the plains of Abraham.

The troops were immediately embarked on board the

flect; the post at point Levi was strengthened, and a manœuvring commenced for several days, up and down the river, to draw the attention of the enemy, from the city.

Montcalm, alive to his duty, sent a detachment of 1500 men, to guard every accessible point, and watch the motions of the enemy.

On the night of the 13th of September, the troops landed at their place of destination; crawled up a steep and almost inaccessible precipice, by the assistance of rocks, and stumps, and bushes, and limbs of trees, through a narrow winding path; and at break of day, the gallant Wolfe, with his intrepid band, were formed on the plains of Abraham.

When the tidings of this masterly movement, reached Montcalm, he saw himself out-generaled; and immediately marched out of his camp, to take vengeance on the temerity of the foe.

Wolfe and his little phalanx, were soon in view, and the French commenced a distant and scattering fire, accompanied with such tremendous yells of the savages, as filled all the plain with the horrors of a scene unknown to British troops. Their hearts were unappalled; they received the French with great coolness, and at the distance of 40 yards, opened a fire upon the enemy, which checked their career. Wolfe now received a wound in his wrist, which he disregarded. They repeated their fire, which threw the enemy into disorder; this when renewed, caused them to fly. At this eventful moment, fell General Wolfe, and with him General Monkton, (previously wounded) and the command devolved upon General Townsend. He advanced to the charge, to take vengeance on the foe. The cry of *they run*, reached the ears of General Wolfe, who exclaimed, '*who run*,' the reply met his ear, '*the enemy run*;' then said he, 'I die in peace,' and expired. The gallant Townsend and Murray, took vengeance on the enemy with the bayonet and broad sword, until they reached the gates of the city, which alone covered them from total ruin.

The gallant Montcalm, fell mortally wounded, in the flight; but lived not to witness the fall of the city.—Quebec surrendered to the conquerors in five days.

Thus fell Montcalm, the hero of French America; and thus fell General Wolfe, the glory of his country and his country's arms; and thus fell Quebec, the Gib-

raltar of America, and scourge of the church in the wilderness.

General Townsend embarked about 1000 French officers and soldiers, and sent them to France. He also left a garrison of 5000 men under the command of the gallant General Murray, and then embarked on board the fleet, and set sail for England.

General Amherst had succeeded in destroying the naval force of the enemy, upon Lake Champlain; but the season had become so tempestuous before he could carry on his operations against Isle Aux Noix, that he abandoned the enterprize, and returned to Crown Point, for the winter.



## CHAPTER XV.

### CAMPAIGN OF 1760.

With the opening of the spring, Monsieur de Levi, commenced his operations for the reduction of Quebec. He embarked about 11,000 men at Montreal, with a great body of Indians, and descended the river; under the protection of six stout frigates, and landed his whole force at Point au-Tremble, on the 26th of April. With this force, De Levi, had resolved to carry the city by a coup-de-main. But the gallant Murray had otherwise determined; accordingly he marched out at the head of three thousand, (the remains of the 5000 left in autumn) and gave the enemy battle. The van of the French were routed by the impetuosity of the charge, and driven in disorder upon the main body; the English pursued, and the action became general and bloody. Overpowered by numbers, the gallant Murray, beat a retreat; and led back his heroes into the city, with the loss of one thousand of his garrison.

Elated with the victory, the enemy pursued to the walls, and commenced the most vigorous operations, to carry the city. The strife became desperate between the parties, until the 9th of May, when an English frigate arrived, and announced the approach of an English fleet.

On the 15th of May, a part of the fleet arrived, and

gave relief to the garrison. On the 16th, the French frigates were all taken or destroyed, and Monsieur de Levi abandoned his camp in the night, and fled with the greatest precipitation, towards Montreal. Lord Colville arrived with the remainder of the fleet, two days after; and the flag of Old England waved triumphant, on the walls of Quebec.

General Amherst had now assembled his forces at Crown Point, and was in readiness to commence operations. He directed one expedition by the way of Lake Ontario, and the other against the Isle Aux Noix, by the way of Lake Champlain; and ordered General Murray, at the same time, to embark his troops at Quebec, and meet him on a given day, before Montreal.

These movements were executed with great precision; the General arrived on the same day, and the division from the Isle Aux Noix, the next; and the city was completely invested. On the 8th, Monsieur Vauduvil, the Governor, signed a capitulation, and the garrison marched out with the honors of war. The French troops were conveyed to France, and Canada was cleared.

France now saw herself stripped of all her vast possessions in America, excepting New-Orleans on the Mississippi. This she retained as a solitary monument of all her greatness; from this she stimulated the Cherokees to commence their ravages upon the defenceless frontiers of the south, through the winter and spring.

General Amherst sent on a body of regulars, to co-operate with the troops of Virginia and Carolina; and before mid-summer, the enemy were humbled, and peace was restored.—1761.



## CHAPTER XVI.

GENERAL ARRANGEMENTS IN EUROPE, TO PROSECUTE THE WAR, WITH A VIEW TO OBTAIN AN EQUITABLE PEACE.

The war still raged with violence in Europe and in India. Spain became alarmed for the fate of her American colonies, when she saw the unparalleled success of the British arms. France took advantage of

this, and commenced negotiations with Spain, to engage her in the war, under the alliance of the family compact. This roused the jealousy of England, and Mr. Pitt demanded an immediate declaration of war against Spain, which was refused; and he turned his attention to the ocean, and commenced vigorous war upon the West-Indies.

The Allies in Europe, pushed the war in Prussia, and the French attempted to seize on Hanover.

Mr. Pitt sent a naval armament to the coast of France, and took Belle Isle, (off the mouth of the Loire) which filled England with spirit and hilarity. This blow, trifling as it was, called the attention of France to a peace, and she actually offered to yield to England, all her conquests in America and India: and offered Minorca for Guadaloupe and Marigalante; also to relinquish all her conquests in Germany, provided England would make restitution for her commerce taken before the declaration of war. All these concessions, the Minister refused, and his refusal sealed the family compact, August 15, 1761. The basis of this compact was a community of interest, and a mutual naturalization of the subjects of both kingdoms; and its obligations were mutual and reciprocal. It also extended to the King of the two Sicilies, and embraced the unity of the three Monarchies.

This compact gave a shock to Europe, and threatened the subversion of her balance of power. Mr. Pitt rose indignant at the pusillanimity of the King and Council, in refusing him a declaration of war against Spain, and resigned in disgust.

The Earl of Egremont was raised to the helm of state. He felt the high responsibility attached to that station; and entered with spirit, into the measures of Mr. Pitt. He wrote to the Governors of New-England, to furnish the same number of men for the service of this year, as the last; to secure the conquests in America. The troops were as promptly raised as before, and General Amherst took the command.

To meet the exigencies of the approaching war with Spain, the Minister sent a powerful armament to the West-India station, consisting of eighteen ships of the line, besides frigates, fire-ships, bomb-ketches, &c. under the command of Admiral Rodney; with about 9000 land forces, under the command of General Monkton.—

This armament was joined by about three thousand regulars and provincials from America.

On the 7th of January, the whole force arrived off the Island of Martinico; and on the 14th of February, the Island was given up, by capitulation, to the British arms. With the conquest of this Island, succeeded the conquest of every French Island in the West-Indies, except Guadaloupe, New-Grenada, St. Lucia, and St. Vincent.

These conquests opened the war between England and Spain, and this armament was turned against the Spanish West-Indies. To strengthen this force, the Minister despatched another armament from Portsmouth. (England,) under the command of Admiral Pocock, with Lord Albemarle, as commander of the land forces.— This armament, when joined by detachments from the fleet of Admiral Rodney, consisted of nineteen ships of the line, eighteen frigates, and one hundred and fifty transports, carrying ten thousand land forces: all destined against the Island of Cuba. A land force of from 4 to 6000 men, embarked at New-York, and joined this armament; and on the 17th of June, the troops were landed, and commenced their operations against the city of Havanna, capital of the Island of Cuba.

This city is walled and strongly fortified by nature and art, and protected by a fortress called the Moro Castle, deemed impregnable, which cost the British armament a siege of two months. In this memorable siege, the army experienced every possible hardship, from the nature and difficulty of the service, the heat of the climate, and a wasting, pestilential disease, with which six or eight thousand of the troops were sick at one time.

As the hurricane months approached, the General began to despair of success; but his hopes were revived by the appearance of a body of New-England troops, who had been sent home sick, from Martinico, and had recovered on their voyage; put about and joined their companions before the city of Havanna. This unexpected reinforcement inspired the desponding troops with fresh hopes, courage and zeal. The vigorous efforts of the siege were renewed, and on the 13th of August, the city of Havanna, with twelve ships of the line, three frigates, and several merchantmen in the harbor, together with a district of country of 180 miles in extent, were surrendered to the arms of his Britanic Majesty.

This blow was serious in its effects and consequences; struck at the vital interests of French and Spanish commerce, and led them to think seriously of peace.

Commissioners were soon appointed by all the parties, and preliminaries of peace were arranged at Fontainebleau, upon the principles of *cuius possidetis*, entered upon by Mr. Pitt; and on the 18th of February, 1763, the definitive treaty was signed at Paris, and peace was restored.

By this treaty, all French America, including Nova Scotia, was ceded to Great Britain: but all the conquests of Europe, India, and the West-Indies, were restored *in statu quo*. Spain ceded to England, the Floridas in exchange for Havanna; and France agreed to demolish the fortifications of Dunkirk, as a general acknowledgment for the indulgences she had received in the treaty.

With the treaty of Paris was soon united the treaty of Hubertsburg, which closed the war between Austria and Prussia, and all christendom was once more hushed to repose.

The cession of French America to Great Britain, cost the colonies an arduous and expensive eight years war; but it disarmed the Indians of the murderous hatchet and scalping knife; extinguished the torch that had for so many years laid waste their northern frontier settlements; placed the reformation upon a permanent foundation, and secured a double triumph to the church in the wilderness.



## CHAPTER XVII.

### INDIAN WAR.

The peace with the Cherokees, of 1761, was estimated by both parties, as the basis of a lasting peace; not only with the Cherokees, but with all the Indian tribes throughout the western wilderness. To render this peace the more permanent, three Cherokee Chiefs went over to England, and there confirmed the peace with the British court.

Sir William Johnson made a tour through the interior of the northern tribes, to avert that jealousy which



the conquest of Canada had excited, and which the emissaries of France had kindled into a flame.

At the same time, the Governors of several of the northern colonies, held a conference with the Six Nations, to strengthen the force of former treaties; engage their confidence, and fix a permanent and lasting peace between them and the colonies.

At this conference a plot was concerted by the Indians to surprise the English forts, butcher the garrisons, and destroy the settlements. This plot produced a confederacy of all the tribes north of the Ohio, to engage in the war.

In the month of harvest, 1763, a general attack commenced upon the frontier settlements of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia; and they fell a defenceless prey to the ravages of an Indian war.

All the traders in the Indian country were murdered, at the same time, and plundered to the amount of several hundred thousand pounds, which furnished supplies to carry on the savage war. The Forts of Le Boeuf, Venango, and Presque-Isle, became the first objects of the war. These with Michillimackinac, were soon surprised and taken by the Indians, and the garrisons butchered or carried into captivity.

Forts Pitt, Detroit, and Niagara, became the next objects of the war. The two first were immediately invested by numerous parties of Indians, and the garrisons shut up within the Forts. General Amherst, alarmed for the safety of these posts, after the fall of the others, despatched Captain Davell with a reinforcement, to strengthen the garrison of Detroit. This detachment succeeded, and after some severe skirmishing, raised the siege, and the savages withdrew.

General Amherst sent another party at the same time, to strengthen the garrison at Fort Pitt, under the command of Colonel Bouquet. This party was met on their way, and fell into an ambush at Turtle Creek, which commenced an action that continued two days successively. The savages fought with the most desperate fury; but the English met the shock with firmness; at the point of the bayonet, repelled the enemy, and drove them into the forest. These attacks were renewed again and again, and as often repelled; until the savages

were overpowered, and abandoned the contest. Colonel Bouquet pursued his march without much further molestation, and in four days, reached Fort Pitt.

General Amherst sent a third detachment to the relief of Niagara; but they fell into an ambush near the point of destination, and were all cut off and destroyed, September, 1763. But the garrison held the fortress.

General Gage now succeeded General Amherst, and the war continued. The colonies raised to the combat, raised a force which entered the Indian country, under the command of Colonels Bouquet, Bradstreet and Putnam, with such success, as compelled them to sue for peace.

The English dictated the articles of this treaty with such severity, as they hoped would secure their frontiers from all future savage wars.

Ten Chiefs were detained as hostages from the council, to guaranty the safe return of all prisoners taken in the war: all which was duly fulfilled, and the hostages released. Peace was restored.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

### VERMONT.

The settlement of the Dutch at Manhaddes, at the mouth of the Hudson, and at Albany, together with the grant of the colony to the Duke of York, by King Charles II. have been noticed; but the contested claims between New-Hampshire and New-York, that led to the settlement of Vermont, now claim particular notice.

The colony of New-Hampshire, after she had settled her southern boundary with Massachusetts, in 1741, claimed as far west as the western line of Massachusetts; and the then Governor of the colony, Benning Wentworth, made a grant of a township, six miles square, upon the south-western corner of the claims; bounded south on Massachusetts, and west on New-York, and lying twenty miles east of Hudson river, and called it after his own christian name, Benning-town. The same Governor continued to make grants of those lands, lying west of Connecticut river, until the war of 1754 commenced, (called the old French war,) and from that

time, all grants ceased, until the close of the war in America. 1761.

In 1763, about 100 townships had been located, west of Connecticut river, extending to the boundary of New-York, viz. twenty miles east of the Hudson river, and above the source of that river, to the shore of Lake Champlain.

The Lieutenant-Governor of New-York, claimed all these lands west of Connecticut river, by proclamation; and asserted the right of jurisdiction, as belonging to the colony of New-York, by virtue of the patent of the Duke of York.

The Governor of New-Hampshire, rejected the claims of New-York, by his proclamation; confirmed the New-Hampshire grant, and exhorted the settlers to be firm and persevere.

The colony of New-York, carried her claims to the crown, by the way of memorial, and obtained the following decision. 1764: "His Majesty orders and declares the western banks of the Connecticut river, from where it enters the province of Massachusetts-Bay, as far north as the 45th degree of north latitude, to be the boundary line between the said two provinces of New-Hampshire and New-York."

The colony of New-York next proceeded, upon this decision, to lay out four counties, extending upon the eastern and western sides of the mountain, and covering the New-Hampshire grants. In these counties, they erected courts of judicature, and summoned the settlers to surrender their grants. This kindled a fire. Some towns complied, and re-purchased their lands under New-York, and others wholly refused. Against these suits, ejectments commenced, and other grants were issued by the Governor of New-York, to other settlers; and all was confusion.

Both Governors were enriching themselves with heavy fees, and the settlers were left to fight out the quarrel.\*

When the Sheriffs attempted to serve the writs of ejectment, the people were firm and resisted the officer. This roused the energies and resentments of the Gov-

---

\*The Governor of New-Hampshire took only one hundred dollars for each grant: but the Governor of New-York, took two or three thousand.

ernor of New-York, and he ordered out the militia to support the officers. The settlers were firm; appeared in arms, and foiled the attempts of the Sheriffs, and supported their claims.

Bold and aspiring men had managed the affairs of the settlers, behind the curtain, until the parties became firmly united. They then came forward, and openly defended the rights of the people. At the head of these, appeared Milan Allen: a man of a daring spirit, and of unbounded ambition: fixed and determined in his purposes: rough and severe in his manners; but a firm protector of the rights of the settlers.

Allen, by his writings, unmasked the views of the New-York speculators, and showed the weakness and absurdity of their claims, and the futility of their grants; and urged to union, effort, and resistance.

These writings were, like the author, coarse; but full of energy, and perfectly conformable to the sentiments and feelings of the settlers. They were greedily received and promptly obeyed, and raised Allen's popularity, to the head of the party.

Next to Allen, appeared a Mr. Warner, who was a man of great coolness; but equally firm, and as decided a friend to the cause, as Allen. When Mr. Warner was designated as a rider, and an officer attempted to arrest him, he boldly resisted, wounded the officer, disarmed him and took him into custody, until he was willing to desist.

Under this state of things, the settlers sent out special agents to England, and laid their grievances before the King. Their complaints were graciously received, and his Majesty, upon a full hearing, issued the following order to the Governor of New-York:—1767.

“His Majesty doth hereby strictly charge, require and command, that the Governor or Commander-in-Chief of his Majesty's province of New-York, for the time being, do not, upon pain of his Majesty's highest displeasure, presume to make any grant, whatsoever, of any of the lands, described in the 2d report, until his Majesty's pleasure shall be known concerning the same.”

The Governor of New-York, disregarded the royal mandate, and in place of coercion, attempted to cajole the settlers into a compliance with his measures; but Allen, Warner, and three others, he proscribed.

In 1774, the Governor of New-York, published the following decree :

"Whereas, &c. And in case the said offenders shall not respectively surrender themselves, pursuant to such orders of his Excellency, the Governor and Commander-in-Chief, for the time being, to be made in council as aforesaid, he or they, by neglecting or refusing to surrender himself or themselves, as aforesaid, (that is, within 70 days,) shall, from the day to be appointed for his or their surrender, as aforesaid, be adjudged and deemed (and it indicted for a capital offence, hereafter to be perpetrated,) to be convicted and attainted of felony, and shall suffer death; as in cases of persons convicted and attainted of felony, by verdict and judgment, without benefit of clergy; and it shall or may be lawful for the Supreme Court of Judicature of this colony, or either of the Courts of Oyer and Terminer and General gaol delivery, for the respective counties aforesaid, to award execution against such offender or offenders," &c.

This high stretch of despotic power, was accompanied with a proclamation, offering a reward of fifty pounds per head, for Allen, Warner, and six others, who had taken the lead in support of the sentlers. This step cut off all possible accommodation between the parties, and a general meeting was convened on the west side of the Green Mountain, which passed the following resolves: April 14, 1774.

"Resolved, That for the future, every necessary preparation be made, and that our inhabitants hold themselves in readiness at a minute's warning, to aid and defend such of our friends, who for their merit to the general cause, are falsely denominated rioters; but that we will not act any thing more nor less, than on the defensive, and always encourage due execution of the laws, in all civil causes, and also in criminal prosecutions that are so indeed; and we will assist to the utmost of our power, the officers appointed for that purpose."

Having obtained this support, the proscribed persons published the following declaration, in their address to the people:—"We will kill or destroy any person or persons, whomsoever, that shall presume to be accessory, aiding or assisting in taking any of us."

Here the parties were at issue, and war was declared. They next sent out Colonel Skeene to England, to pe-

petition his Majesty, that the settlers might be formed into a royal government, as a new province; and Colonel Skeene actually received the appointment of Governor of Crown Point and Ticonderoga, as a preparatory step to meet their petition.

Pending these movements, a Congress had been held at Philadelphia, September, 1774, who recommended that the colonies should maintain their liberties with firmness; which occasioned a suppression of all courts, held under the authority of the crown. This led to an insurrection at Westminster, in March, 1775, for the suppression of the court; in which one man was killed, and the officers of the crown, were seized by the people, and sent to the gaol of Northampton, in Massachusetts, April 11.

Thus the parties were balanced; when the Revolution commenced, and the first blood was spilt upon the plains of Lexington, April 19, 1775.

All parties were then seriously engaged in the magnitude of the object before them; suspended their private animosities, and became the zealous defenders of their common country.

In July, 1776, a representation of one member from each town, met in convention at Dorset, and entered into a joint association for mutual defence. In September, they met again, by adjournment, and resolved "to take suitable measures, as soon as may be, to declare the Hampshire grants, a *free and independent District*," and then dissolved their sittings.

In 1777, a general representation from all the towns, met in convention, at Westminster, and resolved, "that the New-Hampshire grants are, and of right ought to be, and they are hereby declared a free and independent Jurisdiction, or State, known and distinguished by the name of New-Connecticut, alias Vermont," &c.

Under this character, the convention petitioned Congress, (then sitting at Philadelphia,) that they might be owned and received as a free and independent State; and that their delegates might be admitted to a seat in that honorable body.

New-England favored the measure, but New-York opposed, and the controversy in Congress, was spun out through the war. The whole history of the Revolution will shew, that no one section of the United States, was

more distinguished for patriotism and valor, than Vermont.

In 1780, New-York withdrew her troops from Skneeneborough, and Congress withdrew all continental troops from the state of Vermont, and she was abandoned to her fate.

At this time, a few of her leading men,\* made proposals of neutrality to the British General in Canada; and under this mask, commenced a negotiation for a reunion with the crown of England. This farce was managed with great adroitness, and spun out to the close of the war; and thus Vermont was shielded from the subsequent ravages of the enemy.

During this negotiation, the controversy between New-York and Vermont, became so serious as to endanger the peace, not only of the two States, but of the Union.

In this critical state of their affairs, Governor Chittenden wrote to General Washington, and solicited his advice, 1781. To which the General returned such a conciliatory reply, as led finally to an amicable adjustment of all their differences; although the party strife continued to rage down to the peace of 1783.

In 1790, Vermont entered into an amicable adjustment with New-York, and agreed to pay to New-York, the sum of \$30,000, and take her quit-claim to all the lands in controversy; which was done accordingly. In 1791, Vermont was admitted into the *Federal Union*.

The constitution of 1778, was revised in 1786, and again in 1792; but the present constitution was not established until 1793.

The rapid increase of wealth, population and literature in Vermont, have rendered her a valuable member of the National Union.

---

\*Eight only, were entrusted with the secret.

# HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

## PART II.

### CHAPTER I.

#### VIRGINIA.

In the introduction to this work, a particular notice has been taken of the numerous adventures that led to the discovery and first settlement of Virginia, down to the time of Captain John Smith, and the founding of Jamestown.

The talents of Captain Smith, were well adapted to the command of such a colony, in such perilous times. He entered with spirit, upon the arduous duties of his office, and put forth all his efforts to build up the settlements and secure the sinking colony.

Captain Smith was equally active in exploring the country, and in encouraging and bringing forward the colony. In one of his efforts to explore the Chickahominy river, he was siezed by a party of the warriors of the great Powhatan, and conducted in triumph, into the presence of the Sachem, who received him with all the pomp, majesty and terror, which a savage could assume. He ordered his prisoner to be stretched upon the ground; his head to be placed upon a large flat stone, and his brains to be knocked out with the war club. The eyes of the spectators, viewed with impatience the executioner, as he raised the massy club, to gratify their thirst for blood. But lo! to their astonishment, Pocahontas, daughter of the Sachem, and child of his delight, sprang through the crowd, flung herself upon the ground and placed her head upon the head of Captain Smith.

Struck with astonishment, Powhatan raised her from the ground, dismissed her with kindness, and ordered Captain Smith to be set at liberty. In a short time, he sent him back to Jamestown, under a faithful escort, loaded with presents for his family and friends.

Thus relieved from impending death, by the benevolence of a female savage, then only thirteen years of age, Captain Smith returned to his little colony, which he found in the utmost possible distress and confusion. He



once more restored union and effort to the colony: and his little deliverer, with her little female attendants, made him frequent visits, loaded with such presents as were very useful to the sick and infirm.

At this time, Captain Newport arrived with supplies, which contributed to the present relief, as well as the future prosperity of the colony. Mr. Hunt, their clergyman, commenced a regular course of public worship, with the administration of the ordinances of the gospel; and harmony and order began to arise upon the solid basis of civil and religious liberty.

Thus prosperity was not of long continuance. In the following winter, their store-house caught fire and consumed, not only their stores, but extended to the town and destroyed their dwellings. These calamities they bore with patience and fortitude, and put themselves upon an allowance of meat and water, through the winter.

In the spring, Captain Nelson arrived from England, (by the way of the West-Indies, where he had wintered) with a supply of men and provisions for the colony.— This arrival gave them new spirits and new energies; they united their labors through the summer, rebuilt their town, cultivated their fields, and in autumn they were blest with a good supply for the winter.

But this prosperity was not permanent. Many of the company were bred in habits of idleness, and when they embarked for America, vainly expected to find gold without labor, and riches without industry, and when they began to realize their mistake, they opened a clamor against Captain Smith, that not only embarrassed his government, but reached even to London.

At this time, Sir Walter Raleigh was attainted of high treason, and his charter was forfeited. Notwithstanding all that Captain Smith had done for this colony, the London Company petitioned the King, and obtained a new charter. They appointed Sir Thomas West, (Lord de-la-War, or Delaware) Captain General, Sir Thomas Gates, Lieutenant-General, and Sir George Somers, Admiral, &c.

Admiral Somers, set sail from England in May, with a fleet of nine ships and five hundred people, to strengthen the colony at Jamestown: but the Admiral, with three noblemen, and fifty others, together with a ketch,

were cast away upon Bermuda Islands, where they wintered.

When the remainder of the fleet arrived in Virginia, they found the colony distracted by their vices, corruptions and licentiousness.

In September, 1609, President Smith was so severely burnt by an explosion of gunpowder, that he was constrained to abandon the colony, and return to England.

Jamestown could now boast of about five hundred inhabitants, comfortably accommodated, in about sixty houses, well fortified and defended by three ships, twenty-four pieces of cannon, and a good supply of muskets, ammunition, &c. with necessary tools for labour. They had also a good supply of hogs, sheep, goats, and fowls, together with nets and boats for fishing; but President Smith was gone, and with him all that was valuable to the colony.

Captain Piercy, who succeeded President Smith, was truly a man of worth; but whose feeble health unfitted him for those arduous duties, the factious state of the colony required.

The vices of the planters, provoked hostilities with the natives; these destroyed their settlements, stole their tools, and drove off their stock; all which reduced them to the extremes of distress.

Such was the wretched situation of the colony, when Admiral Somers arrived, in the spring of 1610, that the 500 colonists were reduced to 60; and such were their sufferings and prospects, that they actually abandoned their village, embarked on board their fleet, and set sail for England.

At this eventful crisis, Lord Delaware met them near the mouth of the bay, with a fleet and supplies from England, and by his influence, persuaded them to return; resume their dwellings, and submit to his government.—1610.

Lord Delaware brought out about 600 people, 200 hogs, 200 cattle, with one whole year's provisions for the colony, as well as a good supply of all necessary tools for husbandry. Order, tranquility, and plenty were again restored.

## CHAPTER II.

HERE COMMENCES THE HISTORY OF VIRGINIA.

The prosperity of the colony, revived under the administration of Lord Delaware. He restored public worship, appointed all the necessary officers, established a due degree of subordination, and thus gave tone to his government, and industry, harmony, and plenty to this long ruined colony.

In 1611, the health of Lord Delaware, began to decline, and he returned to England. The government devolved upon Sir Thomas Dale.

Under the administration of Governor Dale, the colony sunk into their former corruptions, and he was constrained to exercise a most rigid military government, to check their licentiousness, and save them from ruin; this added to their habits of vice and indolence, checked their enterprise, and kept them down, for many years.

In 1613, Mr. Rolf, (then Secretary of the colony) became attached to Pocahontas; obtained her affection; offered his hand, and with the consent of her father and Governor Dale, married her.—April, 1614. Mr. Rolf, like a true and affectionate husband, sought to improve the mind of the young Princess, both in useful knowledge and religion: and by the assistance of Mr. Whitaker, she soon acquired the English language; embraced the christian religion, and was baptised by the name of Rebecca.

In 1616, Mr. Rolf with his wife, visited England, where she was introduced to her Majesty, and treated with great respect at Court, and by the people of the first distinction in London. She died when about to return to America, and left one son, who was handsomely educated in England.

When he became a man, he removed to Virginia, where he lived in affluence and respectability, and died much lamented. Some of the most respectable families sprang from Mr. Thomas Rolf, son of the Princess Pocahontas, the deliverer of Captain Smith, who may well glory in the excellent virtues of such an ancestor.

About this time, Governor Smith again visited the coast of America, in the character of an adventurer, and drew charts of the coast of North Virginia, to which

he gave the name of New-England. This coast with its settlements, has been fully noticed in the first part.

In 1616, Sir Thomas Dale returned to England, and was succeeded by Mr. George Yeardley. The administration of Governor Dale, had been prosperous, and the colony flourished, and continued to flourish through the administration of Governor Yeardley.

In 1617, Governor Argall succeeded to the chair, and Governor Yeardley returned to England.

In two years, this despot subverted the prosperous administrations of a Delaware and a Dale, and threw the colony back into the times of former distress, and ruined all the efforts which had been made by the London Company for ten or twelve years; a period in which they had expended more than eighty thousand pounds sterling, and from the number of 1670 souls that had been transported into the colony, more than 1200 had been lost by sickness, savage barbarities, or an oppressive and rapacious government.

Sunk again to the lowest state of distress, the people awaited, with anxious impatience, the return of Lord Delaware, to bless the colony with his presence and government; but again their hopes were blasted; his Lordship reached the mouth of Delaware Bay, where he died, 1618; and thus gave name to a Bay, that has ever continued.

A change in the London Company, this year removed Governor Argall, and restored Governor Yeardley to the government of Virginia. This change abolished the oppressive government of Argall, and restored the colony to the liberties of free-born Englishmen, and thus laid the foundation of liberty, enterprise, and industry, in Virginia.

The London Company, gave orders that Governor Argall should be arrested and tried in the colony, for mal-administration; but justice was robbed of her rights, and Argall escaped to England, unpunished.

During all this time, the planters had endured all their distresses as single men, and had settled or attempted to settle, only six or seven towns; but this year, the London Company sent out a new recruit of about 1216 men, together with a colony of 140 young and virtuous women and assigned them a settlement called Maidstown.

*Woman* pawned her jewels to furnish Columbus with

money to discover America.—*Woman* saved Virginia by rescuing Captain Smith, at the hazard of her life, and by the powers of virtuous affection, gave to Virginia some of her best citizens; and *Woman*, by the settlement of Maidstown, gave to the colony new spirits and energies, and laid the permanent foundation of Virginia.—1619.\*

The planters selected their wives from the new settlement of Maidstown, and new scenes, new amusements, as well as new habits of industry and enterprise, became general throughout the colony.

In June, 1621, the Governor convened the first Assembly, and as the elections were made from towns that held the rights and forms of boroughs; the representatives were therefore termed burgesses.

This Assembly abolished martial law, and gave freedom and the rights of civil law to Virginia.

This year King James ordered the Bishops of England to make a general collection in all their several dioceses, to found a College in Virginia. The order was carried into effect, and £1500 sterling was raised, which added to 10,000 acres of wild land, laid the foundation of the first College in Virginia.

About this time, a mortal sickness swept off above 300 of the planters, and King James ordered the London Company to transport 100 convicts into the colony.

In 1622, private adventurers in England, fitted out 21 ships, with 1,300 passengers, to Virginia, and Sir Francis Wyat, was sent out as Governor.

Those early attempts that had been made to introduce some form of religion into the colony, had long since, been destroyed, through the licentiousness of the planters; and the new addition of convicts, had increased the evil.

The London Company at this time, made one effort, through the instrumentality of Sir Francis, to give a christian form to the colony, and lay the foundation of such institutions, as might train up the rising generation to the knowledge of the one true God.

Powhatan was now dead, and his successor Opecan-

---

\*About this time, a Dutch vessel landed about twenty negroes, who were sold for slaves, which commenced African slavery in the south.

noah, formed a general conspiracy amongst the savages, to exterminate the English.

On the 22d of May, the whole confederacy entered the English settlements at mid day, under the mask of their usual friendship, and at a signal given commenced an indiscriminate butchery; and in less than one hour, about three hundred of all ages, fell a sacrifice to their savage fury.

A Mr. Vace had warning from a friendly Indian and gave such reasonable notice to Jamestown, that the people stood to their arms, and rallied from the neighboring villages, and thus saved that settlement; but the savages drove off the cattle, burnt and destroyed their mills, iron works, and even the houses upon the plantations, and swept the country with a general pillage. Their new College was destroyed, and the superintendent, Mr. Thorpe, was killed.

Roused to a sense of their wrongs, the planters rallied to the combat, entered the enemy's country, laid waste their villages with fire and sword, and carried off their corn; all which proved very destructive to the Indians, the ensuing winter, 1623.

In 1624, King James issued writs of Quo Warranto, against the London Company, and dissolved their charter.

The General Assembly of 1621, decreed that the colony should hereafter be governed by two Supreme Councils; the one called the Council of State, and the other the General Assembly; to be convened annually by the Governor, or oftener, as circumstances may require. The General Assembly to consist of a Council of State, and two Burgesses from each town, hundred or Plantation, and all decisions to be made by a majority of votes; reserving to the Governor, a casting vote. The powers of this Assembly, to be strictly legislative; and all laws enacted by them, to be in conformity to the laws of England. No laws to become binding, until ratified by the Company in England, and returned under their seal.— And no laws of the Company in England, to be binding on the colony, until ratified by the colonial Assembly.

The settlement of this colony, down to the year 1621, had cost the Company more than £150,000 sterling, besides the expenses of private adventurers; and more than

4000 lives had been lost. All was now absorbed in the crown,—1624.

In 1625, King Charles I. succeeded to the throne, upon the death of his father, James I. and immediately granted a new charter to the colony of Virginia; which charter vested in the Governor and Council, unlimited powers.

The King next appointed Sir John Harvey, their Governor. This tyrant ruled with such despotic sway, that the people arrested him in his mad career, and sent him to England for trial, accompanied by two agents, as his accusers.

King Charles resented this indignity offered to his Governor; dismissed the suit, and sent him back with still more despotic powers.—1639.

This people became more indignant under his second administration, and accused him so severely to the King, that he recalled him the same year, and sent out Sir William Berkeley, as his successor.

To add to the calamities of the administration of Governor Harvey, the savages resented his encroachments upon their lands; commenced a second massacre upon the colony, and murdered more than five hundred people in the settlements upon James River, York River, and others. This, added to the oppressions of Harvey, gave such a check to the colony, that many years could not fully recover.

Sir William Berkeley entered upon his administration, by calling an Assembly, upon the plan of the old charter. This caused the restoration of law, order, and civil rights; agreeable to the laws of England. These combined, restored the colony to her former situation in the days of Lord Delaware.

These blessings would have given new enjoyments to the colony; but the murder of 500 people in cold blood, called for that justice which could not be obtained of a savage, but by the point of the sword. To the sword they appealed; and although the appeal was just, yet a long and bloody war ensued, before the savages were humbled, and a firm and permanent peace restored.

During these changes under the administration of Governor Berkeley, the civil war in England, had subverted the Monarchy, and raised Oliver Cromwell to the throne, as Lord High Protector,—1649.

Governor Berkeley refused to do homage to the Protector; and Cromwell despatched a fleet to the coast of Virginia, under the command of Captain Dennis, to reduce the colony to obedience. Governor Berkeley submitted to an honorable capitulation, which secured to the colony, all the rights and privileges of the old charter.

Cromwell rigidly enforced upon Virginia, the famous *British Navigation Act*, (that he had obtained at his accession) which embarrassed her trade and kept her down.\*

When Governor Matthews, (the last of the Governors appointed by Cromwell) had died; Virginia took advantage of the imbecile reign of Richard Cromwell, and proceeded to elect Sir William Berkeley as their Governor, and published their declaration in favor of Charles II. Sir William, upon the strength of this, ventured to proclaim Charles II. as King of England, Scotland, France, Ireland, and Virginia, several months before the restoration. By this act, Virginia hoped to recover her ancient charter privileges, which Cromwell had wantonly violated and destroyed. She also anticipated the favor of the King, in consequence of their legislative resolve of 1612, which declared "that as they were born under a monarchy, they would never degenerate from the condition of their births, by being subject to any other government."

Upon the accession of Charles II. 1660, Virginia presented to his Majesty, a humble address, in which they spread their grievances before the throne, and prayed for a relief from their burthens, and a restoration of their ancient chartered rights.

Vain were their remonstrances; deaf was the King, and desperate was their cause.

Upon the back of all this, Virginia soon became entangled in a long and distressing Indian war, that raged down to the time of the famous war of New-England, called Phillip's war, 1675; and the whole country was full of distress.

In the midst of this war, a faction sprang up which threatened the subversion of the government.

---

\*This Act decreed "that the colonies should not import or export any foreign commodities, except in ships built and navigated by Englishmen."



A bold and aspiring adventurer, by the name of Bacon, who had been bred a lawyer in London, had emigrated to Virginia, like thousands of others, to seek his fortune; he soon became a member of the council; took advantage of his popular talents; volunteered his services against the Indians; assembled a company, and demanded of the Governor a commission. This was refused, and the Governor demanded that Bacon should disband his men, and come down to Jamestown, on pain of being declared a rebel.

Bacon assured his men, that he would never lay down his arms, until he had revenged their cause, and punished the Indians; but upon reflection, he selected forty men to accompany him to Jamestown, in obedience to the Governor. Here a quarrel ensued with the Governor, and he suspended Bacon from the Council.

Bacon resented the indignity; made his escape; put himself again at the head of about 600 men, and marched down to Jamestown; drew up his troops before the House of Assembly, and demanded a General's commission, to go against the Indians. The commission was granted and signed by the Governor, (with reluctance) and General Bacon marched off in triumph.

The Governor, by advice of the Assembly, immediately issued a proclamation of rebellion, against Bacon, and ordered out the militia to arrest his progress. A civil war commenced; General Bacon marched immediately to Jamestown, in quest of the Governor, who fled at his approach, and crossed over to Accomack. Bacon immediately called a convention of his partizans; issued a manifesto against the Governor, and assumed the reins of government.

In the mean time, the Governor assembled a force under the command of Major Beverley, who crossed the bay, and commenced operations against Bacon. A severe skirmishing ensued; blood and slaughter marked the violence of the parties, until the death of Bacon, checked this mad career of party, and closed this civil war. The insurgents immediately dispersed; a general amnesty was granted, and peace was restored.

The blood spilt in this contest, bore no proportion to the other calamities that followed. Jamestown was laid in ashes; the flocks of cattle were butchered for the use of the parties, or wantonly destroyed; agriculture was

neglected; and to crown all, the savages renewed their depredations and murders, with such increased violence, that at the return of peace, the country was threatened with famine. Virginia groaned under the effects of these calamities for more than thirty years.

At the return of peace, a regiment of soldiers arrived from England, at the request of the Governor, to maintain the order of the colony.

Governor Berkeley soon after abandoned Virginia, and returned to England, where he died.

In 1679, Governor Culpepper was appointed to succeed Governor Berkeley, and he set sail for Virginia, armed with a code of new laws, for the government of his colony. Thus armed, with his code of new law on one hand, and the regiment of British soldiers in the other, Governor Culpepper offered pardon to the insurgents, provided the Assembly would pass the new laws: and threatened them with vengeance provided they refused.

The Assembly complied, and passed the laws; and thus riveted upon themselves a system of perpetual duties for the support of government. The Governor next obtained, out of these duties, a fixed salary of £2000, with an addition of £60 annually, for house rent; together with a demand of 20 shillings perquisite upon the clearance of every vessel of 100 tons, and thirty shillings upon the clearance of every vessel over 100 tons, for every voyage. These were fixed laws; but he oppressed the people by giving currency to a light coin, at the full value, and making it a tender for just debts. This the people abolished by turning it upon the Governor, in payment of duties.

Virginia continued to groan under these oppressions, through the reigns of Charles II. James II. down to the accessions of William and Mary.

Under this mild reign, the affairs of Virginia, began to assume a more favorable aspect; and from this time she has been rising in the scale of importance, down to the present time.

In 1692, the charter of William and Mary College was granted; and in 1693, it was liberally endowed and fixed by law, at Williamsburg.

In 1694, the State house at Jamestown, was burnt and the seat of government removed to Williamsburgh, where a new capitol was built for their accommodation.

In 1712, a general field was opened for the diffusion of religion; the colony was divided into thirty-nine parishes, and the support of the ministry, provided for by law.

"The Anglicans," say Mr. Jefferson, "had retained full possession of the country, about one century; (down to 1712) other opinions began then to creep in, and the great care of the government to support their own church, having begotten an equal degree of indolence in its clergy, two thirds of the people had become dissenters, at the commencement of the Revolution. The laws indeed, were severe upon them; but the spirit of the one party had subsided into moderation, and of the other had risen to a degree of determination, that commanded respect."

At this time a discovery was made of the country west of the Alleghany mountains.

In 1732, the illustrious George Washington, was born at Brice's Creek, in Virginia.

From the time that he began to act on the theatre of his country; the general history of Virginia has been carried forward in the general history of her wars, down to the peace of 1763.

Virginia adopted her constitution, on the 5th of July, 1776.



## CHAPTER II.

### NORTH AND SOUTH CAROLINA.

In the preceding chapter, the discovery of Virginia, the origin of its name, and the rise and progress of the colony generally, down to the peace of 1763, have been considered.

The discoveries upon this coast, the next year, by Laudonniere; the name he gave to the country, in honor of his master, Charles IX. King of France; by calling it Carolina, have also been noticed in the introduction.

Before we commence a detail of the adventures that awaited the first settlers of Carolina, we will notice an anecdote, related by doctor Williamson, their excellent historian, upon the first attempts to settle this coast.

Speaking of the adventures of Sir Walter Raleigh, in the year 1584, he says, "they landed at the mouth of an inlet, which they took for a river, and returning thanks to God, they took possession for Queen Elizabeth. The land was sandy; but every tree and shrub was loaded with grapes, and the low grounds were covered with cedar. They soon discovered that they were upon an island, about 20 miles long, which the Indians called Wocconker.

"On the third day after their arrival, three of the natives appeared, for the first time, on the beach, and received some presents.

"On the following day, 40 or 50 Indians appeared and approached their ships. They left their canoes at a small distance in the cove, and presented themselves on the beach. Grandganimo, the Sachem, was amongst those Indians; his rank appeared by his deportment: he took his seat upon a long mat, and four of his chief men, seated themselves upon the other end of it; the rest of the Indians stood at a respectful distance.

"The masters of the ships landed, with some of their people, in arms; the prince made them signs to sit by him. He first touched his head and breast, and then touched theirs, to signify his desire of mutual confidence and friendship. At the same time, the Sachem made a long speech, which they wished, in vain, to understand.

"They gave him sundry presents, which he thankfully received; and they gave presents to his officers, who attended him; but the prince took the whole to himself.

"The next day a profitable trade was opened with the natives: twenty skins, to the value of twenty crowns, were received for a tin dish, and other articles in proportion, &c.

"After a few days, Grandganimo introduced his wife and children; she was ornamented with strings of pearls, and wore a cloak and apron of skins, dressed in the fur.

"When the ships had been some time at their anchorage, one of the Captains with seven or eight of the adventurers, proceeded in a boat towards Roanoke Island, where they arrived the next day.

"On the north end of the Island, was a small town, consisting of eight or ten houses, built of cedar and ornamented with pallisadoes, for defence against an enemy.

Oranganimo lived in that town; he was not at home; but the untaught civility of his wife, left the Captain and his company nothing to desire. She ordered her people to carry them ashore on their backs; the boats were drawn up upon the beach, and their oars secured. She placed her guests by the fire to dry their clothes, for it was rainy; some of her women washed their stockings, others their feet. Their clothes being dry, she conducted them into another apartment, and gave them a plentiful dinner; consisting of roasted venison, homony, fish, melons, and sundry fruits; they used earthen pots and wooden dishes. While the strangers were at dinner, two Indians entered the house, with their bows and arrows; the white men looked at their arms; the princess did not want any further remonstrance; the Indians were turned out, and their bows broken. She intreated her guests to stay all night in the palace, but they launched their boats and dropped a grapnel at some distance from the shore. She observed, with marks of grief, that she had not gained their confidence; but she pressed them no further. Their supper was sent to their boat, and they were supplied with mats, as a defence from the rain.—Thirty or forty men and women, were ordered to watch near them all night, upon the beach.”

The particulars of this visit have been detailed, because the conduct of that woman, is a correct portrait of the female character, and a specimen of that attention, which the stranger and the afflicted may expect to receive from woman, in any part of the world.

These strangers took on board two natives, and carried them to England, where one of them learned the English language, and became a useful interpreter. The friendship of Martinco, (that was his name) continued to his death.

In 1635, a squadron of seven ships from England, under the command of Capt. Ralph, arrived and, one touched at Wockocken, and proceeded to explore the coast. These merciless adventurers, to revenge the loss of a silver cup, set fire to a village on the Neuse, and reduced it to ashes.

This wanton abuse of power, sowed the seeds of future judgments and calamities, which arose from savage revenge. Soon after this event, the fleet returned to England, laden with red cedar, sassafras and peltry. The

colony continued at Roanoke Island, under Captain Lane, and were prosperous through the season.

In autumn and winter, Governor Lane explored the coast, and visited the Indian tribes extensively. All the Indians upon the eastern borders of Albemarle Sound, were called Weapomocks, and Okirko was their chief.

A conspiracy commenced among these tribes, to draw off Captain Lane, from his settlement at Roanoke, and murder him and all his people; but this plan failed.

Wingina, the brother Grandganimio, commenced a new conspiracy. He invited to a grand festival, about 1500 warriors, who at a given signal, were to set fire to the Governor's house, and murder the Governor, and commence at the same time, a general butchery of the English, and burn their village. This plot was disclosed to the Governor by a generous captive, and he commenced an immediate attack upon Wingina and his warriors; put them to the sword and saved the colony.

At this eventful moment, Sir Francis Drake arrived in the road, and offered them a supply of stores, boats, &c. and a vessel; but all to no purpose, their spirits were low; and they broke up the colony, and returned to England.—June 19th, 1586.

I shall pass over the several attempts made by Sir Walter Raleigh, to settle this coast, through Sir Richard Grenville and Governor White, by refering to the introduction, for their adventures, and carry forward the colony, from the grant of Charles I.

Upon the accession of King Charles I. to the throne of his father, 1625, he granted to Sir Robert Heath, (his favorite) his heirs and assigns, forever, all the coast lying between thirty and thirty-six degrees of north latitude, and extending west to the Pacific Ocean; also all the Bahama Islands, not actually possessed by some christian prince.

This territory thus granted, was erected into the province of Carolina.

Upon the 23d of Charles I. Sir Robert granted this province to Lord Matrovers, afterwards Earl of Arundale and Surrey; but the civil wars that distracted England, under that reign, prevented any settlement in Carolina, under this grant.

Upon the accession of Charles II. 1648, this patent was declared void, and Charles made a new grant of the

same district, to Edward, Earl of Clarendon, George, Duke of Albemarle, William, Earl of Craven, John Lord Berkeley, Anthony Lord Ashley, Sir George Carteret, Sir John Calleton, and Sir William Berkeley; conveying all the lands lying between the thirty-first and thirty-sixth degrees of north latitude and the Virginia seas, and the Pacific Ocean.—Bearing date March 24, 1663.

This charter was afterwards enlarged so as to include the twenty-ninth degree of north latitude.

Under this charter, Carolina began, and continued to flourish amongst the colonies.



## CHAPTER III.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

This little colony struggled with the severest adversities possible, for more than sixty years, to obtain two solitary settlements; the one by the Quakers, upon the waters of Albemarle, and the other from Massachusetts, upon Charles River, now called Old Town.

Sir William Berkeley, Governor of Virginia, superintended these settlements; formed counties for them, and regulated their affairs.

Pleased with the colony from New-England, at Old Town, the proprietors published a declaration, "That all actual settlers should receive gratuities in lands, directly according to the number of each family; that they should be free from all customs, according to the charter; that they should present thirteen persons to the proprietors, who should choose a Governor and council of six, out of that number; but that the choice should rest in the people, as soon as they became sufficiently numerous; and that they should make laws, if they were not repugnant to the laws of England; which laws should be in force, unless disapproved by the proprietors."

The object of this declaration, was to invite in settlers from New-England. This colony transported several Indian children into New-England, under a pretence of educating them, which roused the revenge of the savages, and they commenced general depredations upon the set-

tlement; killed and drove off their cattle; and they abandoned the settlement, and returned to New-England.

In 1665, a colony from Barbadoes, came upon the coast; resumed the settlement at Old Town, and commenced the province of Clarendon, upon the same constitution as that of Albemarle. Sir John Yeamans, became their first Governor.

This colony entered with spirit, upon the labours before them, and greatly enlarged the land bounty, offered by the former colony, to induce settlers to come in.— They were also indulged with the special privilege of choosing their own Governors, who continued in office three years. In 1666, this settlement amounted to about eight hundred.

1667, the county of Albemarle convened the first Assembly in Carolina, under Governor Stevens.

By this Assembly, it was enacted “that none should be sued in five years, for any cause of action arising out of the country; and that no person should accept a power of Attorney, to receive debts contracted abroad.” It was also enacted, “that none might be hindered in so necessary a work for the preservation of mankind, any persons wishing to marry, by declaring their purpose before the Governor and council and their neighbors, should be considered as man and wife.”

A law was also passed, imposing a duty of thirty pounds of Tobacco, upon every law-suit, to defray the expenses of the government. These laws were approved by the proprietors.

The people had thus far lived without law, or law-suits; they were free from debt, without taxes, and hardly knew the use of money.

This year, 1668, the proprietors enlarged their bounty lands, by what was then called the great deed or charter, and the county flourished.

In 1669, the proprietors fitted out three vessels, and planted a colony under Governor Sayle, at Port-Royal; and erected it into a county, which they called Carteret. Thus three distinct governments were formed in Carolina.

The attention of the proprietors, was now turned towards a permanent government. Their avowed object was “to make the government of Carolina agree, as nearly as possible, with the monarchy of which it was a part;



and to avoid erecting a numerous democracy." Lord Ashley, afterwards Earl of Shaftsbury, at the request of the proprietors, obtained a singular constitution from the celebrated John Locke.

Governor Sayle attempted to put into operation, the non-descript constitution of Mr. Locke; but found it impracticable. He soon fell a victim to the climate, and was succeeded by Sir John Yeamans, Governor of Cape Fear, whose authority was extended over this southern district.

Thus the colony of Carolina was formed into two governments.—August, 1671.

Charleston had been founded by Governor Sayle. No general staple had, as yet, appeared in Carolina; but the proprietors believed that silk, raisins, (from the multitude of grapes) capers, wax, almonds, and olives, might be encouraged and cultivated here, as in Turkey in Europe, and they exempted all these articles from duties, for seven years.

In 1680, not one of these articles had been cultivated, and the King caused fifty families of Huguenots, who had fled into England, from the persecutions of France, to be transported into Carolina, gratis, for the express purpose of introducing the culture of the above articles. The plan wholly failed, and the culture was neglected.

In 1690, the settlement at Cape Fear, was abandoned, and the settlers joined the southern colony.

About the year 1670, Governor Stevens died at Albemarle, and Governor Cartwright, succeeded for a short time; but being called to England, Eastchurch was appointed Governor, and entered upon the administration of the colony, then consisting of about 1400 taxable inhabitants;\* one third of whom were slaves. The produce of the colony was then estimated at 20 hhds. of Tobacco, annually. This was said to be of little value to the planters, for the New-England traders engrossed nearly the whole, with their whiskey and other ardent spirits; together with a few trifles, which they brought into the country.

---

\*These were either white males of sixteen years old, or slaves, either Negros, Mulattos, or Indians, male or female, twelve years old.

Governor Eastchurch sailed for England, to promote the interest of the colony; and in his absence, Miller, his secretary, acted as President, and was so severe in collecting the revenue, and in attempting to suppress the whiskey trade from New-England, as to raise a rebellion.

The people rose in arms, headed by one Culpeper, (a surveyor of South Carolina) who had fled from justice, and taken refuge at Albemarle.

Culpeper arrested Miller and six of his council, and put them into close confinement; assumed the reins of government; seized on the treasury, (containing about three thousand pounds) and entered upon the collection of the customs.

The next year, Governor Eastchurch arrived, and finding the colony in a state of rebellion, he applied to the Governor of Virginia for a military force to restore order; but before the troops arrived, he died.

The next year, Culpeper and Miller both went over to England, to make their defence to the Lords proprietors, and seek redress. Culpeper was arrested and tried for high treason; but was acquitted, upon the ground that the affray could not amount to any thing more than a riot.

This subject now engrossed the attention of the Lords proprietors, to determine whether they should provide, by force, to render the laws respectable, or receive the submission of the offenders upon easy terms. They chose the latter; the offenders were pardoned, and the government received a wound from which it never recovered.—1675.\*

The Lords proprietors, next appointed one Sothel, to succeed Governor Eastchurch. Sothel had recently become a proprietor, by buying the share of Lord Clarendon, and of course received the appointment of Governor, and set sail for Carolina. He was taken on his passage, and carried into Algiers: and John Jenkins was appointed to fill the chair of Albemarle, *pro tem.*

Under his administration, an act of indemnity, was passed in favor of the late rioters, saving the indemnity to the crown, for duties.

---

\*This year commenced Philip's war in New-England.

Thus relieved from the arm of the law, the rioters commenced a general persecution against their opponents with such bitterness, that many fled into Virginia, for safety and protection.

In the midst of this persecution, Governor Sothel arrived, with instructions from the Lords proprietors, to redress all grievances, and by a firm, yet mild and equitable government, restore order, peace, and concord in the colony.

What is the force of counsel to a mad-man, or the power of wisdom to an idiot, or the influence of justice and moderation, upon the sordid and avaricious?

Sothel entered upon his administration, as an adept in all those arts by which man oppresses his fellow man.—Justice and injustice, innocence and guilt were with him synonymous terms; and money was the only make-weight in his scale. Well might it be said of him, "*When the wicked bear rule, the people mourn.*"

The people did mourn; but not in silence or despair. They seized the offender and were about to send him off to England for trial; but he pleaded for mercy, and prayed to be tried by the colonial Assembly; they granted his prayer. The Assembly tried him, and sentenced him to depart the colony in twelve months; and he complied with their decree.

Sothel retired into the southern colony, where like Culpoper, he put himself at the head of a faction, who were opposing the Governor, and by his popular zeal, obtained the reins of government; and the people of the south, like those of the north, were brought to feel the oppression of his ruthless power.

Doomed to perpetual civil war, Carolina saw no end to her troubles. Torn with internal dissensions, which arose from the corruptions of the people, and the corrupt administration of her government, she hoped to remove the latter, by returning to the *Charter*; but in making this change, new troubles arose.

The first sketch of the constitution of Mr. Locke, was sent over in a rough, unfinished state, and was at once received and put into operation in 1669; but the true constitutions, as they were designed by the Lords proprietors, to become the basis of the government, were not received until March, 1670. The first being then in operation, and most favorable to the people, was

received and supported by them, and the latter were rejected. This excited party strife again for a time; but the people finally united in rejecting the constitutions, and a state of anarchy ensued, that distracted the colony, and produced all those excesses that arise out of idleness and dissipation; and honest men fled the colony, as all men now flee the yellow fever.

This state of anarchy reigned triumphant in both colonies, for more than twenty years. Sometimes a civil, and sometimes a religious persecution prevailed; and all was confusion, until Governor Archdale was sent out as an instrument of peace for Carolina.

In 1695, Governor Archdale arrived in South Carolina, and entered upon the arduous duties of his office. He first removed the high toned partizans from the council, and appointed moderate men in their places. He next began to reform the factions of the colony at large, by administering justice, with a liberal hand; and when the heat of party began sufficiently to abate, he called an Assembly of the people. This step restored order.



## CHAPTER IV.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

At the wisdom that William Penn displayed in quieting the feuds of his colony, was found in Governor Archdale, in quelling the feuds of Carolina; both were Quakers, and in their governments, exhibited the true character of their religion.

Governor Archdale, although a Quaker, promoted a militia law for the defence of the colony, which he soon found to be very useful in the support of their just rights.

The Yamasee tribe of Indians, who lived near to Charleston, had put themselves under the protection of the English. These Indians, in their wars with the Spanish Indians, had taken some prisoners, which they offered for sale, (according to custom.) Governor Archdale sent for the Chief of that tribe, and gave him a letter to the Spanish Governor, at St. Augustine, with orders to restore the prisoners and deliver the letter, which laid the foundation of mutual harmony between

the parties, and raised the reputation of the Governor.

The distance of the capitals of North and South Carolina, was at this time, about 300 miles. The tribes of Indians about Pamlico, Neuse and Trent Rivers, were numerous; and the Cape Fear Indians were robbers and plunderers, from a custom they had ever practised, of pillaging all such vessels as were at any time cast away or driven ashore upon the Cape, as well as murdering the people.

A war commenced between the Indians of the two colonies; and the Indians of the south took several prisoners of the Cape Fear Indians, and sold them for slaves. The fame of Governor Archdale, had reached their ears, and they applied to him in their distress, and sought relief. The Governor listened to their complaint, and promised relief, provided they would never more plunder and murder the unfortunate who should be cast away upon Cape Fear. They readily complied; their prisoners were restored, and they manifested their sincerity by affording relief to about fifty unfortunate New-England adventurers, who were cast away upon Cape Fear, soon after, on their way to Charleston,

The fame of Governor Archdale, soon reached the northern colony, and prepared the way for him to take the chair there, and enter upon the Herculean task of reforming the abuses and corruptions of another profligate and factious government.

The reformed example of the south, had shone so conspicuously, that it greatly facilitated the reformation of the north; and the Quakers in the north, being numerous, rendered the administration of Governor Archdale the more easy and pleasant, he being one of their sect. He took up his abode with them; purchased an estate at Albemarle; married his daughter at Pasquetank, and left a progeny behind him, that are respectable to this day.

Sir Nathaniel Johnson succeeded to the chair in South Carolina, upon the departure of Governor Archdale.—The old religious feuds sprang up under his mild administration, and distracted the colony. The high church party gained an ascendancy, and oppressed the dissenters; they remonstrated to the House of Lords, who laid their remonstrance before Queen Ann. The Queen or

dered their oppressive laws to be repealed; but left the colony to settle their own feuds.

In 1699, Thomas Harvey succeeded Governor Johnson; and in 1703, Robert Daniel became President of the council, and Thomas Carey succeeded to the chair.

During this period of ten or twelve years, both colonies flourished; settlements were made upon the Neuse and Taw Rivers. The county of Bath was formed in the south, and general peace and good order, had succeeded the times of anarchy and misrule.

In 1696, a mortal sickness raged amongst the Indians upon Pamlico river, and nearly swept off that tribe; and the Carolina Indians were severely humbled by another powerful tribe, and the settlers entered without molestation, upon those vacated lands.—1698.

In the forepart of the 18th century, the settlement thus extended, changed the name of "Albemarle county in Carolina," to that of the "Colony of North Carolina," and the Governor took his title accordingly.

Thus situated, the colony flourished and the population progressed, until the several precincts in the original counties of Albemarle and Bath, became so extensive that the whole were called counties, about the year 1738.

Such was the scarcity of money in those days, that the several articles of traffic were substituted in the place of money, and their prices fixed by law. Even judgments of courts, were entered upon the dockets as payable in particular articles therein specified.\*

With the change of the constitution, the name of the Supreme Court, was changed from that of Parliament to that of General Assembly. This change of name could be remembered; but the laws they enacted could hardly be expected to be remembered, for they were not yet printed.

At the rising of each Assembly, the laws then enacted, were read aloud in the audience of the people, and no man was allowed to plead ignorance of the law. At one session of a biennial Assembly, more than fifty laws were passed, and published to the people at one reading.

At this time, printing presses were prohibited, both in Virginia and Carolina. Even Sir William Berkeley had

---

\*Deer skins, hides, tallow, and small furs, were the articles in general use, *at country prices*.

expressed his emotions of gratitude to Heaven, "*that there was not a printing press in all the southern provinces.*"

About the first of the 18th century, a ship from Madagascar, bound to London, touched at the bar, on her passage; and the Captain gave the Governor a small quantity of rice, and from *this present*, rice became one of the staples of Carolina.

In the reign of Queen Ann, and about the same time, the Swedes, who had hitherto furnished tar for the English Navy, became extravagant in their demands. The Queen offered a bounty upon tar, which encouraged the manufacture of that article in Carolina, and soon rendered it another staple in that colony.—1704.

Hitherto all religions had prevailed in Carolina; and but little regard had been paid to any, unless by the way of party, as has been noticed. "In the year 1702," says Doctor Williamson, "the Assembly passed an act, by which thirty pounds currency, were raised in each precinct, towards the support of a Minister. In the following year, the first Episcopal Minister arrived from England; he was principally supported by Lord Weymouth.

"In the year 1705, the first church was built in Chowan precinct, and a larger church was built, the year following, at Perquimons. Two Episcopal Ministers arrived about this time.

"The province was afterwards divided by law, into parishes; each precinct, in general, forming one parish. The people on Neuse, and all the southern settlers were included in Craven parish.

"Magistrates were authorised by law, to join parties in marriage; provided there was not a Minister in the parish; otherwise they were subject to a fine of five pounds for performing the service. Protestant dissenters were allowed *to worship in public*, by another act; subject to the same rules, regulations and restrictions, as were contained in the several acts of Parliament in England.—Quakers were also permitted by law to affirm, instead of swearing; but they could not by virtue of such affirmation, give evidence in any criminal case, or serve on a jury, or hold an office of profit or trust in the land.—These were the first departures in the northern government, from the original engagement of the proprietors, on the subject of religion; but the spirit of intolerance

grew stronger, as the province increased in population; for the constant influence of patronage, and numerous emigrations from Virginia, had given the Episcopalians a majority in the legislature.”\*

Thomas Carey, Lieutenant-Governor of the northern colony, had been collector of the proprietary quit-rents; but for mal-administration, they removed him from his offices, and directed the council to administer the government. A meeting of the deputies was held, and they elected Mr. Glover President. Carey continued his seat at the council board, with apparent satisfaction, until he had by his intrigues formed a party, which he believed to be sufficiently strong to seize on the government. He made the attempt with an armed force, and failed. At the same time a commission arrived from the Lords proprietors, to Edward Hyde, as Lieutenant-Governor.

Governor Hyde promised to redress all the grievances of which Carey complained; but this was not the object. Carey had been deposed, and now taken arms to recover the government, and was resolved to persevere. Governor Spotswood of Virginia, attempted to interfere, by offering his mediation; but all in vain. Carey looked to the government, and was resolved to recover it.

Carey commenced an attack upon Edenton; but failed, and was repulsed with loss. He made several attempts to augment his forces; but the people were not ripe for such an insurrection.

Governor Hyde applied to Governor Spotswood, for aid, who sent him a small armed force, and Carey's mob were soon dispersed. He fled into Virginia; where the Governor seized him, and sent him a prisoner to England.

Governor Hyde, agreeable to his instructions, issued his proclamation, offering pardon to all the insurgents, excepting Thomas Carey, John Porter, and three others. And tranquillity was again restored.

Notwithstanding the black catalogue of events that marked the early settlements of Carolina, it stands recorded by their faithful historian, Doctor Williamson, “that in 1708, only two persons had been executed for

---

\* I have given this extract from the historian of Carolina, to show their religious character.



capital offences; the one a Turk, and the other an old woman, suspected of witchcraft."

In 1703, Albemarle Sound was frozen over.



## CHAPTER V.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

The last chapter was closed with the suppression of Carey's rebellion. The history of the Huguenot and Palatine colonies, now claim attention.

In 1690, a colony of French Huguenots, came into Virginia, from England, under the patronage of King William, and settled at the Mamakin Town, upon James River. Displeased with their situation, they removed into Carolina, and settled upon the River Trent; under the pastoral care of their beloved Ribourg, their pastor. This colony was a valuable acquisition to Carolina, on account of their pious, industrious and frugal habits; and they flourished under these virtues, and became useful and valuable citizens.

A colony of German Protestants, from Heidleburg, upon the Rhine, fled also from the persecutions of their lordly, despotic rulers, and took refuge in England; where they were cordially received, and supported at the expense of the government.\* At their request, one hundred families were transported to Carolina, through the agency of Christopher Graffenried and Lewis Mitchell, who were then in America, exploring the country of Virginia and Carolina, to prepare the way for a colony.

These speculators entered into a contract with the proprietors of Carolina, upon the following conditions, viz: That ten thousand acres of land should be surveyed to them, lying between the Neuse and Cape Fear Rivers, at the ratio of twenty shillings per hundred acres, and six pence the yearly quit-rent. Also another tract, in

---

\*The religious persecutions in France and Germany, were then in their extremes. Queen Ann at this time, had invited these fugitives into England, by her proclamation of 1708.

reserve, of one hundred thousand acres, for twelve years. And whoever should pay the usual price for five thousand acres, should possess a title; which fell to Graffenried.

Queen Ann had appointed Commissioners to make provision, and furnish support for this colony of Palatines, whilst they yet remained in England; and these Commissioners entered into a contract with Graffenried and Mitchell, upon the following terms, viz. "That they, Graffenried and Mitchell, would transport to Carolina, six hundred and fifty men, women and children, of these Palatines, (109 families) and that they would convey to each family, two hundred and fifty acres of land, surveyed into lots of that size, free of rent for five years, and then at an annual rent of two pence per acre, currency, per annum, for ever. That they would supply each family with provisions for one year, for which they were to pay a reasonable consideration, at the end of the following year. They also agreed to furnish each family with the necessary implements of husbandry, free of expense; as well as tools to erect houses, &c. also cows, hogs and sheep, to a certain number, within four months after their arrival in Carolina; to be paid for in seven years; and half of the remaining increase to be returned as a consideration of interest."

The Commissioners stipulated to pay five pounds per head for their transportation, and at the same time, gave each one, either old or young, twenty shillings from the charitable funds, collected for their support. The Palatines delivered this money to Graffenried and Mitchell, in trust, to be paid on their arrival in Carolina.

In December, 1709, the colony arrived at the confluence of the Rivers Neuse and Trent, where they erected huts to shelter them until they could enter upon their lands. This place of their first residence, they called New-Bern, in honor of the native place of Graffenried, in Switzerland,

Graffenried, who had gained his title by his purchase, and now become Baron de Graffenried, was content to mortgage his lands to Thomas Pollock, for eight hundred pounds sterling; deliver over his Palatine colony, and return to Switzerland.

Thus abandoned by their chief, they were constrained to take up such lands as they could procure; and by their

industrious and frugal habits, they acquired a subsistence. They soon after petitioned King George I. and he granted them ten thousand acres of land, rent free, for ten years, as a recompense for their losses.

In 1711, the Indians, provoked by the aggressions which the settlers were making upon their lands, entered into a conspiracy to murder all the English, south of Albemarle Sound. Accordingly, on the 22d of September, they divided themselves into small companies of six or seven each, and entering the villages, put whole families indiscriminately to death, with all their wonted savage cruelty. In this massacre, about one hundred and thirty, of all ages, were devoted to the butchery of the hatchet. This was the instrument chosen to avoid suspicion, as well as alarm; but all could not be massacred at once; and the remnant seized their guns and made a defence, until they were relieved by their friends.

South Carolina sent Colonel Barnwell, with a small body of white men, and a large body of friendly Indians, to their relief; they also made them a grant of about £4000 in money.

These friendly Indians were Creeks, Cherokees and Catawbas. With this force, Colonel Barnwell entered the northern province, and laid waste the settlements of the Corees, Bear River, Neuse, and Mattamuskeet Indians, who had all been confederate against Neuse and Pamlico settlements; killed and destroyed about fifty, and carried off about two hundred women and children, as prisoners.

The Tuscarora, a tribe who dwelt more remote from the English settlements, were both numerous and warlike. These also, had been engaged in the conspiracy against the English; and to rescue themselves from the vengeance of Colonel Barnwell, had taken shelter in an Indian castle; to the number of about six hundred warriors.

Colonel Barnwell, with two field pieces, approached the fort regularly, with Mitchell the speculator, for his engineer, and might have destroyed this nest of murderers, at a blow; but he made peace, and suffered them to escape. As soon as Barnwell had withdrawn his troops, these Indians returned to their accustomed ravages. The northern colony again applied to the southern for aid, and they sent out Colonel Moor, with about forty white

men, and eight hundred Ashley Indians, who arrived in the northern colony, in December.

Virginia sent some troops, and about eleven hundred pounds in money, to relieve the sufferings of Carolina, and clothe her troops; but the troops were never raised, and the county of Bath was left to suffer. More than forty settlers were either killed or carried off, during the winter, and the settlements thoroughly ravaged.

When Colonel Moor arrived at Albemarle, he was constrained to halt several weeks, for the want of provisions. On the first of January, he began his march in pursuit of the enemy. On the 4th of February, he reached Taw River, where he was detained by a deep snow, and the Tuscaroras, dreading the Ashley Indians, had secured themselves in their Forts, about fifty miles up the Catehoney.

Knowing that Colonel Moor marched against them with cannon, they secured their Forts by a deep ditch and pallisadoes; and in the centre they sunk large pits, and threw up the earth on all sides, to shield them from the shot of the cannon. Thus fortified, the Indians awaited their pursuers.

Colonel Moor approached their Fort regularly, knowing the enemy to be in great force, and well supplied with muskets. He first cut off their communication with the water, and next carried forward his regular approaches, until he entered the Fort at the point of the bayonet, and made the whole garrison prisoners, to the number of eight hundred warriors. These prisoners were delivered to the Ashley Indians, as a reward for their services, who carried them into South Carolina, and sold them for slaves.

Colonel Moor lost in this memorable siege, about fifty white men, killed and wounded, and about 80 or 90 friendly Indians. The enemy abandoned their other Forts, and fled into the wilderness. The eastern Tuscaroras sued for peace, which was granted upon the following terms, viz.—

1st. The Tusks shall deliver twenty Indians, who shall be named, who were the chief contrivers of the massacre and who took Lawson and Graffenried.

2d. They shall restore all their prisoners; also the horses and cattle, arms and goods, which they have taken from the inhabitants.

3d. They shall pursue the Choleonee and Mattamuskeet Indians, as enemies.

4th. They shall deliver two hostages for each of their towns.

Thus ended the most memorable Indian war recorded in the annals of Carolina.

The remaining Tuscaroras fled their country, and took refuge among the Iroquois, or Five Nations — 1712.

King Blount, who dwelt upon the east side of the Taw River, put himself at the head of his warriors, and in the service of the English, became very successful in killing, capturing and destroying the remaining Corees and Mattamuskeets; who were mostly taken and sold as slaves.

The remnant of these tribes sued for peace, which was granted upon condition, *that they should dwell at Mattamuskeet, under the care of an inspector.* Thus closed this ever memorable war.—February, 1715.

Colonel Moor returned in triumph to South Carolina, where his services were soon required to quell an insurrection amongst the savages of the south. This he soon effected, and peace was restored.

To defray the expenses of these wars, South Carolina was constrained to issue eight thousand pounds in bills of credit; and to support their value, they were made a lawful tender in payment of just debts. This by its depreciation, soon became an evil worse than an Indian war.

In 1676, Carolina consisted of fourteen hundred taxable inhabitants; and in 1717, it did not exceed two thousand, allowing one third for slaves. Then the fencibles of the colony did not exceed thirteen hundred. This fact alone, is a sufficient comment upon the genius of their government, as well as upon its administration.

Such were the emigrations during the administrations of Sothel, Culpeper and Car, that the Governor of Virginia was constrained to issue a proclamation, ordering "that all fugitives from Carolina, without a pass, should be arrested and sent back."

Their historian, Doctor Williamson, thus remarks: "The temperature of the climate in Carolina, was so inviting, the soil so fertile, and the means of living, so easy, that the people must have been very numerous, if

the government had been administered with any degree of wisdom.

“The farmer was not constrained to make provision for his cattle in winter, for they found a sufficient supply in the woods, and flocks of wild cattle became the subjects of profitable game to the hunter.”



## CHAPTER VI.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

President Pollock presided over the northern colony two years, and was succeeded by Governor Eden, who arrived from England in May, 1714.

That buccaniering spirit which had raged with so much success, upon the coast of Spanish America, in the 17th century, had now extended to the coast of North America, and was patronised by certain characters, *high in office*, in many of the colonies.

Governor Eden had not been long in office, before the same suspicion fell upon him. He was accused of holding piratical intercourse with the noted pirate Theach, (commonly called Black Beard) through the agency of the Secretary of the province and collector of the customs, Tobias Knight.

Although Theach was afterwards taken, with his crew, and condemned and executed in Virginia; and although upon his trial, strong circumstantial evidence appeared against Knight; yet no facts were proved against him or the Governor, and they both escaped without further inquiry.

In March 1722, Governor Eden died, and Thomas Pollock was again chosen President. He died soon after, and was succeeded by William Reed, who presided until Governor Barrington arrived, the ensuing summer.

In 1715, the Yammossee Indians conspired against the southern colony; ravaged the country, and threatened Charleston; but Governor Craven rallied a force of about 1200 men, and fell upon the savages with such success, that they were routed, after a severe action; driven beyond the River Savannah, and dispersed. This war was short, but severe; the English lost more than

400 men, but they expelled the Yammees, who took refuge amongst the Spaniards in Florida.

This year about forty buccaniers were taken and executed at Charleston. This with the late executions in Virginia, gave a severe check to piracy, in these seas.

In 1717, a savage conspiracy broke out in the county of Bath; but the vigilance and activity of the English, soon brought the Indians to terms.

In 1719, the people of South Carolina, became impatient of the proprietary government; entered into a solemn league and covenant to support each other in opposing it, and in asserting their own just rights and privileges.

They next met in General Assembly, and requested Governor Johnson to accept an appointment under the crown; but he refused; and they proceeded to elect Colonel James Moor; and proclaimed him Governor.—The King in council, approved the choice; yet they sent out Francis Nicholson, as provisional Governor, and he was well received.

In 1725, the southern colony, provoked by the savage depredations of the Yammees, from Florida, sent Colonel Palmer, with about 400 men, whites and Indians, to check their ravages. He marched to St. Augustine, chastised that nest of marauders; burnt all the settlements; destroyed their provisions; drove off their cattle; killed, took, and dispersed the savages, and laid the foundation for a lasting peace.

In 1728, the boundary line was amicably settled, between Carolina and Virginia, and a bone of long contention was thus removed.

In 1729, the proprietors of Carolina, sold their claim to the agents of the crown for £17,500 sterling, and surrendered all their rights;\* and the crown appointed separate Governors for each colony.

King George II. re-appointed Governor Barrington, to the chair of North Carolina; and he entered upon his administration in February, 1731. In 1734, he abandoned a stormy, vexatious administration, and returned

---

\*Excepting one-eighth, belonging to Lord Carteret, which he retained upon the northern border, and adjoining the Virginia line.

to England; where he was robbed and murdered, soon after; and Governor Johnson succeeded to the chair.

Governor Johnson turned the attention of the first Assembly, to the education of the youth, and the support of the gospel. The Assembly complied with the recommendation; but it was for the support of a particular church, which greatly roused the public mind. They also granted money to endow a seminary, without providing for the support of common schools, and the object failed.

The depreciation of their paper money, now became alarming, and they attempted to remedy the evil, by granting new emissions. This increased the calamity, by increasing the depreciation. In 1739, they were paying off their just debts in paper money at the depreciated value of seven for one.

Thus says Doctor Williamsen; "There were men banished from Carolina, for stealing a hog, whilst those who banished them, would contend for paying a debt of seven pounds, with the value of twenty shillings."

In 1738, the Spaniards instigated an alarming insurrection amongst the Negros in Carolina; but the whites soon suppressed this, by the aid of their muskets and rum; and the blacks were again reduced to obedience.

This year the precincts were converted into counties, and the Marshals were called Sheriffs.

In 1743, Commissioners were appointed between Lord Carteret and the Governor, to set off his Lordship's one eighth, and they ran out the line as far as Pamlico River. In 1746, they continued the line about 100 miles and stopped; but with orders to finish it.

The next subject that interested the attention of the Assembly, was a division line between North and South Carolina: hitherto this had only been nominal. The two colonies appointed Commissioners for the purpose, who met and commenced their labors in 1737. They ran out the line until they reached the Pedee, and there stopped. As late as 1771, this line was not completed.

In 1740, things had generally become quiet, and their paper money was fast rising in its value, when an expedition was projected against Carthagera, (as has been noticed under New-England) and North Carolina furnished 400 men to embark on this foreign adventure.—A tax of three shillings on the poll, was levied, to defray



the expenses of this expedition, which called in the principal part of their paper money.

In 1744, Carolina began to feel the effects of the Spanish war. At the mouth of Clarendon River, stood Fort Johnson and three other Forts; yet a Spanish privateer landed a party at Brunswick, who began to plunder the town. Alarmed for their safety, they rallied a force and commenced so brisk an attack upon the privateer, that she was blown up and destroyed, and the town relieved.



## CHAPTER VII.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

In the reign of King James I. the Earls of Tyrone and Syreconnel, put themselves at the head of a Catholic insurrection in Ireland, which proved to be a very serious rebellion against the English government, but being subdued, they fled and left their vast estates, upon a process of outlawry, to escheat to the crown.

King James ordered these estates to be surveyed into small tracts, and offered to settlers who would commence their settlements within four years. The terms were liberal, and a preference was given to the Protestants, in the west of Scotland.

These people readily accepted the terms, and emigrated from Scotland, to avoid that prelacy which had been imposed on them in 1637 and 1661. The Presbyterian, or the religion of the Kirk of Scotland, was the religion of their hearts, and they fled to Ireland to enjoy it.

The Irish Catholics felt indignant at this change, and persecuted these people to such a degree, that they resolved to emigrate in a body, and seek a retreat in the wilds of America. They accordingly embarked from Ireland, with their families and effects, and landed in Pennsylvania. From thence they continued southerly, until they reached Carolina, where they settled, and became both numerous and respectable.

About the year 1753, six young men from Pennsylvania, of the Moravian fraternity, removed into the interior of North Carolina, and obtained a survey of 100,000 acres of land, for the accommodation of a Moravian col-

ony, then in England, who had been driven by a religious persecution, from the land of their fathers, and now looked for a quiet retreat in the wilds of America.

In the same year, twelve young men from Pennsylvania, commenced a settlement upon the same tract; and the next year they were joined by several others. An Indian war soon commenced, that checked their progress, and they secured their settlement with pallisadoes, after the manner of an Indian castle; for the Moravians, like the Quakers, never bear arms. In this state of their settlement, they were incorporated, and their village was called Bethabara.

In 1759, they commenced the settlement of Bethany, distant about three miles; and in 1763, they were able to erect a church, and support a preacher.

The Moravian colony arrived from England, soon after, and commenced the village of Salem, as a manufacturing establishment. These people had held all their property in common, until the artists removed from Bethabara to Salem; then the joint partnership eased.

Such was the prosperity of this settlement, that a colony from New-England, joined them and erected a church and school-house upon one corner of the Moravian purchase.

A colony also from Maryland, settled upon the purchase, and erected a church and school-house, upon another part of the tract. These three colonies lived, and continued to live in the greatest harmony, and enjoy the pleasures of social intercourse, in peace, happiness and prosperity.

In the year 1747, a colony from the Highlands of Scotland, under their Laird or Chief, Neal McNeal, embarked for America, and landed at New-York. In 1749, they proceeded southerly until they reached Carolina, where they made a purchase and commenced a settlement near to Fayetteville, (then called Cross Roads.)—This colony consisted of about one hundred families, who finally settled in the counties of Cumberland, Anson, and Bladen.

In 1754, another Highland colony arrived in Carolina; and for several years successively, the Highland Scotch continued to emigrate to Carolina. These hardy, industrious adventurers, were mostly from Argyleshire.

Thus the persecutions of Europe, continued to people

America, from various parts of the different kingdoms; and thus the religion of the reformation was transplanted into these remote regions of the West, to build up this modern Canaan of God.

Governor Johnson died in 1752, and was succeeded by Governor Dobbs; but Nathaniel Rice and Matthew Rowan, presided in succession until Governor Dobbs arrived, in 1754.

Under this administration, the Assembly granted thirteen thousand pounds, for the general support of religion, and six thousand pounds, to endow a public school; but the last was never applied.

Governor Dobbs entered upon his administration, at the commencement of the old French war, in America. This war with all its operations and bearings on the colonies south of the Hudson River, has been noticed in the history of New-England, down to the peace of Paris, 1763.

Under this administration, several controversies sprang up between the Governor and House of Assembly, which continued to rage, as we have seen in New-England, until they obtained the removal of the Governor, in 1764; and the King appointed Governor Tryon, as his successor.

The remaining history of Carolina, will be carried forward collectively, under the National History.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### NEW-YORK—ITS DISCOVERY. RISE AND PROGRESS OF THE COLONY.

In 1608, Captain Henry Hudson, under a commission from King James I. discovered Long-Island, and the River in the colony of New-York, that bears his name, and returned to England.

In 1610, Captain Hudson, (for some reason not satisfactorily explained) sailed from Holland, in the service of the Dutch, and again visited his former discovery; and in the year 1614, the States-General granted a patent to several merchants, for an exclusive trade upon Hudson's River. They accordingly built Fort Amsterdam, at Manhadoes or Manhattan, (new York Island) and another

er at Albany, called Fort Orange, for the protection of their trade.

The same year, Governor Dale of South Virginia, sent Captain Argall to dispossess the French at Port Royal, in Nova Scotia. Having executed his commission, he visited the Dutch settlement at Manhattan, and took possession in the name of the King of England.

In 1623, the Dutch, regardless of the visit from Captain Argall, proceeded to extend their trade to Connecticut River, where they built a trading house, with a small Fort, at the mouth of the little River, where Hartford now stands, and called it the *Hirse of Good Hope*.

In 1621, the States-General granted this district of country, by letters patent, to the Dutch West-India Company, and called it New-Netherlands.

In 1629, Wouter Van Twiller arrived from Holland, with a commission of Governor of New-Netherlands; took possession of Fort Amsterdam, at Manhattan, and entered upon the government of the colony.

Governor Van Twiller published his commission in the following style:—

“We, Director and Council, residing in New-Netherlands, on the Island of Manhattan, under the government of their High Mightinesses, the Lords, the States-General of the United Netherlands, and the privileged West-India Company,” &c.

The Dutch claimed not only Connecticut River and the lands lying west of it, but also Delaware or south River, and the adjoining lands, as far south as Delaware Bay. They claimed also to the north as far as the River St. Lawrence, and called the country north-west of Albany, *Tena Incognita*.

In 1638, William Kieft succeeded Governor Van Twiller, and entered upon the controversy about lines and boundaries.

In 1640, the English attempted to settle a part of Long Island; but the Dutch, under the command of Jan Jansen Alpendam, dispossessed them, and held the jurisdiction.

In 1643, commenced the New England league, and Connecticut and New-Hampshire, attempted to arm the league against the Dutch; not only to punish them for furnishing the Indians with arms, but to drive them from their borders. Massachusetts declined; and it failed.

In 1647, Peter Stuyvesant succeeded Governor Kieft, in the government. Claims upon New-Netherlands, multiplied upon all sides, during this administration. New-England on the east, Maryland on the west, the Dutchess Dowager of Sterling, claimed Long Island, and the Swedes claimed and encroached upon the Delaware.

About this time, a Swedish vessel entered the Raritan River, and the Dutch Governor seized her, which opened a controversy; the Swedes rose in arms, under Governor Rising, and seized Fort Casimer, which the Dutch had built upon the Delaware.

Governor Stuyvesant assembled a force and embarked in person at the head of his troops, to recover the Fort; the commandant capitulated, and resigned up the Fort. Governor Stuyvesant pursued his victory, took Fort Christiana by capitulation, and sent Governor Rising to England. All such Swedes as refused to swear allegiance to the States-General, were sent to Sweden, and New-Swedeland was added to New-Netherlands.

New-Swedeland now took the name of the three lower counties upon South River, and Johan Paul Jaquet, was appointed their first Vice-Director, by the Director General at New-Netherlands. The successors of Jaquet, were Alricks, Hinnjossa, and William Beekman.—These Lieutenants had full power to grant lands; and their deeds have ever been considered as valid.

In the year 1659, William Beekman, agreeable to order, purchased Cape Henlopen, and commenced a settlement, under the protection of a fortress.

In the spring of 1660, Governor Stuyvesant entered into a treaty with Governor Berkeley, (Governor of New-Jersey) for a free trade, and a league, offensive and defensive.

In 1664, King Charles II. granted to his brother, the Duke of York, all that extent of country in America, lying between Nova Scotia and Delaware Bay.

The same year, the Duke of York conveyed to John Lord Berkeley and Baron of Stratton, and Sir George Carteret, of Saltrum in Devon, all that part of his patent lying between Hudson's River on the east, and Delaware-Bay on the west, extending south to Cape May, or the mouth of Delaware-Bay, &c. This patent embraced what became New-Jersey.

The same year a number of settlers removed from Long Island into New-Jersey, and commenced the first settlements.

The same year, Colonel Nicoll, from England, entered the harbour with a small squadron, and summoned the Governor to surrender the Fort to his Britannic Majesty. The Governor convened his council to deliberate, and attempted to palliate; but Colonel Nicoll pressed his demands with severe threats, and the next day the Governor capitulated, upon conditions, "that the Dutch and English limits should be settled by the crown and the States-General." Commissioners were accordingly appointed by the parties, and the articles drawn, signed and accepted, the same month; and Colonel Nicoll took possession of the Fort and colony, and conducted their affairs with wisdom and prudence.

Sir George Carteret was commissioned to reduce Fort Orange, which lay 170 miles up the River; this he soon effected. At the same time, he held a conference with the Chiefs of the Five Nations, and settled a treaty, which proved of lasting advantage to the colony.

The name of New-Amsterdam was now changed to that of New-York; and Fort Orange, soon after, to that of Albany, in honor of the Duke.

Robert Carr was commissioned about the same time, to subdue the settlements on Delaware, or South River, and he effected his object by the first of October.

Thus the whole of the colony of New-Netherlands, was subdued to the crown of England, in less than two months.—1764.

Governor Stuyvesant continued in the colony, where he lived in affluence and died much respected.

The Dutch settlers all remained in the colony, and became valuable citizens; and their descendants are greatly respected to this day.

The same year, Governor Nicoll seized on the property of the Dutch West-India Company, in consequence of the war that commenced between the English and Dutch.

On the 12th of June, 1665, Governor Nicoll incorporated the city of New-York, and introduced the English mode of government. He also settled the boundary line with Connecticut, and regulated the limits of the townships on Long Island.

In 1667, the conquest of New-York was confirmed to the English, by the peace of Breda.

Soon after the peace, Governor Nicoll returned to England, after having presided over the colony, in wisdom, moderation and justice, with a plenitude of power, that was uncontrolled.

Governor Nicoll closed his administration, by erecting a court of Assizes, consisting of the Governor and council and Justices of the Peace; and collected a code of laws, usages, &c. for the colony.

In 1667, the Duke of York sent out Francis Lovelace, as successor to Governor Nicoll, and he ruled with wisdom and moderation, down to the year 1672, when the colony was again taken by the Dutch, which closed his administration.

In 1674, this colony was again restored to the English, at the peace of Westminster, upon the grounds of *uti possidetis*. At the conclusion of this peace, the King granted to the Duke of York, a new patent, bearing date June 29th, 1674, and the Duke commissioned Sir Edmond Andros, as Governor General over all his territories in North America.

Governor Andros received the resignation of this province from the Dutch, October 31, next ensuing; and entered upon the duties of his office, by calling a Court-Martial, to try Captain Manning, for his treacherous and cowardly conduct, in betraying the colony to the Dutch. To these charges Manning pleaded guilty, yet the Court spared his life, by ordering his sword to be broken over his head, in front of the City Hall, and himself disabled from holding any place of public trust in the colony, hereafter.

In 1680, Governor Andros claimed the jurisdiction of New-Jersey, and caused Philip Carteret, the Governor, to be arrested and brought to New-York; but the Duke of York interposed; restored Governor Carteret to his government; removed Andros, and appointed Colonel Thomas Dongan, as his successor — 1682.

On the 27th of August, 1683, Governor Dongan arrived and entered upon the government of the colony.

In the year 1683, Governor Dongan issued orders to the Sheriffs, to summon the freeholders to elect their representatives, to meet in General Assembly; the election was made, and the Assembly convened accordingly

on the 17th of October. This proved useful to the colony and rendered the Governor highly popular. This Assembly consisted of a council of ten, and a House of Representatives of eighteen.

In 1684, Governor Dongan, at the request of Lord Howard, Governor of Virginia, assembled a council of the Chiefs of the Five Nations, at Albany, where they united in a firm treaty of peace.

In the same year. De la Bane, Governor of Canada, enraged at this treaty, commenced a war upon the Five Nations; entered their country with an army of 1700 men; resolved on their ruin. Governor Dongan gave the Indians seasonable notice of this invasion, and put them on their guard.

When De la Bane entered their country, the Indians retired into the forest; and a mortal sickness commenced in his army, which defeated the enterprise. He called a council of the Chiefs; settled a peace, and withdrew into Canada.

In 1685, De la Bane was succeeded by the Marquis Denonville, who brought out with him from France, a regiment of troops with a view of carrying into effect the plans of De la Bane, and proceeded to erect a Fort at Niagara.

Governor Dongan remonstrated against the measure, and threatened him with hostilities, but without effect.—Denonville persisted in his plans, and carried the war into the country of the Five Nations, and finished Fort Niagara.

These movements led Governor Dongan again to assemble the Chiefs of the Five Nations at Albany, in August, and the treaty was renewed. Thus Governor Dongan maintained the supremacy of peace and war over the Five Nations. Whenever they showed a disposition to treat with the French, he withheld his supplies, and refused all aid, which brought them to terms.

In 1685, Charles II. died, and the Duke of York succeeded to the throne, as James II. who appointed Sir Edmond Andros, Governor of New-England. Sir Edmond arrived in Boston, December, 1686.

In 1688, the good news of the Revolution in England, the flight of James II. to France, and the accession of William and Mary, were announced to the colony. Joy and satisfaction beamed in every Protestant countenance,



and gladdened their hearts. They, with Colonel Leisler at their head, seized on the fortress at New-York, in the name of King William, and the militia gave their support.

Governor Dongan resigned the chair to Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson, and embarked for England. A scene of discord ensued; but the appearance of three ships in the harbour, from England, decided the controversy. The people supported Leisler in holding the Fort, and subscribed a declaration of mutual support to the Prince of Orange. Nicholson absconded, and the people triumphed.

King William graciously received the address of Colonel Leisler, and confirmed him in his command.—1689.

Governor Dongan repaired to Ireland, where he became Earl of Limerick, and Colonel Nicholson was appointed Governor of Virginia, the same year.

Colonel Bayard, and Courtland, the Mayor of New-York city, opposed the government of Leisler, and retired to Albany, where they formed a strong party, who resolved to hold Fort Orange, for the Prince, in defiance of the authority of Colonel Leisler.

Colonel Leisler sent his son-in-law, Milbourn, as Colonel of an armed force, to reduce Fort Orange to obedience; but the passions of the parties were high, and he did not succeed until the spring of 1690. He then availed himself of the Indian war that raged; took possession of the Fort, and triumphed over his enemies.

This year was rendered memorable for the failure of the expedition against Quebec, under Sir William Phipps, as was noticed under New-England.

In March 1691 Colonel Humphrey Sloughter succeeded Colonel Leisler, in the government of New-York.—Colonel Leisler, with Milbourn, refused to deliver up the Fort at New-York; but Governor Sloughter pressed his demands, and Leisler complied, and surrendered the Fort. The Governor caused Leisler and Milbourn to be arrested, tried, and executed for high treason. Many of the partizans of Leisler, fled the colony; but they were soon recalled by an act of general indemnity, which settled the peace of the colony.—April, 1691.

The Assembly then in session was the second that had been held in this colony. They passed their cen-

tures upon the administration of Colonel Leisler, and approved the proceedings of Governor Sloughter. This Assembly abolished the old court of Assizes, and established new courts of law. They next erected a Supreme court of justice, with four assistant justices, and an Attorney-General.

They also formed a constitution or bill of rights; securing trial by jury; freedom from taxes, without consent of Assembly; toleration to all christians, except Papists, &c.

A question was discussed in this Assembly, "Whether the people have a right to be represented in General Assembly, or whether it be a privilege enjoyed through the grace of the crown." The sense of the House was taken upon this question, and an act passed in favor of the former opinion; but this act was repealed by King William, in 1697.

In 1691, Governor Sloughter met the Chiefs of the Five Nations in council, at Albany, and renewed their former league with the English, to prevent the Mohawks from making peace with Count Frontenac, then Governor of Canada. Governor Sloughter, on his return to New-York died, July 23. 1691; and the government devolved on the council. They appointed Richard Ingolsby President, and he was sworn into office on the 26th.

At this time Major Schuyler assembled a party of Mohawks; crossed Lake Champlain, and commenced an attack upon the French settlements in Canada; gained a signal victory over De Callieres, Governor of Montreal; killed and took about 300 French, and returned in triumph to Albany. This opened an Indian war with Canada, that raged through the winter, with various success.

On the 29th of August, Colonel Benjamin Fletcher arrived from England; published his commission as Governor, and entered upon the duties of his office. He brought out an acceptable present to the colony, of arms, military stores, &c. which called forth an address of thanks to his Majesty, with a request that he would order the neighboring colonies to join their aid in defence of the colony.\*

Major Schuyler of Albany, had at this time, by his great abilities, as well as active zeal in defence of his coun-

---

\*The colony at that time, contained about 2000 souls.

try, acquired such influence over the Five Nations, as not only secured their friendship, but rendered them entirely subservient to his will. Quider (as they called him) was the director of their movements, and thus became very useful to Governor Fletcher; and he raised him to the council board.

In 1693, Count Frontenac invaded the Five Nations, with an army of six or seven hundred French and Indians; and on the night of the 6th of February, this army passed the village of Schenectady, and entered the country of the Mohawks. They surprised the Indians in their castles, and killed and captured about 360 of the confederates.

Major Schuyler appeared for their relief, at the head of his volunteers, and routed the enemy. The confederates joined in the pursuit, and the French were driven back into Canada, with great loss and distress. Peace was restored.

This year, the King vested Governor Fletcher with full powers to command the militia of the neighbouring colonies, for the defence of New York, agreeable to their petition to his Majesty; and the Governor attempted to assume the command of the Connecticut militia at Hartford, as has been noticed.

At this time, there was no religious establishment in this colony; but a free toleration was granted in their bill of rights.

Governor Fletcher, in his speech at the opening of the first Assembly, urged the importance of providing for a religious establishment; but the House declined it. At the second session of the Assembly, he pressed the subject again, and the House passed a bill accordingly, and sent it up to the Governor, for his concurrence. The Governor returned the bill, with this amendment upon that clause that regarded the choosing and settling Ministers: "*And presented to the Governor, to be approved and collated.*"

The House returned the bill, praying "that it might pass without the amendment, having in the drawing the bill, a due regard to the pious intent of settling a Ministry for the benefit of the people."

The Governor in his wrath, prorogued the Assembly. Here opened the first religious controversy. The Governor set up his prerogative, and the House their privi-

lege. This spirit appeared at the adjourned session, in September, and the Governor dissolved the Assembly.

In the midst of this religious quarrel, a new Indian war commenced. Count Frontenac again invaded the country of the Five Nations, and commenced the repairs of the Fort at Cataragui. The Governor published the King's orders, that the following colonies should furnish their several quotas of men for the war.

Massachusetts 350, Connecticut 120, Rhode-Island, &c. 48, Pennsylvania 80, Maryland 160, New-York 200, and Virginia 240.

The Governor used all his efforts to carry this order into effect; but the colonies resisted the measure as dangerous and impolitic, to trust so much power in the hands of the Governor of New-York.

This Indian war, continued to rage down to the peace of Ryswic, 1697—this closed the horrid scene.

Upon the peace of Ryswic, Richard, Earl of Bello-mont, was appointed to succeed Governor Fletcher, and he arrived in New-York, April 2, 1698. His Excellency laid before his council, his commission against the pirates, who then infested the American seas. He next laid before the council, an affidavit delivered him by Secretary Vernon, and the East-India Company, alleging "that Fletcher had permitted the pirates to land their spoils in this province, and that Nicoll had bargained for their protection, and received eight hundred dollars in specie."

Nicoll acknowledged the receipt of this money; but pleaded the act of Assembly, allowing privateers to enter, upon giving security. This affidavit opened the field for the enemies of Fletcher to attach themselves to the Earl, and rendered his administration popular.

His Lordship repaired to Boston in June, to enter upon the government of that province, as was noticed under Massachusetts, where he apprehended the noted pirate, Kid. When he had settled the affairs of that government, he returned to New-York, where he died, March, 1701, greatly lamented.

## CHAPTER IX.

## NEW-YORK, CONTINUED.

The Earl of Bellomont was a minister for good to the colonies over which he presided, and his death was severely felt.

Nanfan, the Lieutenant-Governor, was then absent in the Island of Barbadoes, and the council were divided upon the question, who should rule.

On the first of May, Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan arrived and closed the controversy, and entered upon the government. The parties continuing warm in the Assembly, the Governor, to allay the storm, dissolved them.—June, 1701.

On the 2d of September, the Governor instituted a Court of Chancery, by order of the Lords of trade.—This Court was to commence and continue its sittings on the first Tuesday of each month; and commissioners were empowered to appoint Masters, Clerks, and a Register, for the same.

I pass over those civil and religious controversies that distracted this colony, through this and the succeeding administration, under Lord Cornbury, down to the administration of Lord Lovelace, 1708.

His Lordship received his appointment from her Majesty, (Queen Ann) in the spring: but did not arrive in the colony until December following.

The jealousy excited by the mal-administration of Lord Cornbury, carried its effects into this administration, and led the Assembly to maintain that caution they had used towards the former; lest Lord Lovelace should tread in his steps, and defraud the public revenue. His Lordship felt the cruel indignity, and in this trying scene he died, and left his wife and family to feel the severity of their neglect, until the Queen interposed, and compelled the Assembly to do them justice.

Upon the death of Lord Lovelace, the administration again devolved on Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldsby.

At this time the expedition contemplated against Canada, engrossed the attention of this colony. General Nicholson, formerly Lieutenant-Governor, had engaged in the enterprise, as Commander-in-Chief; and he entered into the war with zeal and spirit.

The colony of New-York raised 700 men, with two independent companies; employed six hundred Indians in their service, and supported their families at Albany, at the same time. They also constructed 200 *latteaux*, 200 birch canoes, to transport the troops over the lakes, and built two Forts; besides the expense of transporting provisions, military stores, &c. all which cost this colony about £20,000; but when the promised fleet had failed, they were left to provide for this expense by an emission of paper money.

It appeared from the letter of Lord Sunderland, (the British Minister) that the fleet promised by the Queen, had been called into service to support the Portuguese fleet, which had been defeated by the French; and thus the expedition failed.

In 1710, Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldsby was succeeded by Governor Hunter. The Governor brought out with him from England, a colony of Palatines, to the number of 3000; a part of this colony settled in New-York, where they built a Lutheran church, and established the Lutheran religion; others planted a beautiful village upon the Manor of Livingston; others removed into Pennsylvania, where they settled; and drew out into that province, several thousands of their persecuted brethren from Germany; who also settled in Pennsylvania.

Another colony came out from Germany, and planted the village west of Albany, upon the Mohawk, known by the name of German Flats. All these Germans were peaceable, industrious, good inhabitants, and a great acquisition to her Majesty's colonies.

Governor Hunter saw the importance of securing the peace of the frontier, by a friendly intercourse with the Indians. He accordingly assembled the Chiefs of the Five Nations, in council, at Albany, and renewed the former covenants.

In 1709, Colonel Schuyler sailed for England, with five Sachems of the Five Nations, at his own private expense, to promote the best good of the colony. These Indian kings were objects of particular admiration in England, throughout the kingdom. They were introduced at court, and presented to her Majesty, who received them graciously. They visited all parts of the kingdom; and when they had been fully satisfied with

the enjoyments of England, they returned to America, with Commodore Martin and General Nicholson, who commanded the forces destined against Port Royal.—1710. (See New-England)

This year, New-York again made great efforts to co-operate with the fleet and armament from England, in the conquest of Canada; but the destruction of the fleet in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, again defeated the enterprise, and left the colony again involved in debt.

In autumn of 1711, the Governor convened the Assembly, to provide for the exigencies of the colony: but a controversy sprang up between the two Houses, which marred the interest of the colony, and defeated the object of the session. Both parties were obstinate, and the debts of the colony remained unpaid.

In May, 1712, the Governor again convened the Assembly, and the same evils continued. The public groaned under the accumulated pressure of the debts incurred by the war; yet the House was obstinate, and the Governor dissolved the Assembly.\*

In March, 1713, the treaty of Utrecht was signed, and the peace was soon announced in America. By this treaty, the Five Nations of Indians were (for the first time) acknowledged subjects of the crown of England.

In May, 1713, the Governor convened a new Assembly; and by his laconic speech, broke the obstinacy of the House, and they promptly provided for the exigencies of the public.

In 1719, Governor Hunter took an affectionate leave of the colony, and sailed for England; and Colonel Peter Schuyler, as eldest counsellor, took the chair.—The most conspicuous features in this administration, were a new treaty with the Six Nations at Albany, and the settlement of the colony line with New-Jersey.

On the 17th of September, 1720, William Burnet, Esq. arrived in New-York, with the King's commission, and relieved Colonel Schuyler from the duties of the chair, and commenced his administration as Governor; Colonel Schuyler became his senior counsellor.

In 1727, Governor Burnet was removed by his Majes-

---

\*This year has been distinguished for the union of the Tuscaroras with the Five Nations, from which time they became the Six Nations.

ty, (George I.) and placed in the chair of Massachusetts, and Governor Montgomery succeeded to the chair.

The administration of Governor Montgomery settled the boundary line with Connecticut, by exchanging lands near the sound, for a tract lying between the colonies, of sixty thousand acres, called the oblong.—1731.

The same year, the French built the fortress at Crown Point, on Lake Champlain.

The subsequent history of New-York, has been carried forward in the general history of New-England, down to the peace of Paris, of 1763.



## CHAPTER X.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF NEW-JERSEY.

The patent of the Duke of York, to Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, bearing date 1664, which laid the foundation of the colony of New-Jersey, has been noticed in the history of New-York: and the incipient stages of the rise of New-Jersey, have been carried forward in that history, because they were inseparably connected.

The next year, Philip Carteret was appointed Governor. He came over from England, and settled at Elizabethtown; and laid the foundation of the colony, upon the free and independent plan of the colonies of New-England; and presided with wisdom and dignity, until the colony was conquered by the Dutch.—1673.

The Dutch erected the colony of New-Jersey into three jurisdictions, viz. Newer, Amstel, Upland and Hoer-Kill, and appointed Anthony Colve, Governor.

The next year, the colony was restored to the English, by the peace of Westminster. The King granted a new patent to the Duke of York, and the Duke appointed Sir Edmund Andros Governor of all his territories in America.

“In 1676, the province was divided into East and West Jersey. Lord Berkeley’s assignees released East Jersey to Carteret; who in return, conveyed West Jersey as a dependency of New-York; but Carteret retained the government of East Jersey.”



"In 1677, a vessel arrived from England with two hundred and thirty passengers, mostly Quakers, who proceeded up the Delaware: treated with the Indians for a tract of land, and commenced a settlement, at what is now called Burlington. Two vessels arrived the same year, with about 200 passengers, and settled at the same place."

"West Jersey continued to be held as a dependency of New-York, or rather as a conquered country, until the year 1689, when the Duke of York, after much solicitation from the proprietors, restored to them the rights, granted by his patent of 1664; and West Jersey was no longer subject to New-York."

This year the first Mills were erected in New Jersey. Governor Andros caused Phillip Carteret, Governor of East Jersey, to be arrested this year, and brought prisoner to New-York; but the Duke interposed; restored Carteret to his government, and removed Andros.

In 1685, the Duke of York, then King James II. appointed Sir Edmond Andros, to the government of New-England.

In 1702, the proprietors of East and West Jersey, resigned up their colonies to Queen Ann, and they were governed by the crown, down to the time of the Revolution of 1775.

One common Governor, under the crown, from 1702 to 1738, governed the colonies of New-York and New-Jersey; they then became distinct and separate governments, and have continued so to this day.

In 1738, Princeton College was founded, by the name of Nassau Hall.

In 1776, the present constitution of government was framed and adopted.



## CHAPTER XI.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF DELAWARE.

In the year 1627, this country was visited by a party of Swedes, by permission of Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden; who commenced a settlement at Cape Henle-

en, (then called Paradise Point) under the command of William Useling, a noted Swedish merchant; who called it New-Swedeland.

In 1631, they built a Fort near where Wilmington now stands, which they called Christeen or Christiana, and laid out a village, which the Dutch afterwards destroyed.

Soon after this, Peter Minnet was commissioned by the regency of Sweden, under the Queen, to the government of the colony.

When Queen Christiana ascended the throne of Sweden, she commissioned John Printz, to the government of the colony; and his administration continued to the year 1654, when he was succeeded by his son-in-law John Pappoia.

In the year 1655, Peter Stuyvesant, Governor of New-Netherlands, made a general conquest of New-Swedeland, and added it to the Dutch colony, and Alric became their first Governor.

In 1664, the English took possession of the Dutch colony of New-Netherlands, and King Charles II. conveyed this district in his patent to the Duke of York.—The whole was confirmed to the English at the peace of Breda, by an exchange for Surinam, a province of Guiana, in South America.—1667. It then fell under the government of Sir Edmond Andros.

In the year 1672, the Dutch incorporated the town of New-Castle, and the inhabitants had a free trade, without being obliged to make entry at New-York.

*Wampum* was the principal currency of Delaware, through the early periods of her settlement, and Governor Lovelace gave it a current value, by proclamation; ordering four white grains and three black ones, for a stiver or penny.

In 1681, this country was covered by the patent of Pennsylvania, which King Charles II. granted to William Penn.

In the year 1682, the Duke of York conveyed to Penn, all his claims upon this district, and he annexed it to his government.\*

After the union of the province and the three lower

---

\*Their deeds embraced New-Castle and twelve miles round it, extending to Cape Henlopen.

counties, (then so called) the representatives held their first session at Upland, (Chester) on the fourth of the 10th month, 1682.

In 1685, the boundary line between Delaware and Maryland, was settled between William Penn and Lord Baltimore, as follows, viz. "That the tract lying between the River and Bay of Delaware and the eastern sea, on the one side, and the Chesapeake Bay on the other, be divided into two equal parts, by a line from Cape Henlopen to the 40th degree of north latitude, and that one half lying between the Bay of Delaware and the eastern sea, belong to his Majesty, and the other half to the Lord Baltimore."

During the three years residence of William Penn in the colony, all was harmony and good order; but when he returned to England, to settle this controversy with Lord Baltimore, his Deputy Governor, Moor, threw the province into the utmost disorder, until he was removed and succeeded by Blackwell in 1688. He in his turn, played the tyrant over the people.

Upon the accession of William and Mary, the colony of Pennsylvania neglected to acknowledge their sovereignty; but continued their administration in the name of James II. and this gave just offence to King William, and in 1692, he assumed the government, and appointed Colonel Fletcher, Governor of New-York, to administer the government of both colonies.

In the year 1693, Pennsylvania was again restored to William Penn. and in 1696, he gave the colony a new frame of government, which continued to the year 1761, when the counties of Delaware, rejected the constitution and declared their independence of Pennsylvania.

The repose of the counties of Delaware remained undisturbed for many years, until the old proprietary controversy was renewed; then the claimants became warm, and the weight of anxiety and expense, obliged them to adjust all their differences by commissioners.— May, 1762.

By reason of numerous delays, the doings of these commissioners were ever carried into effect, until March, 1762, when the division lines were run out in due form; but these were not fully established until the proclamation of Richard Penn. in 1775.

The remainder of the history of Delaware, will be

carried forward with the colonies collectively, in their national character.



## CHAPTER XII.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF PENNSYLVANIA, DOWN TO THE PEACE OF 1763.

The distinguished services of Admiral Penn, had brought him into power at court. This favor descended to his son, William Penn, although a Quaker, and enabled him to obtain, by way of compensation for a large sum of money, due from the government to his father, that district of country in North America, now known by the name of Pennsylvania.

William Penn was constituted full and absolute proprietor of all this tract of land or province, with full powers of government over the same, by a charter bearing date, Westminster, March 4th, 1781; which province is thus defined:

“Charles, by the Grace of God, &c. Therefore, know ye, &c. do give and grant unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, all that tract of land in America, with the Islands thereunto pertaining, as the same is bounded on the east by Delaware River, from twelve miles distance north of New-Castle Town, unto the 43d degree of north latitude, if the said river doth extend so far, but if not, then as far as it doth extend, and from thence to the 43d degree, as aforesaid. The said lands to extend westward, five degrees of longitude; to be computed from said eastern bounds. Said lands to be bounded on the north by the 43d degree of north latitude, and on the south by a circle drawn twelve miles distance from New-Castle, northward and westward, unto the beginning of the 40th degree of north latitude, and then westwardly by a straight line, to the limits of the longitude above mentioned.”

This patent continues in this style, through 23 long sections, in which the rights, powers and privileges of the proprietary, are fully and clearly defined.

These preliminaries being closed, William Penn published his patent, with such a description of the colony,

as could then be obtained ; and offered his lands for sale at 40 shillings sterling, the hundred acres, or one shilling per annum, forever ; with good conditions of settlement for such as wished to become adventurers.

The disciples of George Fox,\* whose confidence was strongly fixed in William Penn, soon formed a company in London, under the name of "The Free Society of Traders in Pennsylvania." Twenty thousand acres of land was soon purchased ; articles of trade were drawn up ; published and entered upon, by several divisions of the company ; which were soon followed by others, and the emigrations to Pennsylvania, rapidly progressed.

In 1701, two ships from London and one from Bristol, sailed for Pennsylvania, and arrived safe with settlers for the new colony, and brought out William Markham, the Deputy-Governor, with several commissioners to treat with the Indians, and purchase their lands. A policy well calculated to insure the peace and prosperity of the colony.

William Penn guaranteed to his settlers, a constitution entitled, "The Frame of Government for the colony of Pennsylvania, in America." &c. in which the civil and religious privileges of the citizens were clearly defined, cautiously guarded, and fully protected. The true principles of this government may be seen in the following remarks :

"The true design of government, is to support power in reverence with the people, and to secure the people from the abuse of power ; for liberty without obedience is confusion : and obedience without liberty, is tyranny," &c.

In 1682, William Penn obtained of the Duke of York, a release of all the right, claim or title, which he had, or might be supposed to have, to the province of Pennsylvania ; together with another conveyance of all claim to the territory lying upon the River Delaware, called by the Dutch, the "*three lower counties*," which are fully defined under New-York and Delaware.

In 1682, William Penn arrived at Newcastle, in Pennsylvania, on the 24th of October, where he was cordially

---

\*Follower of the sect called Quakers, about the middle of the 17th century.

received, amidst the acclamations of the people. English, Swedes, and Dutch, all bid him welcome, with mingled transports of joy.

On the 4th of December, William Penn convened the first Assembly at Chester;\* at which time, the three lower counties were annexed to the province, by a special act of union. The Dutch and Swedes were all naturalized, and the laws agreed upon in England, all passed in due form.

William Penn concluded a treaty of peace with the Indians, this year, which continued more than seventy years, and rendered the Quakers the idols of their affections.

In less than one year after the proprietary came into the province, more than thirty ships arrived from England, with passengers to settle the colony; these were generally Quakers, whose first concern was, like the Puritans of New-England, to plant churches, and make provision for the free enjoyment of their religion.

In about two years after this, more than fifty sail of shipping arrived from different parts of England, Holland, and Germany, with settlers for the new colony.—A company of Palatines, at this time came out from Germany, and settled Germantown, near Philadelphia. These were Quakers, who were driven from the Palatinate, by the religious persecutions, that laid waste their country, in the reign of Louis XIV. King of France.

At this time, the city of Philadelphia, which William Penn had laid out for his capital, in 1682, grew and increased rapidly, and the log huts had become numerous.

In 1683, William Penn convened the second Assembly† in his new capital, and presided in the council.—The province was by this Assembly, divided into the counties of Bucks, Philadelphia and Chester; these added to the three lower counties on the Delaware, viz. New-Castle, Kent and Sussex, made up six counties, for which the proprietary appointed Sheriffs.

This year a controversy arose between Lord Baltimore and William Penn, concerning the boundary be-

---

\*This Assembly consisted of three councillors, and nine members of the House.

†This Assembly was composed of eighteen councillors, and thirty-six of the Assembly or lower house.

tween Maryland and Pennsylvania; but the prudent management of William Penn, soon allayed the strife, and restored tranquility to the settlers. William Penn, however, resolve to return to England, and settle the question fully with Lord Baltimore.

In 1684, William Penn appointed Thomas Lloyd, President of the Council; organized his government; and on the 12th of June, set sail for England. He arrived in England in season to witness the death of King Charles II. and the accession of James II. late Duke of York. To effect the immediate purposes of his voyage, he took up his residence at Kensington, that he might have a more free and easy access to the King.—1685.

The agent of Lord Baltimore, appeared in England and managed the cause of his Lordship so adroitly, before the King in council, that he obtained an order for the three lower counties, formerly claimed by the Dutch, to be annexed to Maryland. Although this order was to take immediate effect, yet it was delayed until the reign of Queen Ann, about the year 1702.

In 1685, great disorders arose in the government of Pennsylvania, during the absence of the proprietary, and severe persecutions awaited William Penn, while in England. His enemies accused him of a jesuitical ambition. At the same time, he sent from England, William Blackwell, to act as Deputy Governor, in the place of Thomas Lloyd, removed from the Presidency by resignation; but this increased the evils. Blackwell withdrew from the chair, and returned to England.

In 1689, *the public school of the Friends*, was founded in Philadelphia. In 1697, it was incorporated by charter; and in 1701, this charter was confirmed by patent from the proprietary, and he fixed the number of the corporation to that of 15: under the title of the Overseers of the Public School, founded in Philadelphia, at the request, cost and charges, of the people called Quakers. In 1711, William Penn renewed the charter of this school, whereby he confirmed all the other charters, and appointed that fifteen overseers should be chosen by the corporation, to inspect the affairs of the school.

In 1688, when William and Mary had ascended to the throne, upon the flight of James II. those suspicions that had fallen upon William Penn, and given him the name of Papist, Jesuit, &c. were remembered, and caused

him to be arrested; arraigned before a tribune of justice, and formally tried; but as no proof lay against him, he was acquitted at the Easter term.

In 1690, he was arraigned again, upon a new indictment; tried and acquitted, at Trinity term. The same year, he was again attacked by a proclamation, as an enemy to the kingdom, and an adherent to the enemies of the crown; arraigned, tried and acquitted, at Michaelmas term.

William Penn now began seriously to wish to return to his province in America; but the time had not yet arrived. He was arrested upon the oath of a vile, profligate fellow, whilst returning from the funeral of the celebrated George Fox; and he withdrew from public notice, and passed two or three years in retirement.—1691.

In this state of things, the disorders in the province of Pennsylvania, became so serious, that the King appointed Colonel Fletcher, Governor of New-York, to take the reins of government; and in April, 1693, he entered upon the administration.

In 1694, the friends of William Penn, found access to the ear of his Majesty, and obtained the following declaration from the King: “William Penn is one of my old friends, as well as yours; and he may follow his business without further molestation; and you are authorised to make this known to him.”

At the eventful moment when this communication was made to William Penn, died Gulielma Maria, his wife, November 30th, which added greatly to the weight of his afflictions.

In August, 1694, William Penn, was restored to the government of his province, by letters patent from their Majesties, William and Mary; and he appointed William Markham, Lieutenant Governor, and the affairs of the province became regular.

In 1699, William Penn returned again to Pennsylvania, where he arrived in December. By this late arrival, he providentially avoided the yellow fever, which for the first time, had raged in Philadelphia, and had proved very malignant and mortal.

One of the first objects that engrossed the attention of the proprietary, was to heal the differences that had distracted the colony in his absence; to effect this, he convened an Assembly at New-Castle, in October 1700.



This Assembly received from the proprietary, a new charter of privileges, that healed all their differences, and restored peace, order and tranquility to the province.

In 1701, William Penn held a grand treaty at Philadelphia, with about forty Sachems, and others of the great tribes lying upon the waters of the Susquehannah, Potowmac, &c. which established a general and lasting peace.

Thus we see how much the interest of a people, depends upon individual character.

These things being accomplished, William Penn once more organized his government in his province, by appointing Andrew Hamilton, late Governor of New Jersey, as his Deputy Governor, and James Logan, as his Secretary, and returned to England, to promote the interest of the colonies generally.

In 1702, King William died, and was succeeded by Queen Ann. The same year, Governor Hamilton died, and was succeeded by Lieutenant-Governor Skippy.

In 1703, the three lower counties on the Delaware, withdrew from the province, and the latter called a separate Assembly at Philadelphia, in October.

The same year, the proprietary appointed John Evans as Deputy Governor, and repaired to Pennsylvania, where he arrived in February, 1704.

In April, he convened an Assembly at Philadelphia; for the purpose of again uniting the three lower counties to the province; this he effected so far as to gain the consent of the counties, but the province refused to be reunited. In autumn of the same year, Governor Evans convened an Assembly at New-Castle, which became clamorous; caballed against him, and actually accused the Governor to the proprietary, for mal-administration.

Queen Ann's war with the French and Spaniards, was now raging in Europe, on the ocean, and throughout the frontiers of New England; desolating their fields and settlements, and filling their borders with death; yet in Pennsylvania, all was tranquil, and the Susquehannah Indians were rejoicing with a company of Quakers, who had come out to preach to them in the character of friends of William Penn.—1705.

In 1709, Governor Gookin arrived at Philadelphia, to succeed Governor Evans, removed. The Governor made an effort to raise men and money in the province,

to co-operate with New-England and New-York, in the conquest of Canada; but failed. These Quakers were not disposed either to fight or pay. This opened a controversy between the Assembly and Governor, which raged so seriously, that the proprietary was obliged to interpose by letter to the Assembly, in 1710.

The effects of this letter were such, as caused the dissolution of this Assembly, and the election of a new one; and harmony was restored.

In 1712, William Penn made a formal sale of the province of Pennsylvania, to her Majesty Queen Ann, for the double purpose of relieving himself from the embarrassments of his affairs, as well as from the vexatious cares which their unhallowed contentions had produced; but before the surrendry was duly executed, he was seized with an apoplexy, which rendered him incompetent to the act.

The factions of the province were shortly renewed, and continued down to the year 1717, when Governor Gookin returned to England, and was succeeded by Governor Keith. Under this administration, order and peace were again restored.

At this eventful moment, when all was quiet, died William Penn, the friend of man, and the benevolent founder of the province of Pennsylvania.—1718. The particulars of his will, and disposal of his estate, may be seen in Proud's History of Pennsylvania, Vol. II. page 114.

About this time, William Penn, the heir at law, died at Liege, and his eldest son, Springett, claimed the government.

The controverted claims amongst the heirs of William Penn. were decided in a court of Chancery, in England, in favor of John, Thomas and Richard Penn, minor heirs of the elder William Penn; and the widow Hannah Penn, as executrix, had the government vested in her and other trustees, in trust for the minors.

In 1723, the Governor instituted a Court of Chancery in the province, by and with the consent of the Assembly.

This year, Governor Keith made a general peace with the Virginia, Pennsylvania and confederate Indians, and the Assembly, to gratify a request of the Indians, passed an act to prevent the traders from selling rum to them.

In 1722, the Assembly, to relieve the burthens of the people, issued bills of credit, to the amount of £15,000. At the close of the year, they issued £30,000 more, which in 1726, had depreciated 59 per cent.

In 1729, they issued £30,000 more, and in 1739, (ten years) such had become the depreciation and pressure for money, that they issued £11,000 more, making a sum total of £80,000 which, in fair market, was worth £59,000. Only £6110, 5s. of all this sum had then been redeemed.

In 1726, Governor Keith was succeeded by Governor Gordon, and in 1731, such had been the prosperity of the province, that it contained a more numerous white population, than the three colonies of Virginia, Maryland and Carolina.

The commerce of Pennsylvania, had become so respectable, that their historian, (Robert Proud) observes, "their exports consisted of wheat, flour, biscuit, beef and pork, butter and cheese, bacon, hams, cider, apples, soap, myrtle, wax, candles, &c. which yielded them a revenue of £60,000 annually. All this, the colony had attained to, in about 50 years.

In 1732, Thomas Penn, a descendant of William Penn the elder, arrived in Pennsylvania in August, when the Assembly were in session, and entered upon the duties of the administration.

In 1736, Governor Gordon died, and was succeeded by Governor Thomas, who did not arrive in the province until August, 1738.

In 1741, Thomas Penn took an affectionate leave of the Assembly, and returned to England; and in 1746, he came into possession of three-fourths of the province.

In 1742, a number of gentlemen in the city of Philadelphia, associated with Doctor Franklin, and subscribed forty shillings each, for the purchase of a library, with ten shillings annually, which laid the foundation of one of the first and most respectable libraries in the country.

In 1750, more than five thousand British, Irish and Germans, were imported into Pennsylvania. At this time, Philadelphia contained twenty-one hundred dwelling houses, and eleven places of public worship.

The American Philosophical Society, was instituted in 1769, and incorporated in 1780.

In 1747, the affairs of the province were generally

quiet, when Governor Thomas resigned, and was succeeded by Governor Hamilton, in 1748.

In 1754, Governor Hamilton resigned, and was succeeded by Governor Morris, and he was succeeded by William Denny, in 1756; and in 1758, James Hamilton again took the chair, and continued to the year 1763. John Penn, son of Richard Penn, then took the chair, and continued until 1771.

At the commencement of the Revolution, the heirs of William Penn quit-claimed all their proprietary rights to the colony, for thirty thousand pounds.

In 1790, Pennsylvania established their present constitution.

In 1793, more than three thousand souls were swept off by the yellow fever; and in 1797, the same disease swept away more than twelve thousand.

In 1800, Congress removed from Philadelphia to the city of Washington.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF MARYLAND, FROM ITS ORIGIN DOWN TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

The first settlement that commenced in this district, that now bears the name of Maryland, was made by William Claiborne.

In the year 1631, King Charles I. granted to Claiborne, a license to traffic in all such parts of America, as were not patented to others; and he planted a small colony upon Kent Island, near the centre of the territory.

About the same time, King Charles I. caused a patent of this district of country, to be made out to Sir George Calvert, (Lord Baltimore) who had been Secretary to his father, King James I. and who having become a Papist, now sought a retreat in the wilds of America, where he might enjoy his religion undisturbed.

Sir George was one of the original partners of the Virginia Company, and continued so until its dissolution; which led him to seek a retreat in this part of America.

When Sir George arrived in Virginia, he found the

people all churchmen, whose intolerance was as bitter as that he had left in England; he therefore removed into the district of Maryland; but before his patent passed the seals, Sir George died, and the King issued the patent to his son Ceecil, Lord Baltimore, June 20th, 1632.

The patent issued to Ceecil, Lord Baltimore, is thus defined, viz. "All that part of Pennsylvania lying between the Ocean on the east, and the bay of Chesapeak on the west; and divided from the other part by a line drawn from the cape, called Watkinson's Point, situated in the aforesaid bay, near the River Wigheo, on the west, unto the main ocean on the east; and between that bound on the south, unto that part of Delaware-Bay on the north, which lies under the 40th degree of north latitude, &c. and all that tract of land, from the aforesaid Delaware-Bay, in a right line by the degree aforesaid, to the true meridian of the first fountain of the River Potomac, and from thence tending towards the south, to the further bank of the aforesaid River, and following the west and south side of it to a certain place called the Cinquack, situated near the mouth of said river where it falls into the Chesapeak Bay; and from thence in a straight line to the aforesaid Cape, called Watkinson's Point," &c.

This grant, as well as that of Virginia, Pennsylvania and Connecticut, was so carelessly defined, as to involve the parties in long and obstinate disputes, which cost them much time and expense to settle. Lord Baltimore (some say King Charles) gave to the province the name of Maryland, in honor of the Queen, (Henrietta Maria.)

In 1633, Lord Baltimore appointed his brother, Leonard Calvert, as Governor of the province; and in 1634, he commenced a settlement upon the north side of the Potomac and near to its mouth, with about two hundred settlers, mostly Roman Catholics.

Lord Baltimore laid the foundations of his province in the security of property, and liberty in religion; granting in absolute fee, fifty acres of land to every actual settler, and establishing christianity agreeable to the old common law, without allowing pre-eminence to any sect.

These measures of his choice, soon converted a dreary wilderness into a prosperous colony. More than £40,-

000 were expended by his Lordship in the two first years, in transporting settlers, and their necessary stores, &c. The people, to remunerate this expense, granted to his Lordship a subsidy of two-fifteenths of tobacco, upon every poll.

Such was the pacific disposition of the Indians, that the first settlers lived for some time amongst them under the domestic regimen of a family. The Indian women taught the emigrants how to make bread of their corn; their men taught the English how to hunt and fish, and when they assisted in the chase, sold them the game they took for themselves, for a trifle; all which furnished them an easy support, until they could clear the ground and cultivate for themselves.

Such was the fertility of the soil, the mildness of the climate, and the free toleration of the government, that emigrants flocked to the province from Europe, and settlements began to multiply.

In 1635, the freemen all met in General Assembly; but no other record remains of their doings, than an act passed, "that all offenders in all murders and felonies, shall suffer the same pains and forfeitures, as for the same crimes in England."

In 1638, the Governor called a new Assembly, and presented for their acceptance, a body of laws, sent over by Lord Baltimore; but the Assembly rejected these, and prepared a collection of regulations, better adapted to their circumstances.

At this time Claiborne, who had settled on Kent Island, refused obedience to the laws of Maryland, and set up his claims, and appealed to the crown. This was rejected by the Lords Commissioners, who established the claims and jurisdiction of Lord Baltimore.

In 1639, a third Assembly was convened by the Governor, and an act was passed, "*for establishing the House of Assembly.*" This act declared that all who should be elected pursuant to writs issued, should be called Burgesses. That the gentlemen summoned by special writ of the proprietary, together with the Governor and Secretary, should be called the House of Assembly. All acts to be of the same force as if the whole body of freemen had been present.

By an act of this Assembly, the *people* are distinguish-

ed from the *slaves*, which serves to shew that slavery commenced almost with their origin.

In 1640, an effort was made by Virginia, to extend her dominion over the province of Maryland, and subvert her charter; but their efforts failed: and thus, what commenced in injustice, ended in disgrace.

The people of Maryland, were peculiarly happy under the government of Lord Baltimore. They both understood and pursued their own best interest; and while they cherished a just regard for the prerogatives of the proprietary, they never lost sight of their own rights as freemen.

The intrigues of Claiborne, together with the imprudence of the settlers, involved the province in an Indian war, in 1642 which raged for several years; but the savages were humbled, and peace was restored.

Immediately upon the restoration of peace, Claiborne united with Richard Ingolds, and aided by the turbulent spirit of the times, raised a rebellion in this province.—Calvert the Governor, fled into Virginia, and Claiborne seized on the government.—1645. In August following, the rebellion was quelled, and tranquillity restored.

In 1649, an act of free religious toleration, was passed by the Assembly, which was confirmed in 1676, amongst the perpetual laws of the province.

A new religious drama was now opened upon the great theatre of the American colonies. Virginia passed several laws against the Puritans. In Massachusetts, the Puritans were persecuting the Episcopalians, Baptists, Quakers, &c. but the Catholics in Maryland, to their eternal honor, were tolerating and protecting all.

In that memorable year, 1650, that constitution was finally established, which continued, with very little interruption, down to the year 1776, when the constitution she now enjoys, was adopted. In forming this constitution, those who were called by special writs, formed the upper House, and those chosen by hundreds, the lower House; and all bills that passed both Houses, with the Governor's signature, became the laws of the province.

From this epoch, the democratic part of the Assembly, (consisting of fourteen delegates) must date the origin of its particular immunities, or exclusive privileges.

The province at this time, was divided into three counties, viz. St. Mary's, the Isle of Kent and Ann-

**Arundale.** These counties were sub-divided into hundreds.

In 1651, the ruling power in England, (the Commonwealth) appointed Commissioners "for the reducing and governing the provinces within the Chesepak Bay," which trust they exercised with great attention and dexterity; although the proprietor of Maryland, had submitted to the Parliament, and obtained leave to govern in the name of the "keepers of the liberties of England."

In 1654, Oliver Cromwell seized on the government of Maryland, which excited a strife between the Puritans and Catholics, that issued in a civil war: a decisive battle was fought; the Catholics were vanquished; the Governor was taken, and by a Court-Martial, sentenced to die; but the Puritans interposed, and his sentence was changed to a long confinement.

This year, Claiborne again attempted to assume the reins of government, under the authority of "the Lord High Protector of England;" and with his Commissioners, called an Assembly; but the Burgesses of St. Mary's county, declined his government, as being incompatible with their oaths to Lord Baltimore, and refused to attend. This Assembly acknowledged the government of Cromwell; and passed an act declaring all Papists, outlaws in the province. The contrast between this and the act of Assembly in 1649, reflects great honor on the Catholics of that day, for their liberality in matters of religion.

In March 1655, the Commissioners resigned their trust to Josiah Fendal, Esq. as Governor on the part of the proprietary.

In 1659, he called an Assembly which abolished the Senate or upper House, and rendered the lower House absolute in the government; and the Governor was appointed by the ruling party.

Upon the restoration of King Charles II. in 1660, a change was again effected in the government. The proprietary appointed Philip Calvert, Governor of Maryland, and in December, he entered upon the administration.

These political changes produced no sensible effects upon the prosperity of the province. Her wealth and population, like that of Pennsylvania, had so rapidly progressed, that she could number more than 12,000 inhabitants, including slaves.



In 1662, the proprietary appointed his eldest son, Charles Calvert, to the government; he followed the maxims of his father, and ruled in wisdom. This year the peace of the province was disturbed by the *Lanadoah* Indians; but the war was short, and successfully terminated.

In 1676, Cecilius Calvert, the father of Maryland, died, in the 44th year of his government. At this time, the province was divided into ten counties, containing more than 16,000 souls. Maryland then contained neither parishes nor churches, and no provision had been made by law, for the support of the gospel. There were only three Episcopal clergymen in Maryland.

Charles Calvert, the then Governor, became the proprietary, and under this authority, he convened an Assembly, which gave to Maryland a new code of wise and salutary laws.

In 1689, a revolution was completely effected in Maryland, by the Protestants, under the mask of a Popish plot, in connection with the Indians, to massacre all the Protestants, and assume the reins of government. The revolutionists placed one John Ceele in the chair of the province; and King W. Hiam sanctioned the measure, by orders to those who had assumed the power, to exercise it in his name, until further orders. Thus the government of the province remained under the control of the crown, about 27 years.

In 1692, Maryland was divided into thirty-six parishes, and the Bishop of London appointed Thomas Bay, D. D. as his commissary to superintend the Protestant cause in this province. Thus the protestant religion was established by law.

In 1694, the town of Severn was changed to that of Annapolis, and made a port of entry. In 1697, it became the seat of government, and thus continues to this time.

In the year 1716, the government was restored by King George I. to Charles, Lord Baltimore, the proprietor, and it continued in his family, down to the year 1776, when the freemen of the province, assumed the government; confiscated the property, although the then proprietary was a minor; and framed and adopted the present constitution.

In 1790, Maryland granted to the United States, that part of the District of Columbia, that lies east of the Potomac.

The remainder of the history of Maryland, will be carried forward with the United States, collectively.



## CHAPTER XIV.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF GEORGIA, FROM ITS ORIGIN, IN 1732, DOWN TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

A period of more than one century elapsed, from the settlement of Virginia, New-York and New-England, before any attempts were made to settle Georgia. In June, 1732, King George II. granted a charter to a Company in England, to settle that part of Georgia, that lies between the Rivers Savannah and Altamaha; and the colony bears his name.

The proprietors of this grant, had it in view to settle their lands by transporting such indigent people in England, as had become burthensome, and were disposed to become adventurers to the new world.

In the month of July of the same year, the proprietors met and appointed Lord Percival for their President; ordered a common seal, &c. The powers vested in the Company, by this charter, extended to the term of twenty years; and the government was vested in the crown.

In August following, a large sum of money was raised by subscription, amongst the higher orders in England, under the management of Sir William Heathcote, to provide for the necessities of the settlers, and support the views of the Company. Parliament also co-operated by a grant of ten thousand pounds, to carry forward the plan.

In November following, between one and two hundred labourers volunteered in the enterprise, and embarked from England in December, under the superintendence of James Oglethorpe. In January, 1733, they all arrived in Carolina, where they were kindly received and hospitably provided for.

The Carolinians supplied this colony with such live stock and tools as were necessary to commence their

settlement, together with such military escort, scout boats, &c. as were necessary to conduct them safe into Georgia.

Thus provided for, this little colony, with their illustrious chief, arrived safe in Georgia; explored the banks of the Savannah for a permanent residence; and on the 9th of February, erected the first house on that elevation where the town of Savannah now stands.

They next erected a small fort; embodied and organized the settlers into a regular militia for the defence and protection of the colony, and commenced their labours. They next entered into friendly negotiations with the neighboring Indians, particularly the Creeks, who were the most numerous, and concluded treaties of safety.

This colony was considered as a frontier settlement, between the Indians on the one side, and the Spaniards on the other; they were therefore all armed and equipped at the expense of the Company; and the settlers were accordingly bound to do military duty, and hold themselves in readiness for the public defence. The government was so far feudal, that the trustees granted them lands upon a male entailment, and upon a failure in the male line, the lands were to revert back to the trustees; reserving the right and power of providing for the female heirs, upon such estates in reversion, as the several improvements, as well as their necessities would justify. Reserving to the widows, the dwelling house, with one half of the lands, during life.

All lands suffered to lie waste for eighteen years, together with all lands forfeited by high treason, felonies, &c. were to revert back to the trustees. All trade with the Indians, to be subject to the regulations of the trustees, and all negroes and *run*, were prohibited the colony.

Such a plan for settling a colony in America soon proved as abortive as the constitution of Mr. Locke for Carolina; the settlers fled the province, in quest of lands free from entail, and which were easy to be obtained.

In 1734, the trustees collected together from the gleanings of cities, about 600 adventurers, whom they transported into Georgia; but these proved a nuisance to the colony, by their idle and dissolute habits. The colony continued to languish, although Parliament had augmented their grants to the amount of £36,600, to carry forward the benevolent design.

The trustees opened a new plan for conducting their settlements. They laid off eleven townships, upon the Altamaha, Savannah, Santee, Pedee, &c. consisting of 20,000 acres each, surveyed into fifty acre lots. They next offered one fifty acre lot to every actual settler.

When the trustees published these terms in Scotland, one hundred and thirty Highlanders volunteered at once, and were transported into Georgia, where they built the town of Inverness, upon the Altamaha. At the same time a company from Germany, consisting of about one hundred and seventy, embarked for Georgia, and settled a German colony.

In 1736, General Oglethorpe, who had retired to England to promote the good of the province, sailed for Georgia with three hundred planters, and settled Frederica; which augmented the number of settlers to fourteen hundred. All which gave high hopes to the trustees; but their hopes were premature: the idleness and dissipation of the first settlers, added to their wars with the Indians, blasted their hopes, and kept the colony in a state of wretchedness.

At the commencement of the Spanish war, Governor Oglethorpe was appointed Commander-in-Chief of all his Majesty's forces in Georgia and South-Carolina.—1738. The first object of the General, was to secure the friendship of the Creeks, to defeat the intrigues of the Spaniards. This being accomplished, he next concerted measures with Governor Bull of South-Carolina, for the conquest of East Florida.

General Oglethorpe, at the head of 400 men, from Virginia, Carolina and Georgia, with a body of friendly Indians, entered Florida, and took Fort Diego, within twenty miles of St. Augustine. Soon after, he was joined by the other colonial troops and Indians, to the number of about 2000, and marched to St. Augustine, without opposition, and invested the castle. The General pushed the siege for several days with vigour; but the garrison was reinforced; his troops became sickly, and began to desert; the hurricane season was at hand, and the General abandoned the enterprise, and returned to Georgia.

In 1742, the Spaniards attempted to return the compliment to the General. A Spanish force of 2000 men, under the command of Don Antonio Ridondo, from the

Havanna, touched at St. Augustine, and took in a reinforcement of one thousand men, and from thence sailed to Georgia; entered the Altamaha, and proceeded up the River, and erected a battery of twenty 18 pounders.—General Oglethorpe retired at their approach, and retreated to Frederica, with only seven hundred men.

The Spanish commander detached several parties in pursuit of General Oglethorpe, but these were defeated with very considerable loss, and the enterprise failed.

At this time, General Oglethorpe learned that the dissensions in the Spanish army, obliged them to keep two encampments, and he attempted to surprise one of them in the night; but his plan was discovered by a deserter, and he was obliged again to retreat to Frederica.

The General hit upon an expedient to revenge on the deserter for his treachery. He addressed to him a letter by a Spanish captive, as though he was a spy in the Spanish camp, and directed him to inform the Spanish General, that if he marched directly to Frederica, he might surprise the English, in their defenceless situation; but if he delayed three days, the English would then be reinforced by six British ships of war, and 2000 men.

This stratagem succeeded; the letter was delivered to the Spanish General; the deserter was put in irons; the Spanish General, undetermined how to act, delayed his movements until the third day, when a reinforcement which had sailed from South Carolina, for the relief of General Oglethorpe, appeared in view. The Spanish General took the alarm; demolished his Fort; spiked his heavy cannon; abandoned his provisions and military stores; embarked his troops, and returned to Florida.

Georgia was thus relieved; and General Oglethorpe was hailed as the deliverer of his country; but the Spanish General, on his return to Havanna, was thrown into prison for his dastardly conduct.

At this time the supplies of money voted by Parliament, for the settlement of Georgia, amounted to one hundred and twelve thousand pounds; but with all this patronage, the restrictions, forfeitures and hardships, endured by the settlers, embarrassed the colony, and the settlements languished.

Tired of these fruitless efforts, the trustees abandoned the enterprise; resigned up their trust to the crown, and

Georgia became a royal government in 1752; just twenty years after the first settlement in the country.

King George established a regular colonial government in Georgia, after the plan of the other royal governments: and appointed John Reynolds for their first Governor, under the crown. At this time, the whole exports of the province, did not exceed ten thousand pounds sterling, per annum.

In 1755, the first General Court was established in Georgia; but the progress of agricultural improvements had been so slow, that then exports at the close of the old French war, did not exceed twenty-seven thousand pounds, per annum.

Soon after the peace of 1763, a spirit of enterprise began to prevail, under the administration of Governor Wright; their low lands and swamps began to be cleared and cultivated; and the colony enjoyed such prosperity, that in 1773, their annual exports amounted to about one hundred and twenty thousand pounds sterling.

In 1763 King George III. annexed to Georgia, all the lands lying between the River Altamaha and St. Mary.

In 1785, Georgia adopted her first free constitution, and the legislature incorporated the University of Georgia. In 1798, Georgia amended and adopted the present constitution.

The remainder of the history of Georgia, will be carried forward collectively, with the United States.

## PART III.

### CHAPTER I.

#### CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

By the peace of 1763, Great Britain had triumphed over her enemies in the East and in the West, and become mistress of the seas, and arbiter of the world.—The colonies had triumphed over the French in Canada, and the savages of the wilderness, and laid the foundation of a lasting Indian peace; but new troubles awaited her, more serious in their effects and consequences, than any she had yet endured, and from a quarter wholly un- contemplated.

Great Britain, jealous of the rising strength of the colonies, resolved to make an effort to check and control it. At this time, her Navigation Act, so called, of 1651, was in full force in America; by which she engrossed all the trade of the colonies, and from which she derived such a revenue as ought to have shewn her where her true interest lay, and made her contented.

This degree of wisdom, she did not possess; but her avarice, combined with her jealousy and lust of dominion, led her to check this free trade, by a system of duties on commerce, under the authority of the following act of 1764: “Whereas it is just and necessary, that a revenue be raised in America, to defray the expenses of defending, securing and protecting the same, &c. We, the Commons, &c. towards raising the same, do give and grant unto your Majesty, towards raising the sum of ———, to be levied upon the following articles, therein specified, viz. upon all foreign clayed sugars, indigo, coffee, and all foreign produce, upon all wines, except French, upon all wrought silks, and all calicoes, muscades and sirups, being the produce of a colony not under the dominion of Great Britain.” All which duties were to be paid into his Majesty’s exchequer.

This act enforced the collection of these duties in the Courts of Admiralty, and ordered all duties to be paid in specie; both which aimed a mortal blow at the liberty and prosperity of America.

Well might the colonies take the alarm at such a bold

stretch of power, and well might they sound the alarm through the country. The sagacious politicians of America, saw a cloud arising under this act, that threatened to destroy their just rights and dearest interests forever.

It had been a maxim interwoven in the fundamental principles of the colonial governments, "that taxation and representation, were, and ought to be, inseparable." Impressed with the importance of this truth, the colonies demanded, by the way of petition to the crown, that the taxes might be removed, and the colonies left free to tax themselves, or be admitted to an equal representation in the government.

Deaf to the remonstrances of the colonies, the taxes were continued by the Ministry, and rigidly enforced by the naval commanders, stationed upon the American coast. This led the colonies to appoint committees of correspondence, to call up the attention of the people and promote a general union of sentiment and action.

Instead of listening to the prayers and remonstrances of the colonies, and removing the taxes, the Ministry added the duty on stamps, termed the stamp act, which passed in March, 1765.

When this bill had passed, Doctor Franklin, then in London, wrote Mr. Charles Thompson,\* at Philadelphia, and thus expressed himself: "The sun of liberty is set, you must light up the candles of industry and economy." To which Mr. Thompson replied, "I fear other lights may become necessary."

To guard against colonial opposition to this system of taxation, as well as to keep the peace in America, it was contemplated by the Ministry, that the revenue on stamps would support an armed force. Lord Grenville introduced another bill, authorising military officers in America, to quarter their troops upon the people, in private houses. This bill, corrupt as it was, passed in part, and compelled the legislatures of the several colonies to provide by law, for the support of the troops.

Thus the system of despotism was unfolded at one view, and the colonies saw nothing before them, but resistance or slavery; even the slavery of Ireland, at the point of the bayonet.

Those sons of the Pilgrims, whose sires had subdued

---

\*Afterwards Secretary to Congress.



the forest, the savage and the French, to plant the church in the wilderness, lost not a moment in their choice ; but rallied round the standard of liberty, and stood forth the champions of their country's rights.

The patriots of Virginia, George Johnston and Patrick Henry, kindled the spark of liberty, which burst forth in a mighty blaze, and illuminated the country with the *spirited resolves* in May. These were reciprocated through the colonies, and led to the convention of a General Congress at New-York, in October. This, like the Grand Assembly at Albany, in 1754, gave union, strength and spirit to the colonies. Tumults commenced in Boston, and spread through the country. Acts of non-importation were passed, that lessened the imports from Britain, this year, £880,811.

At this time, the free white population of the colonies, was estimated at 926,000 ; extending on the sea coast, from Georgia to Maine ; yet their manly resistance, supported by the influence of the great William Pitt, compelled the British Ministry to repeal the stamp act ; and in March, 1766. his Majesty went to the House of Peers and gave his royal sanction to the act of repeal.

Great was the joy in London ; the city was illuminated ; the ships displayed their colors, and all was a scene of rejoicing. The joyful tidings flew like lightning, to the shores of America, and the colonies were filled with transports of joy. The bold declaration of the great Commoner, Pitt, "*You have no right to tax America ; I am glad she has resisted.*" became the topic of the day, and he the idol of the people.

The clause in this act of repeal, styled *the declaratory act*, was, if possible, more hostile to the peace and interest of the colonies, than the stamp act itself. This pernicious clause, "*Parliament has, and of right ought to have, power to bind the colonies in all cases whatsoever,*" severed the nation, and established the independence of the colonies.

America felt the elevated ground on which she stood, from the high acquisition she had gained, the saving clause in the act of repeal, and ascribed the victory to the impression she had made on commerce ; hence she concluded that she might always wield that weapon with success, should she ever have another occasion.

Great Britain at the same time, felt her honor, as well as her interest wounded, and lost not a moment in seeking redress.

In 1767, Charles Townsend, Chancellor of the Exchequer, called up the attention of Parliament to the *declaratory act*, and pledged his honor that the same might be enforced. To accomplish this, he introduced a bill into Parliament, for granting certain duties to his Majesty, on glass, paper, painter's colours and tea, imported into America; which was passed into a law.

This bill opened the wound of the stamp act afresh, and roused the same excitement in America, that the bill of ship money had done in England, the last century, and raised the same opposition. This bill contained a sweeping clause, which empowered the King to establish a civillist in the colonies, upon which he might levy taxes at pleasure, to an indefinite amount. An act was also passed, for establishing a board of Commissioners at Boston, to superintend the customs and manage the revenue. An act also provided, that British troops should be supported at the expense of the colonies in America.

Alarmed at such daring innovations; impressed with a just sense of their true situation, and alive to their best rights and dearest interests, the colonies again roused to the contest, and opened their whole battery of resolves, petitions, addresses and remonstrances, with which they had withstood the stamp act; together with their general associations of non-importation.

This commanding attitude of the colonies, alarmed Lord Hillsborough, Secretary of State, for American affairs, and he wrote to all the crown Governors in the colonies, to exert their influence to suppress these combinations. This opened the war between the Governors and the people; and the scenes of the stamp act, were extensively renewed.

On the 27th of May, a bill passed in Parliament, "for restraining the Assembly of New-York from passing any act, until they had complied with the act of Parliament, for furnishing his Majesty's troops with the necessaries required by the act." This act was signed by the King, the 2d of July following.

This act unfolded the whole system of arbitrary power, which the Ministers had assumed, and called forth

from the House of Burgesses in Virginia, the following remark: "If Parliament can compel the colonies to furnish a single article to the troops sent over, they may by the same rule, oblige them to furnish clothes, arms, and every other necessary, even to the pay of the officers and soldiers; a doctrine replete with every mischief, and utterly subversive of every thing dear and valuable."

This act of Parliament, took effect in New-York, and the powers of their Assembly, were suspended one whole year, which brought them to terms. They complied with the act, and their functions were restored; but when they attempted to co-operate with the other colonies, by their resolves to support the grand system of opposition; the Governor dissolved them.

At the June session of the Massachusetts Assembly, in 1768, Governor Bernard, by order of the Minister, demanded that they should rescind a particular act of a former Assembly; to which Mr. Otis replied, "When Lord Hillsborough knows that we will not repeal our acts, he should apply to Parliament to rescind theirs.— *Let Britain rescind her measures, or she is lost forever.*"

The public mind was now ripe for an explosion, and an incident occurred that lit up the fire.

On the 10th of June, the officers of the customs, seized a sloop belonging to John Hancock, Esq. while in the act of discharging a cargo of wine. Resistance was made, but without effect. The people rose in a tumultuous manner, to the number of one or two thousand; beat and wounded the officers of the customs; demolished their houses, and renewed the scenes of the stamp act so fully, that the Commissioners of the customs fled to the castle, under the protection of the Governor, until the storm was over.

Lord Hillsborough had anticipated these scenes in Boston, and written on the 8th of June, to General Gage and Admiral Hood, at Halifax, to send a military force from that station to Boston, to protect the Commissioners of the revenue. On the 11th of August, General Gage communicated this order to the Governor of Massachusetts, and informed him that he had sent over one regiment, with a small naval force to protect the harbor of Boston. On the first of October, the fleet entered the port of Boston, and proceeded to land the troops, under cover of their guns, without opposition; and they

were quartered in Faneuil Hall and the Town House, until other accommodations could be provided.

In February, 1769, the House of Lords passed sundry bills, highly indicative of the resentment they felt towards the proceedings of Massachusetts, with which the House of Commons concurred, and both Houses united in an address to his Majesty, applauding the firmness of his measures, and assuring him of their support.

They also besought his Majesty "to direct the Governor of Massachusetts to procure the fullest information, touching all treasons and misprisions of treason, committed within the colony, since the 30th of December, 1767, and to transmit the same, together with the names of the persons who were the most active in such offences, to one of the Secretaries of State, in order that his Majesty might issue a special commission for inquiring of, hearing and determining the said offences, within the realm of Great Britain: pursuant to the statute of the 35th of Henry VIII."

The indignation which this address excited in America, can never again be either felt or expressed. The following resolution of the House of Burgesses, in Virginia, may serve to shew the sense, as well as the firmness of the colonies at large, viz:

"Resolved, That this House has the exclusive right to tax their constituents; as well as their just right to petition their sovereign for the redress of grievances, and also to procure the concurrence of the other colonies, in praying for the interposition of his Majesty, in favor of the violated rights of America. And that all trials for treasons or misprisions, or any other crimes whatsoever, committed in the colony, ought to be tried before the courts of his Majesty in that colony; and that the seizing of any person residing in that colony, suspected of any crime whatsoever, committed therein, and sending such person to places beyond sea, to be tried, was highly derogatory to the rights of British subjects." The next day, Lord Botetourt, the Governor, dissolved the Assembly.

The same resolutions were passed in Carolina, and the same effects followed, from Governor Tryon.

In 1768, the non-importation associations had become general throughout the colonies, under the motto of "*United we conquer; divided we die.*"

In Massachusetts, the fire raged with increased violence. Here were the foreign troops, and here was the *forces of the revolution*.

The Massachusetts House of Assembly, by the firmness of their resolves, extorted the following acknowledgment from the Governor :

"Gentlemen, I have no authority over his Majesty's ships in this port, or his troops in this town," which led them to pass the following resolve: "that we can proceed no farther with business. while surrounded with an armed force."\* The Governor adjourned the General Court, to hold their sittings at Cambridge.

The Governor next requested the House to make provision for the expenses of the troops; which they, by their resolves, absolutely refused.

The whole colonies had now become sensibly alive to the oppressions they felt; their resolves reached Britain, which caused an attempt in the House of Commons, to repeal the obnoxious duties, supported by the clamor of the citizens of London; but all without effect. Lord North appeared at the head of the opposition, and thus expressed the sense of Parliament: "However prudence or policy may hereafter induce us to repeal the late paper and glass act, *I hope we shall never think of it, until we have brought America to our feet.*"

Lord Hillsborough, at the close of this session of Parliament, attempted to sooth the irritability of the colonies, and soften down their feelings, as well as their measures, by the following circular, which he addressed to the Governors of all the colonies.—May 13, 1769.

"It is the intention of his Majesty's Ministers, to move in the next Parliament, that the duties on glass, paper and colours, be removed, as having been laid contrary to the true principles of commerce:" with assurances at the same time "that a design to propose to Parliament any further taxes on America, for the purpose of raising a revenue, has at no time been entertained."

This was plausible, but it took no effect. The duty of three pence per pound, remaining on tea, shewed to the

---

\*A park of Artillery was planted in front of the State-House, with muzzles pointed directly towards that seat of justice and the laws.

colonies, that enough of taxes was retained, to establish the principle in the *declaratory act*, "*that Great Britain claims the right of binding the colonies in all things whatsoever.*" This to them, amounted to the same as if the whole taxes had been retained; because the principle was the same, and this was the real point in question.

Governor Bernard was recalled by his Majesty, in June. and in August, he embarked for England, leaving Lieutenant-Governor Hutchinson in the chair of Massachusetts.



## CHAPTER II.

### CAUSES THAT LED TO THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

Collisions from time, between the troops and citizens of Boston, had been frequent, and the public peace had often been disturbed; these collisions had engendered strife and bitterness between the parties, and violence often ensued.

On the 2d of March, 1770, a squabble took place between a parcel of soldiers and rope-makers, which became serious, and led to the collection of a mob at evening. At 9 o'clock, the populace were assembled at the ringing of the bells, and commenced an attack upon the main guard, accompanied with the cry of "kill the soldiers, kill the soldiers."

The officer of the guard, resented this outrage, and ordered the men to fire on the populace, which was obeyed in part; three were instantly killed; five were dangerously, and several slightly wounded.—March 5, 1770.

The shock was inexpressibly great; the town was instantly alarmed; they beat to arms, with the general cry of "turn out with your guns." The citizens immediately assembled, to the number of several thousand, both with and without arms. At the same time, the Lieutenant-Governor called on the officer of the guard, (Captain Preston) and demanded the reason why he fired upon the people without orders? To which he replied, "we were insulted." The Lieutenant-Governor instantly passed on to meet the council, and on his way, attempted to appease the populace.

On the morning of the 6th, the Lieutenant-Governor assembled his council, and by permission, Lieutenant-Colonels Dalrymple and Carr, appeared in the council. The people at the same time, assembled in town-meeting, in a vast concourse and in great rage, where they passed the following resolve, and sent it by a special committee, to the Governor: "It is the unanimous voice of this meeting, that nothing can prevent blood and carnage, and restore the peace of the town, but the immediate removal of the troops." The Lieutenant-Colonel Commandant returned for answer, "that he readily consented that the offending (29th) regiment, should be removed." At the receipt of this report, (3 o'clock, P. M.) the town-meeting had increased to about three thousand. They returned another resolve, "that the whole of the troops must be removed." To which the venerable Samuel Adams, who bore the message to the Governor, added, "If you can remove the 29th. you can remove the 14th, and it is at your peril, if you do not."

The Lieutenant-Governor appealed to the council for advice, and whilst the question thus balanced, Mr. Secretary Oliver, frankly told the Governor, "you must either comply with the demands of the people, or prepare to leave the province."

Captain Preston and his guard were taken into custody the next day, and committed to prison for trial.

On the 8th of March, one of the wounded men died, and the funerals of the slain, was attended by an unusual concourse of the citizens of Boston and the neighboring towns; under the solemnity of the largest and most interesting procession that was ever witnessed in Boston. The mournful peal of all the bells in Boston, Charlestown and Roxbury, tolled their solemn knell; which gave an inexpressible gloom to the scene.

The troops were all removed down to the Castle, and general tranquillity was so far restored as to admit the trial of Captain Preston, to commence on the 24th, in due form. *The crime for which he stood indicted, was murder.*

The counsel for the prisoner, were John Adams and Josiah Quincy, Esq's. These distinguished sons of liberty: warm as had been their emotions and expressions in the cause of their injured country, became cool and disinterested in the court of justice; and displayed the

magnanimity of their characters, in the defence of their client. On the 30th, a virtuous, independent jury, regardless of the emotions of their own breasts, or the rage of popular opinion, returned a verdict of NOT GUILTY.

The trial of the eight soldiers of the guard, who actually fired on the people, commenced the next day, upon the same indictment. They were defended by the same counsel; and after a trial of five days, were in the same manner acquitted.

It was remarked of Mr. Adams, that his arguments to shew under what a variety of circumstances murder was actually reduced to man slaughter, were so luminous, that they induced the popular leaders to change their ground, and turn their attention to the militia, as the best defence of liberty.

On the 26th of September, the Governor informed the House that the troops were to be withdrawn from the castle, and their place was to be supplied with such other regular troops as his Majesty should be pleased to appoint to that station, and be subject to the command of General Gage.

Struck with alarm at this intelligence, the Assembly saw before them the awful crisis. They passed a resolve "appointing Wednesday, the 3d of October next, to be observed by both Houses, as a day of prayer, to seek the Lord for his direction and blessing." This was sent up to the council, and approved unanimously. The Assembly were at this time in session at Cambridge, by order of the Governor.

In January, 1771, a recent grant of £2000, by the Assembly of New-York, for the support of British troops, raised violent commotions in that city. Anonymous publications were circulated, to inflame the passions of the people; calling upon them to assemble in the fields. About 1400 obeyed the summons, and repaired to the fields, where they expressed by a resolve, their disapprobation of the acts of the Legislature, granting money for the support of British troops; appointed a committee to communicate their doings to the Assembly, and quietly dispersed.

In the years 1771 and '2, general arrangements were made throughout the colonies, by corresponding committees, specially appointed, to ascertain the strength of the sons of liberty, in every town. The public mind



was at the same time, excited by a succession of the most spirited publications, on the side of liberty and the rights of the country.

At this time, the citizens of Providence, burnt and destroyed the *Gaspee Schooner*, a noted vexatious revenue cutter in that river, which served to give impulse to the public feeling.

Town meetings continued to multiply, and their resolves were transmitted to the General Committee in Boston. A general summary of the whole, may be seen in the following :

Resolved, "That it is the first and highest social duty of this people, to consider of, and seek ways and means for a speedy redress of these mighty grievances and intolerable wrongs; and that for the obtaining of this end, this people are warranted by the laws of God and nature, in the use of every rightful act and energy of policy, stratagem or force."

In 1773, a traitorous and perfidious correspondence of Governor Hutchinson, Judge Oliver, and five others, with the British Ministry, was detected and sent to America, by Doctor Franklin, (then in London) where it circulated through the country, in the public prints, and gave high impulse to the public mind. The Assembly of Massachusetts immediately forwarded a petition to his Majesty, praying for the speedy removal of the Governor and Lieutenant-Governor.

When the news of the destruction of the *Gaspee Schooner*, arrived in England, the Ministry obtained an act of Parliament, under the following title, viz. "An act for the better securing his Majesty's dock-yards, magazines, ships, ammunition, stores, &c." by which the penalty of death was denounced against all who should destroy, or aid and assist in destroying any of the articles named in this act; and also subjected the offenders to a trial in any shire or county in England.

Armed with these powers, Parliament next proceeded to pass another act, authorising the East India Company to export their teas, free from duty, into any part of the world.\* This would give tea to the American colonies,

---

\*The East India Company had on hand at that time, about seventeen million pounds of tea.

with the duty to government of three pence per pound, cheaper than the then current price.

The Company were aware of the evils that might ensue, and offered to government a duty of sixpence, on all teas exported, if they would withdraw the colonial duty of three pence; but this was rejected, and the East India Company shipped 600 chests, to Philadelphia, 600 to New-York and Boston, each, and a general distribution in like proportion, to the other colonies.

These measures were rightly appreciated in America, and combinations were immediately formed, by the merchants throughout the colonies, to resist the measures and oppose both the landing and sales of the tea; denouncing as tories and traitors, all who either aided or assisted in thus violating the liberties of their country.

The consignees of the tea, generally, resigned their trusts, to avoid the rage of the populace; and the tea was either sent back or stored by all the cities to which it was shipped, except Boston. The consignees of Boston, had refused to resign. A town meeting was called; the tea ships were seized and secured by a strong guard; the citizens of the neighboring towns, repaired to Boston, to witness the scene that was passing in town meeting; then held under that liberty tree, which had been so conspicuous in the riots of the stamp act.

Alarmed for their safety, the consignees then requested permission of the Governor, to resign, but he refused. The die was now cast; the town meetings were adjourned from day to day, until the impatience of the populace could no longer be restrained. The Captain of one of the tea ships, applied to the Governor for a pass for his vessel, that he might return to England, which the Governor refused.

The sound of the war whoop, burst from the front gallery of Old South, (where this meeting was held) and the meeting was dissolved; but the Mohawks rushed out and ran down to the wharf; entered the tea ships, and threw into the dock, more than three hundred chests of tea; dispersed and retired quietly to their homes.

This act of destroying the tea, was a full declaration of what was afterwards expressed, "that they had taken a decided stand, and were resolved to resist all acts of oppression, in blood up to their knees."

Notwithstanding the warmth of feeling so openly ex-

pressed by all public bodies, at this eventful day, and notwithstanding the firm and energetic measures which had been, and continued to be pursued, in resisting the aggressions of Britain; the great body of the people were anxious for a reconciliation with the mother country, and hoping that the repeal of the duty on tea, would restore the same harmony, as the repeal of the stamp act had done before. But the leading few saw that this was now impossible; and at the head of these, stood Samuel Adams, who not only felt, but often declared in the circles of his friends, "the country shall be independent, and we will not be content with any thing short of it."

Early in March following, his Majesty announced to Parliament, the proceedings of the town of Boston, which so highly incensed that body, that they passed the famous *Boston Port Bill*, (so called) laying a commercial interdiction upon that town.—1774.

From this eventful moment, the movements of the parties, both in England and America, progressed in regular succession, to meet the awful crisis before them.



### CHAPTER III.

#### CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION, CONTINUED. BATTLE OF LEXINGTON.

On the 5th of September, 1774, a delegation of all the colonies, excepting North Carolina, assembled at Philadelphia, agreeable to their appointment, and chose Peyton Randolph, Esq. of Virginia, for their President, and Charles Thompson, Esq. of Pennsylvania, for their Secretary. This Congress, by their first resolve, placed all the colonies upon an equality, by declaring "that in determining all questions, each colony shall have one vote."

The delegation from North Carolina, soon after appeared and took their seats, which rendered the amount of the whole number, fifty-two, besides the President.—Thus organized, Congress passed numerous resolves in vindication of the cause of their suffering country, and in support of the measures that had been pursued in her

defence, particularly for the support of the town of Boston, &c.

Congress next entered into a general bond of union, which consisted of fourteen articles, for themselves and their constituents, "to be and remain in force, until the obnoxious acts or parts of acts, relating to these colonies, shall be repealed;" signed by all the members, October, 1774.

Congress next resolved, that an address be prepared and sent to the inhabitants of Great Britain.

They next resolved, that a petition be presented to his Majesty.

Congress next resolved, that letters be addressed to the inhabitants of Canada, Nova Scotia, St. Johns and Georgia, inviting them to mutual aid in the common cause of British America.\*

These were all dignified and masterly productions; did honor to the illustrious statesmen of the day, and were of great utility in carrying forward and supporting the common cause of the colonies, both in Europe and America.

Congress at the same time, published a manifesto, unfolding to the world, the causes of the contest and the resolutions of the colonies. They next called up their attention to their armed vessels, and the defence of their sea-ports. They then proceeded to establish a General Post-Office: and appointed Benjamin Franklin, Post-Master General. They also established a Hospital for 20,000 men. These general outlines being settled, all parties prepared for action.

Congress further resolved, "that another Congress should be called on the 10th of May next, unless the obnoxious acts should be repealed;" and on the 26th of October, they dissolved their sittings.

The wisdom, firmness, dignity and patriotic spirit of this Congress, will shed a lustre on the American character to the latest generation.

Pending this session of Congress, General Gage issued writs, and called an Assembly of Massachusetts, at Salem. Ninety members met, and the General countermanded his writs; but the members convened, resolved

---

\*Messrs. Lee, Cushing and Dickinson, were the Committee who prepared these addresses.

## CAUSES OF THE REVOLUTION.

themselves into a provincial Congress; chose John Hancock, Esq. President, and adjourned to Concord.

This Congress assumed the direction and government of the affairs of the province, and continued their sittings, by adjournment, from time to time, and place to place, as circumstances required.

Such was the power of habit, arising from a long and steady obedience to the laws, in a well regulated state of society, that Massachusetts was in all respects, as free from every degree of licentiousness, now all courts of law were suspended, and one great bustle of military preparation usurped the place of the laws, as she ever had been in times of the most profound peace.

The firmness of the town of Boston, under all her sufferings, shed a lustre upon herself, and a glory upon her country, which gained her the universal applause of that day, and which will be transmitted down to the latest generation.

The King met his new Parliament, on the 29th of November, with a high-toned speech, in which he announced the rebellious state of the colonies, particularly Massachusetts, and called on Parliament to maintain and defend the measures he had adopted to bring the colonies to obedience. Parliament met this speech by an overwhelming majority in favor of the King. Lord North disclosed the views of the Ministry, in the following declaration to Mr. Quincey:

"We must try what we can do to support the authority we have claimed over America; if we are defective in power, we must sit down contented, and make the best terms we can; no body can blame us after we have done our utmost; but until we have tried what we can do, we can never be satisfied in receding," &c.

But America had friends, as well as enemies, in England; friends who knew her strength, as well as worth; friends who wished to cultivate peace, both for the good of America, and the best interest of Britain. At the head of these friends, stood the great, the illustrious William Pitt, the Earl of Chatham.

Mr. Quincey, who attended in the House of Lords, on the 29th of December, when the Minister opened his budget upon the affairs of America, thus describes the great champion of her cause.

"Lord Chatham rose, like Marcellus, "*Viros superiorem meos*" he seemed to feel himself superior to those around him. His language, voice and gesture, were more pathetic than I ever saw or heard before, at the bar or in the Senate. He seemed like an old Roman Senator, rising with the dignity of age, yet speaking with the fire of youth." &c. He then proceeded:

"My Lords, these papers now laid for the first time, before your Lordships, have been five or six weeks in the pockets of the Minister, and notwithstanding the fate of this kingdom, hangs upon the event of this great controversy, we are but this moment called to a consideration of this important subject. My Lords, I do not want to look into one of those papers; I know their contents well enough already; I know there is not a Member in this House, but is acquainted with their contents also.—There ought, therefore, to be no delay in entering upon this matter; we ought to proceed immediately," &c.

"I move my Lords, that an humble address be presented to his Majesty, most humbly to advise and beseech his Majesty, that it may graciously please his Majesty to direct that orders be immediately despatched to General Gage, for removing the troops from the town of Boston, as soon as may be.

"The way, my Lords, must be immediately opened for a reconciliation. It will soon be too late. I know not who advises the present measures; I know not who advises to a perseverance and enforcement of them; but this I will say, that whosoever advises them, ought to answer for it at his peril. I know that no one will avow that he advises to these measures; every one shrinks from the charge. But somebody has advised his Majesty to these measures; and if his Majesty continues to hear such evil counsel, his Majesty is undone. His Majesty may indeed, continue to wear his crown, but the American jewel out of it, it will not be worth the wearing.

"What more shall I say, my Lords? I will not say the *kingdom is betrayed*; but this I will say, *the nation is ruined*. What foundation have we for our claims over America? What is our right to persist in such cruel and vindictive measures against that loyal, that respectable people? They say you have no right to tax them without their consent, and they say rightly. Representation and

taxation must go together; they are inseparable. Yet there is hardly a man in our streets—be he ever so poor, but thinks he must be legislator for America. *Our American subjects*, is a common phrase in the mouth of the lowest order of our citizens; but property, my Lords, is the sole and entire dominion of the owner. None can meddle with it; it is a unity; a mathematical point; it is an atom, untangible by any but the proprietor. Touch it and the owner loses his whole property. The touch contaminates the whole mass; the whole property vanishes." &c.

"In the last Parliament, all was anger, all was rage.—Administration did not consider what was practicable; but what was revenge. *Sine clade victoria*, was the language of the Ministry, the last session; but every body knew; an idiot might know, that such would not be the issue. For the ruin of the nation, was a matter of no concern, if Ministers might be revenged. Americans were abused, misrepresented and traduced, in the most outrageous manner, in order to give a colour, and urge on to the most precipitate, unjust, cruel and vindictive measures that ever disgraced a nation.

"Gnossius hæc Rhadamanthus habet durissima regna.

"Cartigatque, auditque dolos."

"My Lords, the very infernal spirits, they *chastise*, castigate; sed *audisque*. My Lords, the very spirits of the infernal regions, *hear before they punish*. But how have these respectable people behaved, under all their grievances? With unexampled patience, with unparalleled wisdom.

"They chose delegates by their suffrages; no *bribery*, no *corruption*, no *influence* here, my Lords. Their representatives met, with the sentiments and temper, and speak the sentiments of the whole continent. For genuine sagacity, for singular moderation, for solid wisdom, manly spirit, sublime sentiments, and simplicity of language; for every thing honourable and respectable, the Congress at Philadelphia, shone unrivalled.

"This wise people speak out. They do not hold the language of slaves; they tell you what they mean.—They do not ask you to repeal your laws, as a *favor*; they claim it as a *right*; they *demand* it. They tell you they will not submit to them; and I tell you the acts must be

repealed; they will be repealed; you cannot enforce them.

‘Repeal, therefore, my Lords. I say. But repeal will not satisfy this enlightened, this spirited people.—What! repeal a bit of paper! repeal a piece of parchment! that alone, my Lords, will not do. You must go through; you must declare you have no right to tax, then they may trust you; then they may have confidence in you.

“My Lords, there are three million of whigs. Three million of whigs, my Lords, with arms in their hands, are a formidable body. ’Twas the whigs, my Lords, that set his Majesty’s royal ancestors upon the throne of England. I hope, my Lords, there are yet double the number of whigs in England, there are in America. I hope the whigs of both countries will join and make a common cause. Ireland is with America, to a man: the whigs of that country will, and those of this ought to make the cause of America, their own.

“The cause of ship money, was the cause of the whigs of England. *You shall not take my money without my consent*, is the doctrine and cry of whigs. It is the doctrine, in support of which, I do not know how many names I *could*, I *may* call in this House, among the living. I cannot say how many I *could* join with me, and maintain those doctrines with their blood; but among the dead I could raise an host innumerable.

“My Lords, consistent with the preceding doctrines, and with what I ever have and shall continue to maintain, I say I shall oppose America, whenever I see her aiming at throwing off the *Navigatio* Act, and other regulatory acts of trade, made *bona fide*, for that purpose, and framed and calculated for a reciprocation of interest, and the general extended welfare and security of the whole empire. It is suggested that such is their design; I see no evidence of it. But to come to a certain knowledge of their designs upon this head, it would be proper, first to do them justice. Treat them as subjects, before you treat them as as aliens, rebels and traitors.

“My Lords, deeply impressed with the importance of taking some healing measures, at this most alarming, distracted state of your affairs, brought down with a cruel disease,\* I have crawled to this House, to give you

---

\*The gout.



my best experience and counsel; and my advice is to beseech his Majesty. &c. this is the best I can think of. It will convince America, that you mean to try her cause in the spirit, and by the laws of freedom and fair inquiry, and not by codes of blood. How can she now trust you, with the bayonet at her breast? She has all the reason in the world to believe you mean, either her death or her bondage." &c.

I regret that the limits of this work, will not permit me to insert the whole of this most masterly production. What I have inserted will shew most clearly, that the hearts of ministers were steeled against conviction; that their passions had surmounted their understandings, and that they were blinded by the grossest delusion.

The petition of the continental Congress, had been presented to the King, and was now referred to the House of Lords. This threw the House into a high fever.—They denied the legality of that body, (Congress); treated their petition with contempt, and rejected it without discussion, by a majority of 218 to 68.

On the 27th of February, Mr. Quincey returned to America. Thus balanced, the parties moved forward with a steady step, to the awful crisis before them; and the destinies of America, were suspended upon a thread, which the meanest ruffian was liable every moment to break: and drench the land in blood.

On the 18th of April, notice was given to Messrs. Samuel Adams and John Hancock, at Lexington, that General Gage was about to make a movement; and a number of provincial officers dined together at Cambridge, in order to watch the motions of the enemy, and give the alarm accordingly. About midnight, a detachment, consisting of about eighteen hundred grenadiers and infantry, (the flower of the British army) under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Major Pitcairn, embarked at the foot of the common, crossed over and landed at Phipps's farm, and commenced their march for Concord, in quest of the American stores.

On the 19th, the detachment arrived at Lexington, and caused an alarm in that town and vicinity.\* The

---

\* This alarm was given by ringing the bells, by signal guns, volleys, &c.

Captain of the Lexington company of militia, assembled his men upon the green, (say 136) at 2 o'clock in the morning. No further intelligence of the enemy, being received, the company was dismissed, after roll call, to assemble upon parade, at the beat of drum. About four in the morning, the approach of the enemy gave the alarm; the drums beat to arms, and those that were near assembled again upon parade, (about 70) amidst a concourse of spectators, who were drawn together by the alarm. When the company was forming, Major Pitcairn rode up at the head of his division, and with an imperious command, exclaimed "*Disperse you rebels, throw down your arms and disperse.*" Regardless of the order, the company continued to form. Major Pitcairn advanced to the charge: fired his pistol, flourished his sword, and ordered his men to fire. The order was obeyed, accompanied with a huzza; and the militia instantly dispersed. The fire was repeated, and the militia returned a scattering fire, as they fled and took shelter under cover of the adjacent stone walls; from whence they continued to fire. The enemy killed three upon the green, at their first fire, and five others behind the stone walls.

The detachment continued its march to Concord, to seize the American stores, which were the principle object of destination. The conflict at Lexington, had given the alarm at Concord; and the militia assembled and stood in their defence; but upon the approach of a strong regular force, they retired behind the River, and waited for aid from the neighboring towns.

Colonel Smith advanced with his whole force, and began the destruction of the military stores at Concord. Two 24 pounders were disabled and their carriages destroyed, besides the wheels of several others of a smaller size. Five hundred pounds of shot were thrown into the river and well, &c. and about 60 barrels of flour broken in pieces, and half destroyed.

At this time the militia were reinforced from the adjacent towns, and advanced upon the enemy, under the command of Major Buttrick: a conflict began at the bridge: the enemy fired and killed Captain Davis and one of his privates: the provincials returned the fire, and the enemy retreated, with the loss of several killed

and wounded.\* This detachment soon joined the main body, and Colonel Smith attempted to lead back his troops to Boston. But the whole vicinity was in arms and pressed upon his rear; whilst the provincial sharpshooters, galled his flanks from the adjacent stone walls, hedges and other coverts, which greatly endangered and alarmed the officers, who were more immediately the objects of their vengeance. Major Pitcairn, who burnt the first powder at Lexington, dismounted and led his division on foot; but his horse was taken by the provincials, together with his pistols in their holsters.

To check the ravages of the enemy on their retreat, the Rev. Mr. Payson, of Chelsea, headed a small detachment of militia, and killed, wounded and captured a small detachment of the British, and recovered the plunder they were carrying off to Boston.

About sunset, the fugitives secured their retreat over Charlestown neck, covered by a party of about nine hundred regulars, under the command of Lord Percy; and the next morning, they escaped safe into Boston — Colonel Smith who received a wound in the expedition, had the honor to report to General Gage, that in obedience to his orders, he had marched to Concord, and destroyed such stores as were to be found; engaged the Yankees in several skirmishes in which they had suffered severely; but being overpowered by numbers, he had been able to make good his retreat to Boston, with the loss of only 65 killed, 180 wounded, and 158 taken prisoners.

As soon as regular returns could be made by the provincials, their loss was found to be 54 killed and 34 wounded, and four missing, total 88; which left a balance of success in their favor of 185, besides the exulting triumph of pursuing the enemy about 20 miles, and driving them into close quarters.

Thus the conflict began; blood was spilt, and the scene was opened.

The news of this conflict, flashed like lightning through the country, and kindled a spirit of revenge in

---

\*One of the wounded enemy was killed with a hatchet, by a straggling pursuer, which gave rise to very extravagant reports from the British, after they returned to Boston.

those hardy sons of liberty, who rushed to the war, to take vengeance on the insulting foe. The heroes of the old war put themselves at the head of their injured brethren, and enrolled themselves in the ranks of their country, to wipe out the stain by the blood of the British.

General Ward, an old experienced officer, took the command (agreeable to his appointment) of the troops at Cambridge, as they collected from the neighboring country and neighboring colonies, and General Gage soon found himself closely invested in Boston, by an army of 20,600 men.

When the tidings of the conflict at Lexington, reached the colonies at the south, they roused to the contest, with the same ardent, patriotic zeal, as the colonies at the north, and one universal effort, in the cause of liberty, inspired the whole American family.

## PART IV.

### CHAPTER I. †

AMERICAN REVOLUTION, CONTINUED FROM THE BATTLE OF  
LEXINGTON, TO THE FALL OF MONTGOMERY BEFORE  
QUEBEC.

Thus armed against herself, Great Britain put forth all her efforts to prosecute the war, and bring her colonies, "*at her feet.*"

Arrayed in one firm bond of union, under the guidance of her General Congress, America committed her cause to God, and entered the lists with Britain, then mistress of the seas, and arbiter of the world.

The provincial Congress of Massachusetts, addressed the following circular letter, to the several colonies, bearing date April 28th, 1775:

"We conjure you, by all that is dear, by all that is sacred, that you give all possible assistance in forming an army, in defence of the country. Our all is at stake. Death and destruction are the certain consequences of delay. Every moment is infinitely precious; an hour lost, may deluge your country in blood, and entail perpetual slavery upon the few of your posterity that survive the carnage. We beg and entreat, as you will answer it to your country, to your consciences, and above all, as you will answer it to your God, that you will hasten by all possible means, the enlistment of men to form an army; and send them forward to head quarters, at Cambridge, with that expedition which the vast importance and instant urgency of the affairs demand."

This circular gave wings to the motions of that ardent zeal, with which the battle of Lexington had inspired the valiant sons of liberty. They rolled to the contest; obeyed the calls of their country; flew to the relief of their brethren at Cambridge, and enrolled themselves as the soldiers of liberty.

Arduous were the duties of the heroes of the old war, on whom devolved the first and most important services of forming camps, embodying the troops, raw and undisciplined; yet full of zeal for the rights and liberties of their country. In this interesting and trying scene, it is recorded of some officers, that they appeared at the head of their respective guards, day and night, by the week together, without repose, or even changing their clothes, to save the army from surprise from a formidable, disciplined enemy.

At this eventful moment, Colonel Ethan Allen was detached by General Ward, and empowered to raise four hundred men, upon the New-Hampshire grants. (now Vermont) to surprise the Forts of the enemy, upon Lake Champlain. Colonel Allen repaired to Vermont, and commenced the service of enlisting the men.

At the same time, the patriots of Connecticut, under the direction of Messrs. Deane, Wooster, Parsons and others, concerted the same plans. Several officers of the militia proceeded to Bennington, where they met Colonel Allen, and arranged the enterprise. The Colonel proceeded to complete his compliment of men, whilst the others procured such arms, stores, &c. as the expedition required. They fixed upon Castleton, as a place of rendezvous. Colonel Allen repaired to Castleton with 230 men, and joined the party, which then amounted to 172, and proceeded to post sentries upon all the roads leading to Fort Ticonderoga, to intercept all intelligence.

At this critical moment, Colonel Benedict Arnold arrived from camp, attended only by his servant, and offered to take the command; but this was rejected, and he consented to act in concert with Colonel Allen. Thus arrayed, these patriots moved forward to the object before them.

On the 10th of May, Colonel Allen crossed over the Lake, with a detachment of 83 men, and surprised Fort Ticonderoga in the grey of the morning. The Colonel summoned the fortress "in the name of the Great Jehovah and the continental Congress." Captain Delaplace obeyed the summons and delivered up the Fort. The garrison, consisting of one Lieutenant, one gunner, two sergeants, and 44 rank and file, besides women and chil-

dren, were taken prisoners of war, and sent down into Connecticut, for security.\*

Colonel Seth Warner crossed the Lake, with the remainder of the party, and surprised and took the fortress of Crown Point. This Fort contained more than 100 pieces of cannon.

Colonel Arnold embarked upon the Lake, in a small schooner, and captured an armed vessel at the north end of the Lake, and returned with his prize to Fort Ticonderoga. Thus the command of Lake Champlain, was secured, and with it a free communication with Canada.

During these operations in the north, General Gage contemplated an attack upon General Thomas, at Roxbury. The General's whole force, consisted of only 700 militia, who were almost destitute of arms and ammunition. General Thomas learned the movements of General Gage, and practised upon him an old military stratagem, by displaying his forces. He marched his troops round a hill, in view of the enemy, through the day, and thus deceived General Gage, and prevented his attack. General Thomas was soon reinforced, and Roxbury preserved.

During these operations, the British foraging parties were often surprised and defeated among the small islands of the Bay, which inspired the Americans with courage and confidence, and taught them to face the British with firmness and success.

On the 25th, the three British Generals, Howe, Clinton and Burgoyne, arrived in Boston. These were expected "*to bring the colonies at the feet of the Ministry,*" the first campaign.

On the 27th, General Putnam and Doctor Warren, at the head of a party of provincials, defeated a strong British foraging party, upon the islands of the Bay, and destroyed the armed vessel stationed for their defence. The

---

\*The arms and military stores taken in this Fort, were as follows, viz. 120 iron cannon, 6424 pounds of ball, 50 swivels, two 10 inch mortars, one howitzer, one cohorn, 100 stand of arms, 10 tons of musket balls, three cart loads of flints, 30 new gun carriages, a large quantity of shells, 10 casks of powder, two brass cannon, 30 barrels of flour, 18 barrels of pork, &c. also a warehouse full of materials for boat building.

same successes were renewed on the 30th, and the stock generally removed from those islands, which greatly distressed the enemy in Boston. All intercourse with the town was now closed.

The American army now began to suffer severely by the small pox, which had been communicated from Boston. The scarcity of money also became serious. At this time, the whole American force did not exceed 8000, officers and soldiers; and this was rather an assemblage of men, than an army. Such was the state of discipline and such their privations, that nothing but their zeal for the rights of their country, kept them together.

On the 12th of June, General Gage issued his proclamation, offering pardon, &c. in the King's name, to all who should quietly submit to the royal authority, excepting Samuel Adams and John Hancock; denouncing, at the same time, as rebels and traitors, all such as should refuse this offered mercy, or aid and assist in any way, or correspond with such as should refuse to accept. It also declared the province under martial law, until the civil law could be restored.

This proclamation was considered as a public manifesto, and a prelude to some serious operation. The Americans watched the enemy closely.

On the 16th, Colonel Prescott was detached with one thousand men, to fortify Bunker's Hill, in Charlestown; but by mistake in the night, he fortified Breed's Hill, which lay contiguous to the former, and nearer to Boston. Struck with surprise at the firmness of this movement, General Gage saw at once, that his own safety in Boston, depended very much upon the strength of this position. He resolved to dislodge the Americans, as soon as possible. Accordingly, about noon of the 17th, he detached four battalions of infantry; ten companies of grenadiers, and a suitable train of Artillery, under the command of Major-General Howe and Brigadier-General Pigot, to dislodge the provincials.

This force crossed over to Charlestown, where they were reinforced, and became 3300 strong. This whole force formed on the beach, and marched regularly to the combat; a terrible cannonade commenced.

Colonel Prescott, supported by Colonel Stark, of New-Hampshire, and Captain Nelson, of Connecticut, received the first shock of the enemy, with firmness.—



Generals Warren, Pomeroy and Putnam, soon joined the detachment, and gave spirit and energy to the party. Charlestown, by order of General Gage, was now wrapt in flames, and the murderous Britons advanced to the charge.

The provincials, like the illustrious heroes of the plains of Abraham, reserved their fire until the enemy had advanced within twelve rods; then they opened a well directed fire of musketry, which was serious in its effects, and checked his pace. The explosion of musketry now became terrible; the enemy gave way and fled in disorder. Stung with mortification, they rallied to the charge: again they were cut down and thrown into disorder, by the destructive fire of the Yankees, and put to flight. At this eventful moment, General Clinton joined General Howe, and by the united exertions of British officers and British valour, the troops were once more led on to the charge, and the carnage again became terrible. At this critical moment, the powder of the provincials began to fail, and the soldiers rifled the cartridge boxes of the dead, to keep up their fire; even after the enemy had turned their flank and brought their Artillery to rake their trenches.

The British now redoubled their exertions, supported by a terrible cannonade from their ships and batteries; the officers pressed on the troops with the bayonet and the sword, in their rear; the combat became close. The British entered the trenches at the point of the bayonet; the Yankees clubbed their muskets, and maintained their defence, until overpowered by numbers, they were constrained to retire. They retreated in good order, and regained their camp at Cambridge, under a galling fire from the enemy's ships and batteries, which raked Charlestown neck, as they passed.

The brave General Warren fell gloriously on the field, in defence of his country, and his country's rights.

Not one action stands recorded in honor of British valour, on the whole historic page, where her troops met with such matchless firmness and desperate resistance, as was displayed by the Americans at Breed's Hill.

The loss in this action, as stated by General Gage, was 226 killed, 19 of whom were commissioned officers,

70 officers wounded—total, 1054, including rank and file.

The American loss amounted to 139 killed, 278 wounded, and 36 missing—total, 453. The loss of General Warren, Colonel Gardner, Lieutenant-Colonel Parker, and Majors Moore and McClaney, was severely felt by America, and cast a gloom over the nation. This loss at Bunker Hill, equalled the loss sustained by General Wolfe, upon the plains of Abraham, at the capture of Quebec; but in the loss of officers, it stands as 18 to 13 killed, and 70 to 66 wounded. From this some true estimate may be formed of that firmness and valour the Americans displayed, in defence of Bunker Hill.

Congress had assembled at Philadelphia, agreeable to appointment, on the 10th of May, and commenced their sittings.\* The honourable Peyton Randolph, was again chosen President, and Charles Thompson, Esq. Secretary.

On the 2d of June, they interdicted all traffic or intercourse with the enemy, by a special resolve.

On the 7th, Congress assumed the style of the twelve United Colonies, by a special resolve, which appointed a public fast on the 20th of July, following.

On the 15th, Congress appointed George Washington, Esq. Commander-in-Chief of all the forces raised, or to be raised, in defence of the American Colonies.

General Washington, then a Member, accepted the trust with great modesty, declaring at the same time, "that he did not consider himself equal to the command he was honored with."

When the commission was made out and delivered to General Washington, Congress pledged their lives, their fortunes and their sacred honors, to support him in his arduous duties, in defence of his country.

Congress next proceeded to appoint the officers of the continental army, and their commissions were made out and delivered to the General-in-Chief, for distribution.

During these proceedings, General Washington retired to his seat at Mount Vernon; set his house in order: made preparation for the service, and on the 2d of July, commenced his journey, accompanied by General Lee and several other gentlemen; actually arrived at

---

\*The morning of the capture of Fort Ticonderoga.

Cambridge, in just fifteen days from the date of his commission. One universal expression burst forth from all parts of United America: "*Under God, Washington must be the saviour of his country.*"

When the General had entered upon the duties of his appointment, and examined the returns of the army, he found himself at the head of about 14,000 men, without order, discipline, or military stores, (or rather with a very scanty supply) and destitute of most of the conveniences essential to a camp.

When the continental officers arrived, the General proceeded to deliver their commissions, and they entered with zeal and ardor into a joint co-operation with his Excellency, to diffuse a spirit of cleanliness, order, activity and discipline, throughout the army. New energies, and new efforts became universal.

The main body of the British army, was posted at this time very strongly, on Bunker's Hill; commanded by his Excellency, General Howe. The other division of the British army, was strongly posted near Roxbury.—These two positions, together with the fleet and armed vessel, covered the town of Boston, and the corps-de-reserve, which commanded that station.

His Excellency, General Washington, took up his Head-Quarters at Cambridge, with the main body of the American army. His right was secured by General Ward, strongly posted at Roxbury. His left was intrusted to the command of General Lee, who was strongly entrenched upon Prospect hill. General Putnam and others, filled the intermediate points of attack, with about 3000 men.

Thus posted, the American army, firm to the righteous cause of their country, nobly surmounted all their embarrassments, and held their enemy in a state of siege.

Such was the ardent spirit of patriotism in this country, that a battallion of rifle corps, ordered by Congress, on the 14th and 22d of June, to be raised in Virginia and Pennsylvania; were raised, accoutred, and marched to the army, where they were embodied, on the 7th of August following, and all without one cent of advance from the public treasury.

The want of powder and bayonets, greatly exposed the American army to an attack from the enemy, and it became the most urgent duty of the General-in-Chief,

to deceive the British General, until he could supply these deficiencies. These embarrassments were augmented by the want of clothes, camp utensils, tools for service, and engineers; together with a disaffection amongst the officers, which arose from the Congressional appointments. Many of the troops were to be discharged in November, and the longest service did not exceed the last of December. Yet all these embarrassments were sustained by that zeal and spirit that flowed from a righteous cause.

The force of the enemy in Boston, was at this time augmented by a reinforcement from England, to about 8000 men. General Washington called a council of war to settle the plans of operation for the season; and a general system of blockade was agreed upon, for the want of powder and bayonets, to carry the town of Boston by storm.

On the first of August, it was well ascertained that the enemy had lost in various ways, about 2500 of his original force, since the 19th of April, and from this, it was concluded that before the spring recruits could arrive, the British army would become more vulnerable.

In July, Georgia joined the Confederacy, and America then took the title of "The Thirteen United States."

About this time, General Gage sent orders to New-York, to invite all foreign seamen into his service, as volunteers. In the month of October, the town of Falmouth was burnt, in obedience to orders issued in the name of his Majesty, to the commanders of his Majesty's ships of war, to treat the Americans, as rebels, and lay waste and destroy the seaports of all such as had taken part in the rebellion.

The flames of Falmouth, like the flames of Charlestown, flashed through the country, and roused the colonies afresh to union and revenge. Congress fitted out several frigates, and caused two battalions of marines to be raised for the service; and framed articles of war, for the government of the Navy. General Washington also employed several cruisers to intercept the store-ships of the enemy, for the immediate service of the army; all which produced a spirit of adventure upon the seas; and the American coast soon swarmed with privateers, which cruised with great success.

A rich store-ship was taken at this time, by Captain Manley, of the privateer Lee, laden with supplies for the

army in Boston. These captures not only gave support and energy to the American army, in carrying on the siege of Boston; but greatly distressed the enemy, by cutting off his supplies.

South Carolina, by a summons from her General Committee, convened her provincial Congress, upon the first tidings that blood had been shed at Lexington, and chose Henry Laurens, Esq. President.—June 1. On the 2d, they passed, by a unanimous resolve, the following covenant:

“Thoroughly convinced, that under our present distressed circumstances, we shall be justified before God and man, in resisting force by force: We do unite ourselves under every tie of religion and honor, and associate as a band of brothers, in defence of our injured country, against every foe: hereby solemnly engaging, that whenever our continental or provincial councils shall decree it necessary, we will go forth and be ready to sacrifice our lives and fortunes, to secure her defence and safety. This covenant to continue in force, until a reconciliation shall take place between Great Britain and America, upon constitutional principles; an event which we most heartily desire. And we will hold those persons criminal to the liberty of these colonies, who shall refuse to subscribe to this association.”

This resolve was cordially supported by the people.—On the 5th, this Congress proceeded to raise two regiments of infantry, and one regiment of rangers, for the defence of the colony; and the language of the day, was “*We will freely give up one half, or even the whole of our property, to secure our liberties.*”

This Congress next assumed the reins of government over the colony; entered with spirit into a general organization of their affairs, and adjourned.

The same zeal for the support of the common cause, prevailed in all the colonies at the south; their crown governors were all removed, and the people assumed the government. Each colony organized a provincial Congress, committee of safety, &c. for the management of their affairs.

Pending these events, the colonies generally, put forth all their efforts to collect military stores, for the supply of the army at Boston, and turned their attention to their

cruisers on the water. They sent and purchased powder in foreign ports, wherever it was practicable; and even obtained it from Bermuda, and some of the British Forts on the coast of Africa.\* They also commenced the manufacture of powder in many of the colonies.

At the same time, information arrived at Head-Quarters, that the addresses of Congress, had been favorably received in Canada; and that the people would not act against the colonies. General Washington detached a body of troops under the command of Colonel Arnold, (say 1000) aided by Colonels Green and Enos, and Majors Meigs and Bigelow, upon an expedition into Canada.

On the 19th of September, Colonel Arnold embarked his troops at Newburyport, for the River Kennebec, where he arrived the 20th, and on the 22d, began to ascend that River, upon an expedition against Quebec.— On the 9th of November, he accomplished his march, through a pathless, uninhabitable wilderness; overcame every possible difficulty, hardship and fatigue, and arrived at Point Levi, opposite to the city of Quebec.

At the same time, General Montgomery penetrated into Canada, by the way of Lake Champlain, accompanied by General Schuyler; and on the 8th of October, laid siege to the fortress of St. John's. Sir Guy Carleton, Governor of Canada, appeared at the head of about eight hundred men, for the relief of St. John's; but Colonel Warner, at the head of his Green Mountain boys, defeated Sir Guy, and on the 18th of May, Brown and Livingston passed by Fort St. John's, with a party, and surprised the small Fort of Chamblee, where they found six tons of powder, &c. with which they pushed the siege of St. John's; and on the 2d of November, the Fort surrendered. The garrison became prisoners of war.

During the siege of St. John's, Colonel Allen attempted to surprise the city of Montreal, but failed; was taken prisoner on the 25th of October; loaded with irons, and sent to England.

On the 12th of November, General Montgomery entered Montreal in triumph, and on the 17th, eleven sail

---

\*Seven thousand pounds were secured by General Washington, from the latter, by the way of Providence, about the first of September.

of vessels, with General Prescott and several other officers, and about 120 privates, with a large supply of flour, beef, butter, &c. besides cannon, small arms and military stores, were taken; all which became useful to the army, in prosecuting the conquest of Canada. Governor Carleton escaped in a canoe, with muffled paddles, in the night, and retired to Quebec.

General Montgomery, with such troops as he could retain for the service, penetrated into Canada, and joined Colonel Arnold before Quebec, on the first of December; and on the 5th, they commenced a system of operations, to carry the city by storm.

This Gibraltar of America, was then garrisoned by about 1500 men, under the command of Sir Guy Carleton, who had arrived from Montreal, on the 19th of November; yet the brave General Montgomery sat down before this strong hold, in the severity of winter, and opened his trenches in the snow, (the ground being impenetrably fixed by the frost) and hardened these trenches with water, frozen into ice, and thus commenced the siege.

General Montgomery next called a council of war, to consult upon the future operations of the siege; the council met the views of the General, and were almost unanimous in the resolution, to attempt to carry the city by storm. Arrangements were accordingly made; the next day the general preparations commenced; and on the morning of the 31st, the signal was given for the attack, by a discharge of rockets, precisely at 5 o'clock.— A violent snow storm covered the troops as they advanced with firmness to the combat; but the garrison had taken the alarm from the discharge of rockets, and stood on their defence.

General Montgomery, at the head of the first division, attempted to enter the lower town by the margin of the River; carried the first battery and dispersed the guard; but in passing a defile, at the head of his brave troops, the discharge of one solitary gun from the abandoned battery, killed General Montgomery, with Captains Chiesman and McPherson, and several others.— The troops, appalled at the loss of their General, retired from the defile, and abandoned the enterprise.

Not so with Colonel Arnold, he at the head of the 2d division, entered the lower town on the opposite side

accompanied by Captain Lamb, at the head of his Artillery company, with one field piece, mounted on a sled. The main body of the division, brought up the rear. At the head of this brave column, Colonel Arnold was wounded in the leg by a musket ball, while forcing the first barrier, which fractured the bone, and obliged him to be removed to the rear. The command now devolved upon Colonel Morgan, who led on the column; stormed the first barrier, and advanced to the attack of the second, with high hopes of success, and in momentary expectation of learning the success of General Montgomery.

At this eventful moment, Colonel Morgan was joined by Majors Meigs and Bigelow, which augmented his force to the number of about 200. At the head of this force, Colonel Morgan led on the charge to storm the second barrier; the whole column, amidst a shower of musketry, ascended their ladders and mounted the barrier; when lo! to their astonishment, a forest of bayonet bristled in array against them, and filled all the street. To advance was death, to retreat was dangerous; they therefore entered the adjacent houses, and stood in their defence, until overpowered by numbers, they yielded to necessity, and surrendered themselves prisoners of war. Thus this desperate enterprise failed, with the loss of their General, and about 400 men, killed, wounded and taken, and Quebec was relieved.

The death of General Montgomery, was a serious loss to the American cause, and severely felt, as well as deeply lamented, throughout the nation. Congress felt the shock, and resolved that a monument be erected to his memory; commemorative of his excellent worth.

We will now leave Colonel Arnold to continue the blockade of Quebec, and pursue the siege of Boston.



## CHAPTER II.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED FROM THE FALL OF MONTGOMERY,  
TO THE EVACUATION OF BOSTON.

In the month of October, General Howe succeeded General Gage, in the command at Boston, and the Brit-



ish army lay in an inactive state of blockade, through the winter.

Congress being desirous to support the views of General Washington, resolved as follows, viz. "That if General Washington and his council of war, shall be of opinion that a successful attack may be made upon the troops in Boston, he should make it in any manner he might think expedient, notwithstanding the town and property in it might thereby be destroyed."

The General, in his reply to this resolve, thus expressed himself: "It is not in the pages of history, to furnish a case like ours. To maintain a post within musket shot of the enemy, for six months together, without ammunition, and at the same time to disband one army and recruit another, within that distance of twenty odd British regiments, is more than probably was ever attempted; but if we succeed in the latter, as we have done in the former, I shall think it one of the most fortunate events of my whole life."

Such was the deficiency of arms in the service, at this time, that the General wrote to Congress about the first of February, "that more than 2000 men in his army were without arms of any sort, and that his whole force did not exceed 8850 men."

The General, at the same time pressed it upon Congress, to raise a regular army, for a given time, as a prop the country might more fully rely upon. Congress saw the necessity of the measure, and by the first of March, the army before Boston, was about 14,000 strong; which when reinforced by 6000 militia, amounted to 20,000.—With this army, the General commenced serious operations. He ordered General Thomas, with a detachment from Roxbury, to take possession of Dorchester Heights, whilst he covered the movement by a bombardment upon the town of Boston. On the night of the 4th of March, General Thomas took possession of the Heights, and threw up a breast-work sufficient to cover his party from the fire of the enemy in the morning.

General Howe saw at once, the necessity of dislodging the provincials from this commanding position, or of evacuating Boston. He resolved on the former, and detached Lord Percy, with three thousand men for this service. His Lordship actually embarked to execute

his orders ; but the movement was defeated by tempestuous weather.

General Washington had made his arrangements to commence an attack upon Boston, as soon as the detachment should become engaged at Dorchester ; and thus the storm most probably saved the British army in Boston.

Pressed upon all sides, General Howe despatched a special flag to General Washington, to communicate his intentions to evacuate Boston, and threatened to destroy the town if his movements were molested. On the night of the 16th, the British army were all embarked, and sailed on the 17th, for Namasket Roads ; and in a few days the whole fleet sailed for Halifax.

General Washington marched in and took possession of Boston ; and joy universal, spread through the colonies. Congress passed a resolution, expressing the thanks of that body, and of the colonies to General Washington, and ordered a gold medal to be struck, with a proper device, commemorative of the event, and presented to the General.

Pending these operations in the north, Lord Danmore raised a force, and attempted to effect a counter revolution in Virginia ; but the patriots pressed his Lordship so close, that he was compelled to abandon his cause, and take refuge on board his fleet.

To revenge this indignity, his Lordship ordered the fleet to destroy the town of Norfolk, and the order was obeyed on the night of the first of January, 1776. His Lordship continued his depredations upon the coast, until he disgusted his own party, and then he withdrew with his negro booty, (say 1000) to Florida and Bermuda, where the slaves were sold for the benefit of the concern.

Governor Martin made a similar attempt in North Carolina ; but his movements were all defeated ; the insurrection was suppressed, and the patriots established.

On the 17th of February, Commodore Hopkins put to sea, with the American Navy, from Cape Henlopen, and in fifteen days, surprised and dismantled a Fort upon the Island of New-Providence, and brought off 40 pieces of iron ordnance, 15 brass mortars, &c. together with the Governor and Lieutenant Governor, and one counsellor of the Island. On the 4th of March, the fleet

fell in with, and captured a British schooner, and on the 5th, they took a bomb-brig, laden with arms and military stores, and on the 6th, a part of the fleet engaged the Glasgow sloop of war, of 20 guns; night parted the combatants, and in the morning, the Glasgow escaped into Newport.

Pending these movements in America, the news of the battles of Lexington and Bunker's Hill, had reached England, together with the appointment of General Washington as Commander-in-Chief of the American armies; all which made very serious impressions upon the people and the government; but the King and the Ministry, were obstinately bent on war.

Parliament convened on the 25th of October, and the King by his speech, supported the war system. Although the speech met with a strong opposition in both Houses, yet the King and the Ministry prevailed, and the war was continued.

On the 29th of December, the ships *Acteon* and *Thunderbomb*, sailed from Portsmouth for Cork, with Sir Peter Parker and Earl Cornwallis, to convoy the transports with 4000 troops to America.

Colonel Ethan Allen returned to America, on board this fleet.

Colonel Allen had been confined in Pen Linnis Castle, in Cornwall, and treated with great severity: but when he arrived in Ireland a subscription was opened for his relief and that of his companions, which was the first succour they had received.

On the 13th, Lord North moved "that his Majesty's treaties with the Landgrave of Hesse Cassel, and the Duke of Brunswick, and other German Princes, for 17,000 men, to be employed in America, be referred to the committee of supply." This motion, after a warm debate, was carried by 242 to 88.

In the course of these debates, it was shewn that this body of troops would cost the nation, one million sterling, annually: and that the army in garrison at Boston, had already cost the nation more than £100 sterling per man, in less than a year; and that even under this enormous expense, their privations had been great, and their supplies wretched in the extreme.

In April and May following, two divisions of these German troops, sailed for America. The whole esti-

mate of forces to be employed against America, this year, (1776) amounted to 60,000.

The destination of the Cork fleet to the Southern States, was early known in America, by an intercepted letter addressed to Lord Dunmore, of Virginia; and on the 3d of May, the fleet had all arrived in Cape Fear River, where they were joined by General Clinton from New-York.

On the 5th of May, 1776, General Clinton published his proclamation of pardon, &c. to all such as should lay down their arms; but finding little encouragement, the General with his fleet, sailed for Charleston, (S. C.) where they arrived about the first of June, and came to anchor off Sullivan's Island.

General Clinton commenced the siege of Charleston, by issuing his proclamation of pardon, &c. as he had done in North Carolina, and with the same effect. It had now become too late for proclamations of pardon in America.

The Secretary's letter had reached South Carolina, and Governor Rutledge had made all possible preparation to receive the enemy. The militia of the vicinity, promptly obeyed the summons of the Governor, and rallied round the standard of their country. General Lee appeared, at this critical moment, at the head of several regular regiments from the north, and took the command in defence of Charleston.

On the 26th of June, the enemy crossed the bar with several ships and frigates, and commenced their operations; but they were so severely galled by the American Fort and batteries, that they were constrained to withdraw, with the loss of one 50 gun ship, wholly destroyed, and the others so disabled as to be unfit for further service. Such was the severity of this contest, that more than 7000 loose balls were picked up on Sullivan's Island, after the action.

Such was the intrepidity of Colonel Moultrie and his brave garrison, at the Fort, that when their flag-staff was shot away in the action, Sergeant Jasper, of the Grenadiers, leaped upon the beach, seized the flag, fastened it to a sponge-staff, and erected it again, in the heat of the action; for which act of bravery, Governor Rutledge presented him with a sword, the next day.

Such was the character of the heroes who defended

Charleston, and such the signal defeat of the English, that they abandoned the enterprise; retired to New-York, and left the patriots to the full enjoyment of their rights and liberties.

When the news of this glorious defeat, reached Congress, it kindled into a flame that spark of liberty, which prudence and caution had long smothered in that honorable body; and it burst forth in the declaration of independence. The colonies were now well prepared for such an event, and the declaration of independence was hailed by America, as the salvation of the nation. This spirit in Congress, was supported by instructions communicated from all the colonies; and the following resolution was moved, by Richard Henry Lee, and seconded by John Adams:

“Resolved, That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States; and that all political connection between them and Great Britain, is, and ought to be, totally dissolved.”—Passed unanimously.

Pending these movements, a Declaration of Independence had been prepared by a special committee,\* and the same was now adopted unanimously, and signed by all the Members, according to the order of the States.

This was one of the most memorable state papers, that the whole historic page can boast; and the worthies whose names stand recorded in support of this dignified measure, as the authors of this glorious epoch, are enrolled in the temple of immortal fame, and their names can never die.

This was the epoch of permanent liberty, and the death blow to British power, and British influence in America.

The sons of those venerable sires, have watched with care the sacred fire; resolved to transmit it in its purity, to their posterity, that generations yet unborn, may fan

---

\*The gentlemen who composed this ever memorable committee, were Mr. Jefferson, Mr. John Adams, Mr. Franklin, Mr. Sherman, and Mr. W. R. Livingston; but the honor of the draft, has ever been ascribed to Mr. Jefferson.

the sacred flame, and bid it burn to time's remotest bounds.



### CHAPTER III.

#### REVOLUTION CONTINUED—CAPTURE OF NEW-YORK.

General Howe arrived at Sandy Hook, with his fleet and armament, from Halifax, on the 28th of June; and Lord Howe arrived with a fleet and armament from England, and joined his brother, on the 12th of July.

Lord Howe brought out a commission from the British government, which clothed him and his brother with full powers to treat with the United States, collectively or separately, or with individuals; to grant pardons, &c. His Lordship, upon his first arrival at the Hook, despatched a flag to Amboy, with a circular letter, announcing his commission, &c.

General Washington, who had arrived with his army from Boston, for the defence of New-York; ordered this circular to be transmitted to Congress.

General Howe addressed a letter to George Washington, Esq. for the purpose of opening a correspondence upon the subject of his commission; but the General returned the letter unopened, as being improperly addressed; and Congress applauded the act by a special resolve.

General Howe despatched Colonel Patterson, Adjutant-General of the British army, with another letter, addressed to George Washington, &c. This was also rejected, and the Colonel opened the subject to the General in a conversation, in which he disclosed the powers of the commissioners, to treat, grant pardons, &c. to which General Washington replied, "that they who had committed no fault, wanted no pardon." Colonel Patterson expressed his "regret that the negotiation should have failed," and withdrew.

General Washington meditated an attack upon General Howe, upon Staten Island, before the whole force should have arrived from England; but was prevented by tempestuous weather; and in the mean time, the whole force arrived, excepting the last division of the Germans; amounting in the whole, to about 24,000 men.

This was one of the best appointed armaments the British government had ever fitted out, and from which they had the highest expectations.

General Washington had under his command at this time, about 17,000 men; three or four thousand of whom were sick, and the remainder were stationed in New-York, upon Long Island, Governor's Island, and at Paulus Hook. Some of these posts were ten or fifteen miles distant from each other, and separated by waters navigable by the fleet of the enemy; and the whole exposed to an attack by a superior force.

Thus posted, under such circumstances, and in the presence of such a foe, the American Commander-in-Chief, attempted to cover New-York, by risking a battle upon Long Island. At this time, the American army was augmented by draughts of militia, to about 27,000; one-fourth of whom were sick with diseases common to raw troops, who were exposed to the open air, without tents, &c.

The whole force of the enemy, had now arrived, and General Washington made his arrangements to support his point of defence of New-York, upon Long Island. There General Sullivan was stationed, in the command of General Green, who had retired through extreme indisposition.

Early in the morning of the 22d of August, the British shewed a disposition to land on Long Island, and consequently General Sullivan was strongly reinforced; but the enemy made good his landing, under cover of his ships, at Utrecht, and Gravesend, at the narrows, (so called.) Colonel Hand, of the Pennsylvania line, retired to the high grounds, to cover the pass leading to Flatbush village.

Lieutenant-General Clinton, who commanded this expedition, detached Lord Cornwallis to sieze the pass of Flatbush, if unoccupied, but not to hazard an engagement. His Lordship advanced; but finding the pass in possession of the Americans, he halted in the village.

These movements being announced to General Washington, he issued the following orders:

"The enemy have now landed upon Long Island, the hour is fast approaching, in which the honor and success of this army, and the safety of our bleeding country depend. Remember, officers and soldiers, that you are

freemen, fighting for the blessings of liberty; that slavery will be your portion, and that of your posterity, if you do not quit yourselves like men. Remember how your courage has been despised and traduced by your cruel invaders, though they have found by dear experience at Boston, Charlestown, and other places, what a few brave men can do in their own land, and in the best of causes, against hirelings and mercenaries. Be cool, be determined: Do not fire at a distance, but wait for orders from your officers."

These orders closed with renewed injunctions to shoot down every man who might desert his post, to seek shelter by flight. And with assurances "that if they acquitted themselves well, like men, they had good reason to expect to save their country by a glorious victory, and acquire to themselves immortal honor."

The camp at Brooklyn, was now placed under the command of Major-General Putnam, and reinforced with six regiments, with orders to be in readiness for a momentary attack, and to keep open a communication with his best troops, through the woods, with the advance guard on the heights of Flatbush.

On the 23d, General De Heister landed at the head of two brigades of Hessians, and on the 25th, took post at Flatbush, and Lord Cornwallis drew off his division to Flatland.

On the 26th, General Washington crossed over to Brooklyn, and passed the day in making arrangements for the action.

The British army were now formed with the Hessians in the centre. General Grant, with his division on the left, and General Clinton, Lord Cornwallis, and Earl Percy, with the flower of the British army, on the right. Thus posted, the distance between the two armies, did not exceed four miles, and their approach to each other was accessible by three direct roads; that led across the hills, that divided the armies, and which were covered with woods.

The direct road from Flatbush to Brooklyn, was possessed by the Americans, and defended by a strong redoubt, mounted with several pieces of cannon, and supported by a strong detachment of infantry. The other two roads were guarded by detachments of infantry, within view of the enemy.



These passes being thus guarded, General Clinton detached the van of the British army, on the night of the 27th, consisting of light infantry, grenadiers, and light horse, and a reserve under Lord Cornwallis, with 14 pieces of cannon, to seize on another pass that led to Jamaica, about three miles east of the Bedford road.

This movement succeeded, and opened the way for this whole division to pass the heights, and in the morning they were encamped on the plain.

General Grant moved forward with his division on the left, and a sharp skirmish commenced on the heights.— Lord Sterling was detached to support the American right; but the whole column was obliged to retire before the enemy.

At daylight, General De Heister put in motion, the centre of the British army, to cross over the hills directly to Brooklyn, and commenced his attack with a heavy cannonade. General Clinton had now gained the rear of a part of the American left, and detached Colonel Donop, to charge the Americans, on the hills, and supported the attack with the whole centre column, under the command of General De Heister.

General Sullivan now discovered the enemy in his rear, and beat a retreat, if possible, to regain the camp at Brooklyn. The advance guard of the British, interrupted his retreat, and an action commenced; but the Americans were overpowered by numbers, and fled to their camp at Brooklyn, with very considerable loss. At this time, the American left was broken and routed, near Bedford, and fled into the woods, where they were inclosed between the right and the centre of the British army, and suffered great loss; yet a part of these fugitives gained the camp at Brooklyn.

At this time, Lord Stirling, discovering that the enemy had turned and put to flight the left, and were pressing on in his rear, upon the camp at Brooklyn, instantly beat a retreat, and to cover this retreat, charged the corps of Lord Cornwallis, with a detachment of 400 men only. Such was the spirit of this charge, that it held his Lordship at bay, until the retreating division had regained the camp. Then General Grant advanced into his rear, and compelled his little band of heroes, to resign themselves up prisoners of war.

Flushed with their successes, the enemy threatened to carry the camp at Brooklyn, by storm; but the prudence of the commander restrained the ardor of the troops, and he invested the camp in form, on the night of the 28th of August.

The American loss in this action, in killed, wounded, and taken, amounted to about three thousand, including General Sullivan and Lord Sterling, taken, and Brigadier General Woodhall, killed.

General Washington passed the day in his camp at Brooklyn, on the 29th, and at night, by a most masterly movement, the army with their whole encampment (except some heavy cannon) crossed over into New-York; and when the fog cleared off, at 9 in the morning, the rear guard was discovered by the enemy; but they were out of the reach of his fire.

Lord Howe made a movement with his fleet to enter the River, and cut off their retreat; but was prevented entirely, by a contrary wind.

On the 2d of September, Governor's Island was evacuated by two regiments of the Americans, with all their arms, stores, &c. except a few heavy cannon, within a quarter of a mile of the enemy's shipping; with the loss of only one man's arm.

This was an eventful crisis in the revolution, and the Commander-in-Chief saw that the fate of America was hazarded upon the issue of a battle with a superior foe, and that under the most perilous circumstances. Impressed with the magnitude of the object, he passed two days and nights without sleep or rest, being the most of the time on horseback, and with his watchful eye, superintending every movement; watching every event.

Flushed with the successes of Long Island, Lord Howe again renewed his pacific proposals to Congress; but they were again rejected. Congress at the same time, delegated a special committee to confer with Lord Howe, and learn his powers. They executed their commission and reported: "That the powers of the commissioners amounted to nothing more than a court of inquiry," &c. and consequently were of no force.

The defeat upon Long Island, wrought a complete change in the American army; the fire of Lexington and Bunker's Hill, was then extinguished, and the militia deserted their colours; abandoned their General, and

fled to their homes, in such numbers as to threaten the dissolution of the army; one fourth of those that remained, were enrolled amongst the sick.

The enemy, elated with the successes of Long Island, moved with a division of the fleet, up the East River, and threatened to cut off the retreat of the American army, which led the General to abandon New-York, and take post under cover of the Forts. But the enemy landed in force from the fleet in the River, on the 15th of September; and General Washington retired.

On the 16th, a sharp skirmish commenced between detachments of the American and British armies, in which the Americans were decidedly successful; this inspired them with fresh courage and resolution.

On the 21st more than 1100 houses were destroyed by fire, in the city of New-York; then equal to about one-fourth of the city.

On the 24th of September, an American officer of distinction, thus expressed himself, in a letter to his friend: "We are now upon the eve of another dissolution of the army, and unless some speedy and effectual measures are adopted by Congress, our cause will be lost."

Under these embarrassing circumstances, General Howe attempted to cut off the retreat of General Washington, by landing a strong force in his rear. At this critical moment, General Lee arrived in the American camp; and a reinforcement of five or six thousand Germans, arrived in New-York, to strengthen the enemy.

On the 17th of October, General Washington called a council of war, and it was resolved to abandon York Island, and retire to White Plains, leaving a garrison in Fort Washington. This was effected by opposing a firm front to the enemy, whilst the sick, baggage, military stores, &c. were conveyed along the rear, and thus removed to a place of safety.

On the 22d, General Howe was reinforced by one or two divisions of Germans, and on the 25th, he commenced operations, and marched towards White Plains, to meet the Americans. On the 28th, a general skirmishing commenced between the advanced parties; and on the 29th, General Howe moved in columns in support of his parties, to bring on a general action; but the Americans held him at bay, until he was again reinforced on the 31st, when General Washington retired to the high

grounds, leaving a strong rear guard to cover White Plains. General Howe abandoned the enterprise, and drew off his army towards King's bridge, Nov. 8. On the 15th, he sent in a summons to Colonel Magraw, the commander of Fort Washington, and on the 16th, he carried the Fort by storm, and put *the garrison to the sword*.

General Washington beheld the awful scene, and wept with the feelings of a compassionate father. The shock was felt with the keenest sensibility, throughout the American army, and even General Lee wept with indignation, at the news of the merciless butchery, and cursed the unrelenting foe.

On the 18th, Lord Cornwallis moved to the attack of Fort Lee; but General Green drew off the garrison, abandoned the Fort, and joined General Washington. On the 22d, General Washington retired to Newark, where he found himself almost abandoned by the army; and left to the mercy of a victorious, pursuing enemy; with only about 3500 men, to accompany him in his flight. On the 28th, General Washington retired to Brunswick, and Lord Cornwallis entered Newark, with his victorious army. His Lordship pursued to Brunswick, and General Washington retired to Princeton.—December 1st. Lord Cornwallis halted onewhole week at Brunswick, agreeable to orders; and in the mean time, General Washington saw himself abandoned by the Jersey and Maryland brigades of militia, whose terms of service then expired.

On the 7th, his Lordship pursued to Princeton, and General Washington retired to Trenton. The next day his Lordship entered Trenton, just at the critical moment that General Washington, with his remnant of an army, had crossed the Delaware,\* and secured the boats to prevent his passing†—December 8th, 1776.

General Howe had joined Lord Cornwallis at Newark, and now made a stand at Princeton, and issued the proclamation of the King's Commissioners, proffering

---

\*General Washington could muster only 2200 men at this time.

†The same day General Prescott, with a strong British force, took possession of Newport, (Rhode-Island.)

pardon and peace to all such as should submit in sixty days.

Such were the distresses of the army and the country, when they saw their liberties about to expire under the pressure of an overwhelming foe, that men of the first distinction, in great numbers in that part of the country, embraced the overture and made their submission.

To add to the distresses of this most trying scene, General Lee, who had harrassed the rear of the British army, with about three thousand men, was now surprised in his quarters, and taken by the enemy.—December 13. The troops of General Lee, now under the command of General Sullivan, joined General Washington.

Pending the delay of General Howe at Trenton, General Washington, with the assistance of General Mifflin, collected a body of Pennsylvania militia, and resolved to make a stand, to recover, if possible, the spirits of the army and the nation.

On the night of the 25th, General Washington, under cover of a violent snow-storm, crossed the Delaware; commenced an attack upon the British army, and gained a signal victory; took about 1000 prisoners, including an entire regiment of Germans, with their whole encampment, and secured his position at Trenton.

The enemy soon recovered their shock by large reinforcements, and General Washington retired to Princeton, by a circuitous march; triumphed over the enemy again, and pursued them to Brunswick. Lord Cornwallis collected all his forces at Brunswick, and made a stand. General Washington took up his position at Morristown, and watched the motions of the enemy.

During these operations in New-Jersey, the British army had thrown up the rein, and given full scope to the brutal passions. This roused the indignation of the people and re-kindled the fire of Lexington, which spread like lightning through the country. New-Jersey then exhibited a scene which was considered but the miniature of what the nation would exhibit, should Britain prevail. Husbands saw the fate of their wives; parents of their daughters: and the nation became most seriously alarmed for their safety, and more immediately alive to the interest of the common cause. New Jersey felt the wound she had received, and roused to the combat, to revenge her wrongs upon the brutal foe.

General Washington surprised Lord Cornwallis, at Elizabethtown, and he retired to Amboy, where he was closely invested through the winter. In June following, General Howe drew off this army to Staten Island, and the Jerseys were cleared.

In April, General Howe detached Governor Tryon, with the command of a Major-General of Provincials, at the head of about 2000 men, to destroy the American stores at Danbury. The General executed this commission, and destroyed 1800 barrels of beef, 2000 bushels of wheat, 800 barrels of flour, 1700 tents, 100 hog-heads of rum, &c. with the loss of about 400 men, killed, wounded and taken by the Americans.



## CHAPTER IV.

### REVOLUTION CONTINUED.

Upon the fall of General Montgomery, before Quebec, the command devolved upon Colonel Arnold; but he was soon removed to Montreal, with the command of a brigade, and General Thomas was sent on to succeed him. General Thomas died soon after, and was succeeded by General Sullivan; and the American army suffered every possible distress from the small pox and other diseases, until they were reduced to the pitiful number of 400; then they raised the siege of Quebec, and retired towards Montreal, to escape total destruction from the enemy, who were reinforced by the arrival of a fleet and armament from England.

The British army in Canada, were now about 13,000 strong; with this force, General Carleton, supported by Generals Burgoyne, Phillips and Reidesel, advanced in divisions, in pursuit of General Sullivan. General Frazer, at the head of the advance guard, had taken post at Trois Rivières, and General Sullivan detached General Thompson to surprise him in his camp, but failed; and the troops retired with loss, leaving their General a prisoner in the hands of the enemy. General Carleton pursued with his whole force: but the Americans secured their retreat, under the most perilous circumstances, and gained the River Sorel, where they were joined by Gen-

eral Arnold from Montreal. Generals Sullivan and Arnold embarked their troops, with their cannon and baggage, and retired to the Isle Aux-Noix, and from thence to Crown Point, where they made a stand.—June 15, 1776.

On the 12th of July, General Sullivan retired from the command, and carried with him the affections and gratitude of the army. General Gates succeeded to the command of this army, now diminished more than five thousand, exclusive of about 300 sick, who were removed to Fort George. The distresses of this army, arising from the ravages of the small pox, exceed all description.

Sir Guy Carleton exerted himself through the summer, in preparing his fleet to meet the Americans on the Lake. Early in October, he embarked his troops, and commenced operations. The two fleets met near Valicour Island; a sharp action commenced; both fleets distinguished themselves by their ardent zeal, and intrepid valor; but the Americans were overpowered, dispersed, taken or destroyed; and thus an opening was made for the enemy to approach Fort Ticonderoga.—October 11, 1776.

At this critical moment, Sir Guy Carleton abandoned all further operations for the season, and retired into Canada.

General Gates discharged the militia, and the campaign closed.

The humanity of Sir Guy Carleton, in clothing the naked American prisoners in Canada, and dismissing them with kindness, as well as with such supplies as were necessary to carry them comfortably to their friends, is deserving of perpetual remembrance; and ought to be recorded to his eternal honor.

In the spring of 1777, General Burgoyne succeeded Sir Guy Carleton, in the command. He commenced his operations early in the season, at the head of about 10,000 men, consisting of British and German troops, commanded by Generals Phelps, Fraser, Powell and Hamilton; with the German Generals, Baron Reidesel and Spicht.

This army might be truly styled a well appointed British army, fully supplied with every requisite for a successful campaign, particularly a powerful train of brass field artillery; and the troops were healthy, and in high

spirits. To this army were attached several tribes of Indians, who were to take the field, upon conditions of humanity; not to scalp the wounded, nor their prisoners; but to receive a bounty for every captive brought in by them, and delivered alive.

On the 21st of June, General Burgoyne arrived at Crown Point, and on the 29th, he commenced operations against Fort Ticonderoga.

General Schuyler had succeeded General Gates, in the command of the northern army, and put this fortress in order to receive the enemy, and given the command to General St. Clair.

On the 2d of July, General Burgoyne approached Fort Ticonderoga, with the right wing of the British army. General St. Clair abandoned the Fort to save the garrison, and retired to Hubbardston, and from thence to Castleton, about thirty miles distance from Ticonderoga, where he made a stand to collect the army from Mount Independence, &c.

General Frazer, supported by General Reidesel, commenced a pursuit in the morning, with the light troops of the British and Germans, and overtook the American rear guard, under Colonel Warner, at Castleton, and commenced an attack on the 7th, which became sharp and bloody. The British were routed at first, with loss; but finding that Colonel Warner was not supported by General St. Clair, they rallied to the combat, and with the bayonet, charged and dispersed the American rear, with the loss of about 300 men; and Colonel Warner retired with the remainder of his troops to Fort Ann.

General Burgoyne, with the main body of the British army, sailed from Ticonderoga, in pursuit of the American fleet; destroyed and dispersed the whole, and landed at Skeensborough. He there detached Lieutenant-Colonel Hill, with a strong party to dislodge the Americans from Fort Ann. The garrison marched out on the morning of the 8th, and commenced an attack upon the detachment, which was sharply supported by both parties, for about two hours, with apparent success on the part of the Americans; but a party of Indians appeared and joined Colonel Hill, and the Americans withdrew from the field; abandoned the fortress, and retired to Fort Edward.—July 12th. The whole force at this time, at Fort Edward, did not exceed 5000 men.



Both armies now commenced serious operations.—General Schuyler obstructed the roads, and destroyed the bridges, to prevent the approach of General Burgoyne, and the General cleared out roads, and repaired the bridges, that he might advance to Fort Edward.

General Burgoyne surmounted all these embarrassments, and arrived at Fort Edward, on the 30th; but General Schuyler had abandoned the Fort on the 27th, and retired with his whole force to Saratoga; and on the first of August, he retired to Stillwater, 25 miles above Albany.

The country saw with regret, this shadow of an army, flying before a victorious foe, and laying open the whole northern frontier, by abandoning those fortresses that had cost the colonies so much blood and treasure, in former wars. The spirits of the country were as greatly depressed as when General Washington crossed the Delaware the last year, and the spirits of the enemy were high.

At this eventful moment, Sir William Howe sailed from New-York, with his armament, to commence operations in Pennsylvania.

Colonel Barton, on the 10th of July, with 40 volunteers, passed over to Rhode-Island; surprised General Prescott in his quarters, and brought him off, with one of his Aids; which gave some spring to the public feeling.

On the 4th of August, Congress appointed General Gates to succeed General Schuyler, in the command of the army of the north.

On the 22d, General Sullivan, with Colonel Ogden, crossed over on to Staten Island, in order to dislodge the British stationed there; but by some mismanagement, the attempt failed, with the loss of two or three hundred men, killed, wounded and missing.

On the 3d of August, Colonel St. Ledger, (who had been detached from Canada by General Burgoyne, into the country of the Mohawks, to make a diversion in that quarter) commenced his operations against Fort Stanwix. General Herkimer marched down at the head of about 800 militia, to relieve the Fort; but he fell into an Indian ambush, on the 6th, and was killed in one of the sharpest and most desperate Indian battles we have

noticed. The garrison of the Fort, rallied out at the critical moment; decided the bloody contest; drove off the Indians, and relieved the Fort. Colonel St. Ledger summoned the Fort on the 8th; but Colonel Gansevort returned a spirited answer; St. Ledger withdrew with precipitation, and returned to the Lake.

Pending these movements, General Washington detached General Lincoln to the northward, to take command of such eastern militia as might join the northern army. General Lincoln arrived at Manchester on the 2d of August, where he took the command of 600 militia, and on the 6th, he was joined by General Stark, with 800 more.

General Stark was a soldier of merit, and had deserved well of his country, by his distinguished services in the famous battle of Bunker's Hill; but he had felt himself wounded by the neglect of Congress, after the battle, and retired from service. He engaged at this time in the service of his country, upon the express condition that he should not be constrained to serve under a continental officer; he accordingly resisted the pressing solicitations of General Schuyler, to join him in checking the progress of General Burgoyne.

Congress interposed in this controversy; and at this eventful moment, General Burgoyne detached Colonel Baum with 500 Germans and one hundred Indians, to seize on the American stores at Bennington, to enable him to pursue his march to Albany. General Stark was apprised of this movement, and sent expresses to collect the neighboring militia, and marched to meet the enemy on the 14th; supported by Colonels Warner, Williams and Brush. The advance parties of the two armies, met and commenced a skirmishing, that continued through the day. On the 15th, all operations were suspended by the excessive rains that fell; but on the 16th, General Stark was joined by the Berkshire militia, under Colonel Symonds, and he detached Colonel Nichols to take post in the rear of the enemy, on the left; Colonel Hendrick to take post in the rear of his right; to be supported by Colonels Hubbard and Stickley, still further on the right. About 3 o'clock in the afternoon, General Stark commenced an attack upon the enemy, strongly intrenched, and supported by two field pieces. The attack became general, and was valiantly supported

on both sides; the Indians fled; the Germans were overpowered; forced from their entrenchments, and put to flight. The militia, flushed with the successes of the day, abandoned the pursuit, and gave themselves up to plunder. At this eventful moment, Lieutenant-Colonel Breyden joined Colonel Baum with a reinforcement; they rallied to the charge, and renewed the combat.—Colonel Warner led on his regiment of continentals, at this critical moment, and supported the action until the militia could recover their order, and advance to the charge. The action soon became general, and continued through the day. The Germans again gave way, and secured their retreat under cover of the night; leaving their artillery, baggage, &c. with 200 slain, and 700 prisoners; among whom was Colonel Baum. This was an important action, and proved ruinous to General Burgoyne.

The merits of General Stark, were applauded by a special resolve of Congress, and they honored him with the command of a Brigadier-General in the continental army.—October 4th.

General Gates arrived at this eventful moment, and took the command of the northern army. This was the first success that had been obtained in the north; and it gave fresh hopes, and fresh courage to the army, and inspired the country with new zeal, which was displayed in that alacrity with which the militia turned out and joined the army.

General Lincoln, at this time, supported by Colonels Brown, Woodbridge and Johnson, threw himself into the rear of General Burgoyne; and on the 18th, Colonel Brown destroyed the British stores at the landing at Lake George, and released the American prisoners.—They commenced operations at the same time with success, against Fort Ticonderoga and Skeensborough.

Pending these movements, General Burgoyne crossed the Hudson and encamped with his whole army, upon the plains of Saratoga. He next moved forward upon the banks of the Hudson, and took post upon the heights of Stillwater, within three miles of General Gates.

On the 13th of September, General Gates detached about three thousand men to offer the enemy battle; but he declined the combat. On the 19th, the scouting parties of the two armies commenced a skirmishing that led

to a general action, which continued through the day, and was supported with great zeal and intrepid bravery. Night closed the scene, and the two Generals drew off their armies to protect their camps, and waited with impatience, the returning day.

The loss of the British in this action, was estimated at 500 killed, wounded and taken; and the loss of the Americans, at about 300; being about one-eighth of the whole number engaged.

The army of General Gates was at this time, about 7000 strong, exclusive of the troops under General Lincoln, who were then at Bennington, on their return from the Lake.

The Indians mostly deserted the standard of General Burgoyne, after the action; and four of the Six Nations, favoured General Gates, and furnished him with 150 warriors, who joined him on the 20th. On the 29th, General Lincoln joined General Gates, with 2000 men.

From this time to the 7th of October, the two armies were within cannon shot of each other, and witnessed frequent skirmishings, both night and day, which harassed the armies with serious alarms.

General Burgoyne communicated to Sir Henry Clinton, at New-York, his true situation, and requested his mutual co-operation. General Gates at the same time, disclosed to general Washington, the privations of the American army, in provisions, ammunition, &c.

General Clinton at this time received a reinforcement of 2000 men from Europe, and began his operations upon the Hudson, to make a diversion in favor of general Burgoyne; commenced an attack upon the Highlands and carried the fortress at the point of the bayonet.—October 6th. This enabled him to clear the obstructions in the River, and open a free passage for his shipping; all which was communicated to general Burgoyne, immediately; but it was too late.

On the 7th of October, general Burgoyne detached a strong party to open a way for his retreat, and at the same time to cover a foraging party, sent out for the relief of the army. General Burgoyne made a movement in person, at the head of 1500 men, supported by general Frazer, which led to another action that commenced immediately, and was supported with great zeal by both parties through the day. The Americans were suc-

cessful at all points. General Arnold fought with desperation, and was wounded in the conflict. The British suffered severely, until night closed the scene. General Frazer and Sir James Clark, Aid to general Burgoyne, were mortally wounded, and the latter taken prisoner. General Burgoyne changed his position in the night, and occupied the high grounds, to secure his army from immediate destruction; and the Americans were supplied with ammunition, in the spoils of the British camp.

On the 8th, the British army were under arms through the day, expecting a momentary attack; and at sunset the day was closed with the solemnity of a funeral procession, that paid the last honors to the remains of the brave general Frazer. The Americans, from their camp, witnessed the scene, and sympathy in obedience to nature, dropt a tear.

On the 9th, general Burgoyne saw himself so closely invested in his camp, that he resolved to retreat to Saratoga, to save his army; this he effected without loss, excepting his hospital of sick and wounded, which he was constrained to abandon to the mercy of the Americans. General Gates did honor to his character, by the display of benevolence and humanity, which he exhibited upon the occasion.

The movements of general Gates shewed to general Burgoyne, the next day, that all the passes in his rear were strongly guarded, and that all further retreat was impracticable.

Stung with chagrin and mortification, at the forlorn situation into which he had precipitated himself, general Burgoyne called a council of war, on the 13th. Such was the local situation of the two armies, that an 18 pound shot crossed the table where the council were deliberating, and their result became unanimous, to make terms with general Gates. General Burgoyne sent out a flag to open the treaty, and general Gates sent in his proposals, which were rejected, and general Burgoyne sent out his terms, in his turn, which were accepted on the 15th.

Pending this negotiation, the news of the capture of the Highlands, as before noticed, reached general Burgoyne, which caused him to hesitate and defer signing the

treaty, in hopes of the expected succour from Sir Henry Clinton. General Gates, alive to the sense of delay, at this critical moment, drew up his army in order of battle, on the morning of the 17th, and sent in a flag to general Burgoyne, demanding his decision in ten minutes. Burgoyne felt the awful responsibility, signed the treaty in time, and returned it to General Gates.

The whole British army marched out of their lines; deposited their arms, and became prisoners of war.—General Gates marched in, under the tune of Yankee Doodle, and took quiet possession. General Gates ordered supplies to be issued to the British army, who were destitute, and the solemn scene was closed.

Such, and so various are the scenes of life, and the fates of men: such, and so fickle is the fortune of war: but firm and unshaken is the providence of God; wisdom, and might, and strength are His.

Sir Henry Clinton detached Sir James Wallace and General Vaughn, with a flying squadron, carrying 3600 troops, to penetrate, if possible, to the camp of Burgoyne, or make a diversion in his favor: but learning the situation of General Burgoyne, at Esopus, on the 13th, they set fire to the village, and consumed it. Had they proceeded to Albany, they might have destroyed the place, with the American stores, and Burgoyne might have been relieved. The enquiry has often been made, why this unnecessary delay? But no other answer can possibly be given, than this: It was the special providence of God.

The army of General Burgoyne was marched directly to Boston, where they were detained as prisoners of war.

General Gates marched with all possible expedition, to support General Putnam, at Kingston, and guard the country against the ravages of the enemy, who took the alarm, and hastened back to New-York. *Tranquility was restored in the north.*

At the eventful moment, when General Burgoyne had triumphed over the Americans upon Lake Champlain, and commenced his operations in the State of New-York, General Howe embarked about 16,600 troops on board his fleet at New-York, (consisting of 260 sail) and on the 23d of July, put to sea upon a secret expedition, to make a diversion in the south, in favor of the hero of the north.

General Washington made a movement towards the Delaware, to be in readiness to cover Philadelphia; and at the same time expressed his surprise that General Howe should thus abandon General Burgoyne. General Howe manœvered upon the coast for several days; but when he entered the Chesepeak, General Washington penetrated his designs, and advanced to meet him. General Howe landed his troops at the Ferry of Elk, and the two armies met at Chad's Ford, on the Brandywine; an action was fought, September 11. The British were successful, and the Americans retired to the high grounds to watch the enemy. General Howe made a movement and entered Philadelphia.—September 26.

Upon the landing of General Howe, Congress retired to Lancaster.

Pending the first movements of General Howe from New-York, the Marquis La Fayette arrived in America, from France, by the way of England, and tendered his services to Congress, as a volunteer in the American cause. Congress accepted the overture, and conferred upon him the commission of a Brigadier-General, in the army of the United States. The Marquis joined the army, and served at his own expense; and became not only a member of the family, but the intimate companion of the Commander-in-Chief.

On the 11th of September, he made the first display of his talents as a soldier, at the battle of Chad's Ford, and acquitted himself with honor.

The Count Pulaski, a Polish Nobleman, also distinguished himself in this action, and was honored with the commission of a Major General.

When General Howe had entered Philadelphia, he ordered his fleet to move round into the Delaware, and thus secured his communication with the sea.

Pending the movements of the fleet, General Washington attempted to cut off the main body of the British army, which was encamped at Germantown. This attack was well concerted and promptly executed. The British were completely surprised at break of day, October 4th; at sunrise the action became warm, and the Americans were successful at all points, until they attempted to dislodge a battalion of the British, who in their flight had thrown themselves into a stone house; this occasioned a delay broke the pursuit, and gave the

enemy time to recover from their surprise and rally to the charge; the action soon became warm and bloody. A thick fog arose, which covered the combatants and caused some confusion; the enemy took advantage of this, and the Americans retired and abandoned the victory they had so fairly gained.

The losses of the parties were about equal; but it proved a lesson of caution to general Howe. He collected his army at Philadelphia, where he was closely invested by general Washington, through the winter; which occasioned the remark of Doctor Franklin: "*Philadelphia has taken Howe.*"

The privations of the American army were truly distressing; without clothes, shoes, stockings, and even breeches and blankets; more than 2000 were marched through the snow, imprinting the roads with their blood stained steps; yet all this was endured with a firmness worthy of those valiant sons of liberty.



## CHAPTER V.

### REVOLUTION CONTINUED—PROCEEDINGS OF CONGRESS.

President Hancock, by permission, retired from the chair, to visit his friends and enjoy that repose the state of his health required.—May, 1777.

President Hancock took leave of Congress, by a dignified address, to which Congress replied by the following resolve:

"Resolved, That the thanks of Congress be presented to John Hancock, Esq. for the unremitted attention and steady impartiality, which he has manifested in the discharge of the various duties as President, since his election to the chair, on the 24th of May, 1775.

Congress elected the Honorable Henry Laurens, of South Carolina, as his successor. They also appointed general Gates, President of the Board of War.

Congress next appointed a special committee to prepare articles of confederation in due form; and on the 12th of July following, this committee made their report, which was ordered to be printed for the information of the members.



The limits of this work, will not permit me to insert these articles of confederation, as reported by this committee. I can only say, they were unanimously adopted by Congress; approved by the States, and became the sheet anchor of the nation, by which she rode out the storm of an eight years' war. This compact formed also, the basis of the Federal Constitution, and thus continued the palladium of the nation, to perpetuate the blessings of liberty and independence, to the latest generation.

Congress resolved that the Commissioners at the courts of France and Spain, be directed to exert their utmost endeavors to obtain a loan of two millions sterling, on the faith of the United States. Congress next resolved "that it be recommended to the Legislatures of the several States, to appoint persons to seize such clothing as may be necessary for the army, wherever it may be found, within their respective States; and when the value of the same has been duly estimated, that it be applied accordingly."

Lieutenant-Colonel Barton, who took general Prescott prisoner at Rhode-Island, as before noticed, was now recommended to Congress, upon which they resolved, "that he be promoted to the rank of a Colonel, in the service of the United States, in consideration of his merits, and that he be recommended to general Washington, to be employed in such services as he may deem best adapted to his genius."

Congress next resolved, "that one month's extra pay be given to each officer and soldier, under the immediate command of his Excellency, general Washington, in testimony of their approbation of their patience, fidelity and zeal, in the service of their country."

Congress next proceeded to resolve, "that the embarkation of general Burgoyne and his army, agreeable to the convention of Saratoga, be delayed until the same should be properly ratified by the court of Great Britain; in consequence of an unguarded expression of the general in one of his letters, in which he declared 'the convention to have been broken on the part of the Americans.'"

General Burgoyne met this resolve by explanations, together with a proposed renewal of the convention of

Saratoga, and in such a manner as should be approved by Congress; but without effect.

On the first of December, the ship *Alamand* arrived from France, with 48 pieces of brass artillery, (four pounders) with carriages complete; 19 nine inch mortars—2500 nine inch bombs—2000 four pound balls—a quantity of intrenching tools—3000 fuses—1110 for dragoons—1800 pounds of powder, and 61,000 pounds of brimstone, from the house of Beaumarchais, in Paris.

On the 16th of December, Mr. Gerard, (French Minister) delivered the preliminaries of a treaty, to the American Commissioners, for the two nations. On the 16th of February, 1778, the treaty was signed, and in 48 hours, it was known in London, and produced great excitement in the councils of Britain.

On the 21st of March, the American Commissioners, Messrs. Franklin, Dean and Lee, were admitted to a public audience, at the court of Versailles, and were presented to the King, by M. De Vergennes. (French Minister) in character of the Ministers Plenipotentiary, of the United States of America.

The French Minister at London, announced the signing of this treaty, to the British Minister, on the 15th, and returned to France.

On the 13th of April, the Toulon fleet, consisting of twelve ships of the line, and four frigates, sailed for America, under the command of the Count De Estaing; bearing Mr. Gerard, as Minister of France, to the United States, accompanied by the American Minister, Mr. Dean.

On the same day, general Burgoyne arrived in London; not as a conqueror, but in such disgrace as to be refused admission into the presence of his Majesty.

On the 5th of June, Admiral Byron was despatched to America, with a formidable squadron, to take the command on that station.

At this time, the illustrious Earl of Chatham, was borne away in the arms of death, no longer to witness the tarnished honor of that country, which, under God, he had raised to the summit of renown. On the 9th, his remains were honorably interred, at the public expense, in Westminster Abbey.

Well might Old England say, in the bitterness of her

soul, "That sun is set : O rise some other such, or all is talk of old achievements, and despair of new."

As soon as the court of Versailles had learnt the destination of Admiral Byron, the Count De Orvilliers put to sea, with a fleet of 32 ships of the line, and a cloud of frigates, to enforce the ordinance of the King, of the 28th of March, for making reprisals on the ships of Britain.

Great Britain pursued the same measures, and Admiral Keppel put to sea, in quest of the French fleet. On the 23d of July, both fleets appeared to approach each other for action; but a scene of manœuvring commenced, which displayed the skill of the commanders, in naval tactics, for three days. On the 27th, a sharp action commenced, and continued about three hours; both fleets suffered severely, and both claimed the victory.—Both fleets withdrew and returned into port, to repair their damages.

This opened the war between England and France.

On the 14th of May, Lieutenant-Colonel Ethan Allen was restored to his country, by an exchange, and Congress honored him with a Colonel's commission, in the service of the United States; as a testimony of their respect for his zeal and firmness in the service of his country.

At this time an expedition was planned against Rhode Island, and general Sullivan was detached by general Washington, to take the command; but the vigilance of general Pigot, defeated the enterprise, by detaching Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell, with about 500 men, to destroy the American galleys destined for the service.—Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell executed his commission promptly, on the nights of the 24th and 25th, and destroyed all the flat bottomed boats near the town of Warren; together with the Meeting-House and seven dwelling houses, and retired to Bristol, where they burnt 22 houses and the Church; committed the most licentious depredations; carried off a state galley, and returned to Newport. Shortly after, general Pigot detached another party to burn and destroy the town of Tiverton; but the Americans were in force, and the enterprise failed.

At this time a French frigate of 50 guns, with a schooner, from Rochfort, laden with arms and dry goods, ar-

rived in James River, Virginia, and were joyfully received by the nation.

General Howe had wintered snugly in Philadelphia, by keeping the neighboring country in a state of perpetual alarm with his foraging parties, which often conducted with great cruelty; and many innocent unresisting inhabitants, were butchered by them in cold blood, while begging for mercy.

On the 7th of May, general Howe detached a battalion of infantry, to destroy the American stores and shipping, at Bordentown. This expedition was promptly executed; on the 8th, four stores were burnt, containing provisions, tobacco, military stores and camp equipage. On the 9th, they destroyed one frigate of 32 guns, one of 28, nine large ships, three privateers of 16 guns each, three of 10 guns, 23 brigs, with several sloops and schooners, &c. and returned to Philadelphia.

At this eventful moment, Sir Henry Clinton arrived at Philadelphia, to succeed general Howe in the command of the British army in America. On the 18th, the British officers took leave of Sir William Howe, by honoring him with a most magnificent entertainment, which continued 12 hours, accompanied with a most splendid exhibition of fire-works in the evening; and his Excellency retired to England.

General Washington detached the Marquis La Fayette from his camp at Valley Forge, with a party of 2500 men, to approach the city of Philadelphia, and add to this scene of festivity and amusement. The Marquis promptly obeyed; crossed the Schuylkill, and took post on Bacon Hill, twelve miles in advance of the American army. The British soon learned the situation of the Marquis, and on the night of the 19th, Sir Henry Clinton detached general Grant, with about 7000 men, with field pieces, to surprise and cut off the Marquis. General Grant marched out upon the Frankfort road, and from thence crossed over through the old York and White-marsh roads, and entered the road to Bacon Hill, about two miles in the rear of the Marquis. Sir Henry at the same time, sent out another party to engage the Marquis in front. But the Marquis, having learnt the movements of the enemy, filed off his detachment so adroitly, that he gained the Matron Ford, (distant one mile) and crossed over the Schuylkill, before the enemy

were prepared to push their attack, and thus saved his detachment from total ruin.

On the 4th of June, the Earl of Carlisle, Mr. Eden, and Governor Johnston, arrived in the Trident from England, as Commissioners to restore peace between Britain and America. On the 9th, Sir Henry Clinton requested of general Washington, a passport for their secretary, Doctor Ferguson, to bear their despatches to Congress; which being refused, they were forwarded in the usual form. On the 13th, they were received; on the 16th they were examined, and on the 17th, the President was directed to return the following reply:

“I have received the letter from your Excellencies, of the 9th instant, with the inclosures, and laid them before Congress. Nothing but the earnest desire to spare the farther effusion of human blood could have induced Congress to read a paper containing expressions so disrespectful to his most Christian Majesty, the good and great Ally of these States; or to consider propositions so derogatory to the honor of an independent Nation.

“The acts of the British Parliament; the commission from your Sovereign, and your letter, suppose the people of these States, to be subjects of the crown of Great-Britain, and are founded upon the idea of dependence, which is utterly inadmissible. I am further directed to inform your Excellencies, that Congress are inclined to peace, notwithstanding the urgent claims from which this war originated, and the savage manner in which it has been conducted. They will be therefore ready to enter upon the consideration of a treaty of peace and commerce, not inconsistent with the treaties already subsisting, when the King of Great Britain shall demonstrate a sincere disposition for that purpose. The only solid proof of this disposition, will be an explicit acknowledgement of the independence of these States, or the withdrawing his fleets and armies.

“I have the honor to be your Excellencies’ most obedient, humble servant.”

The movements of France, as before noticed, gave alarm in England, and caused the Minister to send out orders by Mr. Eden, for Sir Henry Clinton to retire from Philadelphia to New-York, with the British army as soon as possible.

On the 18th of June, 1778, the whole British army evacuated Philadelphia, agreeable to previous arrangements, crossed the Delaware and moved to Haddonfield.

General Washington, apprised of this movement, detached general Maxwell, with his brigade, to harass the rear of the enemy, and impede his march. The next day general Washington, finding by the returns of the troops, that his army was about 11,000 strong, fit for duty, consulted his officers, in written questions, upon the plan of operations to be adopted in pursuing the enemy.

General Lee, who had been exchanged and joined the army, was now present to give his advice in council.—General Mifflin was not consulted, because he had been long absent, by permission, and thereby avoided the duties of the winter's campaign.

The answers to the questions proposed, were almost unanimous, "To harass the enemy at all points; but avoid the hazard of a general action."

General Washington crossed the Delaware the next day, with his army; moved on in pursuit of the enemy, and at the same time, he detached Colonel Morgan with 600 riflemen, to support general Maxwell.

The weather was extremely warm, and the armies moved slowly. On the 24th, general Washington reached Princeton, where he made the following statement to the officers of his army:

"The army of the enemy, is between nine and ten thousand, rank and file. The American army is 10,684, rank and file, besides the advance brigade, under general Maxwell, (about 1200) and about 1200 militia."

The general then proposed the following question: "Will it be advisable to hazard a general action?" The answer was, "Not advisable. But a detachment of 1500, to be immediately sent to act as occasion may require, on the enemy's left flank and rear, in conjunction with the other continental troops and militia, already hanging about them, and the main body to preserve a situation to act as circumstances may require. Signed, Lee, Sterling, Green, Fayette, Steuben, Poor, Patterson, Woodward, Scott, Portail, Knox." General Scott was detached accordingly.

General Gates had arrived at Fishkill, with the northern army, about the middle of May, and was now ready to co-operate with general Washington, if required.—

General Washington considered the pass through the Highlands, as an object of the first importance, and directed draughts from the neighboring militia, to be marched to the support of general Gates, and guard that point. General Gates at the same time, moved forward his army to White Plains, to give an alarm in New-York, and thus make a diversion on that side; which was highly approved.

On the 21st, general Washington marched to Kingston, and there learning that Sir Henry Clinton had marched towards Monmouth, he resolved to attack his rear, and force him to an action. Accordingly, his Excellency detached Brigadier general Wayne, with 1000 chosen troops, to reinforce general Maxwell, and selected the Marquis de La Fayette, to advance and take the command of the whole; general Lee having declined the command.

On the night of the 25th, general Washington moved forward his army from Kingston, and arrived at Cranbury, early the next morning, where they were detained by storms, through the 26th; of course the Marquis was ordered to check his pursuit, and file off to the left towards Englishtown, which he accomplished on the 27th. This movement of the American commander, led the British general to anticipate his views, and change his order of march, by posting the grenadiers, light infantry, and chasseurs, as his rear guard. At the same time, he disposed of his baggage, so as to be covered by the advance column, under the command of general Kniphausen; this, when collected, formed a procession of about 12 miles in extent. This led general Washington to augment his advance guard.

General Lee began to feel the mortification which he had brought upon himself by refusing the command of the advance guard, and now solicited the appointment; to which general Washington objected, but detached him with two brigades, to join the Marquis, which gave him the command of course; general Washington moved forward at the same time, to support the whole. The right of the enemy was harassed by general Morgan's corps, and the left by general Dickinson's Jersey militia; but the main army, under Sir Henry Clinton, was strongly posted near Monmouth Meeting-House, on the 27th.

General Washington saw the favorable moment that

now offered to bring Sir Henry to immediate action, before he should have gained the heights of Middletown, (12 miles in advance) and ordered general Lee to be in readiness to commence the attack, upon the shortest notice.

On the morning of the 28th, general Kniphausen, at break of day, moved forward the advance column of the British army, with the baggage, &c. and at 8 o'clock, Sir Henry followed with the main body; the flower of the army, being posted in the rear.

General Washington wrote to general Lee, at one in the morning, with general directions for commencing the attack. General Washington put his whole army in motion at the same time; having learnt from general Dickinson that the front of the enemy had commenced their march. He sent orders to general Lee, at the same time, to advance and commence the attack, "*unless there should be powerful reasons to the contrary;*" and assured him that the army were advancing without their packs, to support him.—June 28th, 1778.

The limits of this work, will not permit me to give the particulars of this memorable action, in detail; suffice it to say, the doubtful movements of general Lee, deranged the plans of the General-in-Chief; caused the failure of the action, and defeated the operations of the day.—They caused also, a Court-Martial upon general Lee, which deprived him of his command.

The American troops lay on their arms, through the night, impatient for the attack the next morning; but Sir Henry took the alarm, withdrew his troops in the night, and thus made his escape, to the inexpressible disappointment of general Washington.

Sir Henry retired by forced marches, to Sandy-Hook, where he was met by Lord Howe with his fleet; on the 5th of July, and from thence embarked his army for New York.

Sir Henry Clinton lost in the affair at Monmouth, about 500 men, killed, wounded and missing, together with Lieutenant-Colonel Moncton, a brave officer, whose death was greatly lamented.

General Washington lost about half that number, together with Lieutenant-Colonel Bonner and Major Dickinson, two brave officers, whose loss was severely felt by the American army.



The extreme heat of the weather, rendered a pursuit by forced marches through a deep sandy country, impracticable; general Washington, therefore detached a strong party of light troops, to watch the motions of the enemy; and drew off his main army to the North River.

On the 8th of July, Count De Estaing entered the capes of the Delaware, with the Toulon fleet, after a passage of 87 days; Lord Howe had been gone only 11 days, and Sir Henry Clinton had evacuated Philadelphia only one month before, and was now embarking his army at Sandy-Hook, for New-York. This special Providence, needs no comment.

The French fleet was about double the force of the English, both in the number of ships and weight of metal.

Count De Estaing landed Mr. Gerard, French Minister to the United States, who was most cordially received by Congress, and on the 9th, set sail for Sandy-Hook, where he arrived on the 11th, and blockaded the English squadron in the harbour.

The Count made all possible efforts to attack the English fleet in the harbour; but found it impracticable to cross the bar with his heavy ships, and on the 22d, agreeable to advice from general Washington, he set sail for Newport, to co-operate in the destruction of the British fleet and army, at Rhode-Island.

Admiral Byron's squadron arrived at Sandy-Hook, a few days after the departure of the French fleet, in a very broken, sickly, dismasted, distressed situation.—The provision ships from Cork, arrived also, and entered the harbour of New-York, in safety, to the inexpressible joy of the British army, who were in great want of supplies.

Count De Estaing arrived off Point Judith, on the 29th of July, and such was the joy upon the occasion, that it diffused the fire and zeal of 1775 and '6, throughout New-England. Volunteers by thousands, flocked to the standard of their country, to co-operate with their illustrious Allies, in the reduction of Rhode-Island.

General Washington had detached the Marquis La Fayette, with 2000 men, to join the general enterprise. The American force was now about 10,000 strong.

Sir Robert Pigot, who commanded at Newport, had

been reinforced with five battalions, which rendered his force about 6000 strong. Thus balanced, the parties commenced their operations.

The Count De Estaing entered the harbour of Newport, on the 18th of August, without opposition; general Pigot having destroyed the English shipping,\* on the 5th, to prevent their falling into the hands of the French.

On the 9th, at eight in the morning, general Sullivan began to cross over with his army from Tiverton, the enemy having abandoned their works at the north end of the island. At 2 in the afternoon, Lord Howe appeared off Point Judith, with a fleet of 25 sail of the line, where he anchored for the night.

On the 10th, Count De Estaing, eager to meet the British fleet, took advantage of the wind and put to sea.—The two fleets manœuvred through the day, without coming to action. On the 11th, a violent gale sprang up and continued through the 12th and 13th, which parted the fleets; dismasted the French Admiral's ship; destroyed her rudder, and greatly damaged several others.

On the 14th, the gale abated, and close and severe actions commenced between several single ships of the two fleets, but nothing decisive. The Count, having collected six of his ships, covered his disabled fleet, and stood in for Newport, and came to anchor.

General Green and the Marquis La Fayette, went on board the Admiral's ship and pressed him to enter the harbour of Newport, and complete the enterprise; but the fleet was so shattered by the storm, and the officers were generally so averse, that the Count concluded to sail for Boston.

The troops under general Sullivan, gained the north end of the Island and marched down upon the enemy's lines, ready to co-operate with the French fleet, and commence the attack; but their sufferings in the storm, were so severe, that the troops were in a deplorable state.

On the 14th, they lay exposed to an attack from the enemy, which must have proved ruinous, had he known their true situation.

On the 15th, the American army had recovered from their misfortunes and were again prepared for action.—In this situation, they continued anxiously awaiting the

---

\*Four frigates, with several smaller vessels.

movements of the French fleet, to join in the general attack; but to their grief and astonishment, they saw them weigh and stand off for Boston, on the 24th. The mortification of general Sullivan, was greater than the pride of an American soldier could sustain, and he expressed himself unguardedly, in his general orders, upon the occasion.

On the 28th, Count De Estaing wrote to Congress from Boston, and explained his movements to the satisfaction of that honorable body.

General Sullivan soon saw himself abandoned by most of the volunteers, which had reduced his army to a standard below that of the enemy, and he hastened to secure his retreat.

On the 25th, general Sullivan sent off his heavy cannon, and on the 29th, he retired to the north end of the Island. General Pigot pursued with his whole force, to intercept his retreat. The advance guard of the enemy was soon engaged with the rear guard of the Americans, and a severe action ensued, that continued through the day. The next day, general Sullivan learned that Lord Howe was again at sea, and that the French fleet was not expected to return to Newport, and he hastened to evacuate the Island.

General Lincoln, with the advice and assistance of general Greene, conducted his retreat in the presence of a superior foe, whose sentries were not more than 400 yards distance from the American sentries; and on the morning of the 1st of September, 1778, the retreat was accomplished, without the loss of a man, or any part of the artillery or baggage.

The same day, Sir Henry Clinton arrived off Newport, on board of the fleet under Lord Howe, with 4000 troops, to cut off the American retreat; but learning the departure of the French for Boston, and the retreat of the Americans, he set sail for Boston, in pursuit of the French. On the morning of the 3d, he discovered the French fleet in the harbour of Boston, strongly posted, and he returned to New-York. On the 5th, Lord Howe commenced an attack upon the American shipping in Bedford harbour, and destroyed about 70 sail, besides small craft, stores, dwelling houses, and vessels on the stocks, together with the magazine; to the amount of £20,000 sterling.

His Lordship next commenced an attack upon Martha's Vineyard; destroyed all the vessels, and carried off the arms of the militia; the public money; 300 oxen, and 10,000 sheep; and returned to New-York.

The following extract of a letter from general Washington, shall close the chapter:

"It is not a little pleasing, nor less wonderful, to contemplate that after two years manœuvring, and undergoing the strangest vicissitudes, that perhaps ever attended any one contest since the creation, both armies are brought back to the very point they set out from, and the offending party, in the beginning, is reduced to the spade and pick-axe for defence. The hand of providence has been so conspicuous in all this, that he must be worse than an infidel that lacks faith, and more than wicked, that has not gratitude enough to acknowledge his obligations."



## CHAPTER VI.

### GENERAL OPERATIONS OF THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

Pending these proceedings, George Johnston, Esq. one of the British Commissioners, attempted to bribe a Mr. Reed and others, Members of Congress, to effect a negotiation and reconciliation between Britain and America; to which Mr. Reed replied, "*I am not worth buying, but such as I am, the King of England is not rich enough to do it.*"

Mr. Reed disclosed the facts to Congress, and they by their resolve, ordered all letters addressed to Members of Congress, from British Commissioners or Agents, or any subjects of the King of Great-Britain, of a public nature, to be laid before Congress. They next proceeded to interdict all further intercourse with the said George Johnston, Esq. as incompatible with the honor of Congress. This resolve brought out of New-York, a warm and spirited reply, from the proscribed Johnston, with a total disavowal of the facts, on the part of Sir Henry Clinton, Lord Carlisle and Mr. Eden. They at the same time tendered to Congress, a ratification of the convention of Saratoga, that the troops of general Bur-

goyne might be embarked for England; but Congress declined all ratification, unless by the British government, and the troops were withheld.

The commissioners next directed their appeal to the American people, and issued their publications accordingly. Congress favored this appeal, and it had full scope; the country had good sense enough rightly to appreciate the procedure, and virtue enough to frown upon it with contempt, and it ended in disgrace and mortification to the Commissioners.

Stung with chagrin and indignation at the failure of their base and insidious measures, the Commissioners next proceeded to denounce the American government, in a valedictory manifesto, and threatened the American people with vengeance and destruction, if they persevered in their rebellion, and adhered to their alliance with France.

Congress met this manifesto, with a declaration that denounced that savage mode of warfare which the British had carried on in America; and particularly their barbarity towards the American prisoners, as well as the meanness of the Commissioners in attempting to seduce the Members of Congress and others, by bribery and corruption. They thus concluded:

“If our enemies presume to execute their threats, or persist in their present career of barbarity, we will take such exemplary vengeance as shall deter others from a like conduct. We appeal to that God, who is the searcher of hearts, for the rectitude of our intentions, and in his holy presence declare, that as we are not moved by any light or hasty suggestions of anger or revenge, so through every possible change of fortune, we will adhere to this our determination.”

The Marquis La Fayette felt the indignity offered to his nation, by some expressions in the manifesto of the Commissioners, and challenged the Earl of Carlisle to answer for these reflections, at single combat, but his challenge was not accepted.

On the 6th of August, the Honorable Sieur Gerard, delivered his credentials in due form, and had his first audience of Congress.

Doctor Franklin was appointed at this time, Minister Plenipotentiary to the court of Versailles, with instructions to negotiate for an expedition against Canada, in

which France and America were to co-operate, in conformity with the views of the Marquis La Fayette. The Doctor was also instructed to lay before the French court, a general view of the finances of the United States, for the purpose of opening the way for such loans as the exigencies of their affairs might require.

The Marquis La Fayette, at this time, requested leave to return to France; to which Congress readily consented, and directed the President to express to him by letter, the thanks of Congress, for that disinterested zeal that led him to America, as well as those services he had rendered the United States, by the exertions of his courage and abilities, on many signal occasions. They also directed Doctor Franklin to cause an elegant sword to be made, with proper devices, and presented to the Marquis, in the name of the United States. Congress at the same time, addressed a letter to the King of France, expressive of the high sense they entertained of the talents and services of the Marquis. He took his leave of Congress, by letter; repaired to Boston, and embarked for France.

Pending these movements, the Indians, in concert with the tories, began their ravages upon the Susquehannah; entered the settlements, in a body of about 1600; defeated Colonel Butler, at the head of about 400 men, and cut off his party, with a terrible slaughter. They took one small Fort at Kingston, and then carried Fort Wilkesbarre; butchered the garrison, and burnt the women and children in the barracks. They next proceeded to lay waste the settlements with fire and sword, and destroyed the cattle in the most wanton and barbarous manner; but spared the persons and property of the tories.

The following extract from Mr. Gordon's Revolutionary War, may serve as a specimen of the distresses of Wyoming:

"The following are a few of the more singular cruelties practised in the attack upon Wyoming. Captain Braddoc, who had been taken prisoner, had his body stuck full of splinters and pine knots, and then a heap of pine knots piled round him; the whole was then set on fire, and his two companions, Captains Ransom and Durgee, thrown into the flames and held down with pitchforks. The tories were the most distinguished for

their cruelties; in this they resembled the British forces. One of those Wyoming Tories, whose mother had married a second husband, butchered with his own hands both his father-in-law, his own sisters and their infant children. Another, who during his absence had sent home several threats against the life of his father, now not only realized them in person, but was with his own hands, the exterminator of his family, mother, brothers and sisters, and mingled their blood indiscriminately with the ancient husband and father."

I forbear to pursue that part of the narrative, which recounts the distresses of those who fled from the blaze of their dwellings and took shelter in the woods, where they roamed at hazard, as chance or fear directed, until they either perished with famine or the murderous hatchet, or reached some friendly settlements, where they found christian hospitality. These are too black to be pursued, and are to be ranked among the many that occurred, to evince the total depravity of the human heart.

Such was the general alarm which these savages occasioned, and such the spirit of Virginia, that an expedition was sent into the Indian country, under Colonel Clark, against the French settlements upon the upper Mississippi, in the country of the Illinois. It had now become well understood, that the Governor of these settlements had been the instigator of these ravages.

Colonel Clark traversed the desert with his party, about 1200 miles, and reached Kaskaskias, at the hour of midnight, in a desperate situation and destitute of provisions; but being undiscovered, he resolved to strike the fatal blow. He entered the town immediately, and secured the whole, consisting of about 250 houses, with the Fort, the Governor and all the inhabitants, without even an alarm, and sent the Governor to Virginia, with all his written instructions from Quebec, Montreal, Detroit and Michilimakinak, for exciting the Indians to war, and offering a bounty on scalps. Colonel Clark administered the oath of allegiance to this village, and sent detachments to surprise the other villages; which was done in regular succession, and the oath of allegiance administered, until the whole were subdued to the allegiance of the United States.

This expedition tamed the spirits of those sons of the forest, and rendered them quiet for the future.

A scene of the same stamp of that at Wyoming, but from a very different quarter, is now before us.

Lord Cornwallis detached general Gray, with his light infantry, to surprise and cut off the American forces on North River, in conjunction with a detachment from general Kniphausen's corps; but the expedition was defeated by some deserters, who gave timely notice to general Wayne, and he eluded the attack. General Gray however, conducted his movements with such despatch as to surprise Colonel Baylor's troop of horse, asleep and naked in their quarters, (September 27th,) no quarter was the order of the day, and the whole were given up to indiscriminate butchery, and bayoneted in cold blood, while begging for mercy.\*

Sir Henry Clinton detached Captain Ferguson, with about 300 men, upon an expedition to Little Egg-Harbour, under a strong convoy, to destroy the American shipping and privateers; but these being removed, Captain Ferguson proceeded up to Chesnut Neck, where he destroyed such vessels as were there, together with the whole village, and laid waste the adjacent country, and rejoined the squadron.—October 5th.

On the 15th, the convoy with the troops, moved round to another landing place not far distant, and landed 250 men, under the command of Captain Ferguson, who advanced into the country, in the silence of night, and surprised Count Pulaski's light infantry; killed the Baron De Base and Lieutenant De la Broderie, with 50 privates. These were mostly butchered in cold blood, begging for mercy, under the orders of *no quarters*, as before: but Count Pulaski closed this horrid scene, by a sudden charge of his cavalry, that put to flight the murderous foe, and thus saved the remnant of his infantry. Captain Ferguson made a hasty retreat, embarked his party and returned to New-York.

Admiral Graves arrived at New-York, on the 16th of October, in a most shattered condition, by a violent storm, which detained him the remainder of the month to repair the fleet. About the first of November, he put to sea, and appeared off the harbour of Boston, on a visit to the Count De Estaing; but a violent storm here overtook him, scattered his fleet; destroyed the Somerset

---

\*Gordon's Revolution, page 406.



of 64 guns, on the shores of Cape Cod, and forced the rest into Rhode Island, for shelter.

Count De Estaing having now repaired and victualed his fleet, and returned the numerous civilities he had received from the citizens of Boston, took leave of his friends, on the 3d, and set sail for the West Indies.

Lord Howe on the same day, detached Commodore Hotham, with a part of the British fleet at New-York, with transports, carrying 5000 men, to act against the Count in the West Indies.

On the 1st of October, Colonel William Butler, at the head of a Pennsylvania regiment, covered by riflemen, commenced an expedition from Schoharie, and carried the war afresh into the Susquehannah country: destroyed the Indian villages and castles, with the other settlements, and after enduring incredible fatigues and perils, returned on the 16th, in safety.

Colonel John Butler put himself at the head of a strong party, and revenged this incursion, by entering the State of New-York, and surprising Colonel Alden, at Cherry Valley; an action commenced, which lasted three hours. Colonel Alden was killed; the greatest cruelties were committed; fifty or sixty men, women and children, besides soldiers, were killed or carried into captivity; and even the dead were made the monuments of the most savage barbarities. The party withdrew, and returned to their homes.

Sir Henry Clinton abandoned all further designs of carrying on his operations in the north; and turned his attention to the south. He concerted with general Prescott, who commanded in East Florida, a plan of operations against Georgia. Pending the preparations for this enterprise, two parties, consisting of regulars and refugees, entered Georgia from Florida; the one by water, and the other by land. The first advanced to Sunbury and summoned the place; but finding a spirited officer in Colonel Mackintosh, who was strongly posted, they abandoned the attempt.

The other moved on towards Savannah; but being strongly opposed by general Sereven and Colonel Elbert, they were constrained to abandon the enterprise and return; after laying waste the country with fire and sword, destroying and carrying off the negroes, cattle,

&c. and committing the most shocking barbarities.—General Screven fell in the defence of his country.

Colonel Campbell embarked at Sandy-Hook, (November 27th, 1778) with the 71st regiment of foot, two battalions, four of Tories, and a detachment of royal artillery; total, about 2500, under convoy of Sir Hyde Parker's squadron, and arrived off the mouth of the Savannah. December 29th, and in six days, he landed his troops.

General Robert Howe was posted here with about 800 regulars and militia; but they were so worn down with the fatigues of a fruitless expedition into Florida, that they made but a feeble resistance. Although general Howe had chosen a judicious position to cover the town of Savannah, yet he found himself out-generaled; was surprised in his camp, and routed, with the loss of more than half of his army; 48 pieces of cannon, 23 mortars, the Fort with all its contents; the shipping in the River; a large quantity of provisions, together with the capitol of Georgia: even the defenceless inhabitants of Savannah, were bayoneted in the streets, by the murderous foe; and the remnant of the American Army, fled into South Carolina.

General Prescott entered the south of Georgia, about the time general Campbell sailed from New-York; and after enduring incredible hardships and privations, arrived before Sunbury, and took it about the time of the fall of Savannah. General Prescott next marched to Savannah, and took command of the Royal army in Georgia; issued his proclamation, inviting the inhabitants "to lay down their arms, and submit to the Royal authority, or with their arms, support the Royal cause."

Congress, at the request of the southern delegation, had appointed general Lincoln to the command of the army of the south, on the 25th of September, but he did not arrive at Charleston, before the 4th of December. Generals Ashe and Rutherford, joined general Lincoln, at Charleston, with about 2000 North Carolina militia, to act with the troops of South Carolina and the regulars, in repelling the expected attack from the enemy.

On finding that Georgia was the object of destination, general Lincoln assembled about 950 men, and marched for Georgia, where he joined the remnant of the army of Colonel Elbert, and on the 3d of January, established his head quarters at Purysburg.

General Lincoln here found himself at the head of only 1400 men, instead of a force of 7000 regulars, besides the militia of South Carolina and Georgia, which he had been promised; and even this small force was destitute of cannon, arms, tents, camp utensils, powder and lead, except in very small quantities. The militia of South Carolina were in the habit of going and coming as they pleased with impunity; being subject by the laws of the State, to no other punishment than simply a fine. On the 24th of January, 1779, they had mostly returned to their homes, and their places were supplied by about 1100 North Carolina militia under Colonel Ashe; which augmented the army of general Lincoln, to the number of 2400 men.

At this time, general Prescott moved his whole army into South Carolina, and took possession of Port Royal Island. General Moultrie put himself at the head of the Charleston militia; commenced an attack upon the Island; dislodged the enemy, and drove them back into Georgia, with great loss.—February 3d

Colonel Campbell took post at Augusta, with about 2000 regulars and Tories, where he fomented divisions and insurrections in South Carolina, amongst the Tories, which greatly distressed that State.

Colonel Pickins assembled a party from the District of Ninety-Six; pursued these banditti; overtook, engaged, killed, routed, and destroyed or dispersed their whole party; their leader, Colonel Boyd, was slain, and the remnant threw themselves upon the mercy of the State. Seventy of the rebels were tried, convicted and sentenced to death; but mercy interposed, and only five of the principals were executed; the remainder were pardoned.

General Lincoln ordered general Williamson to take a strong position opposite to Augusta, and watch the motions of the enemy; and general Ashe was detached into the upper country, with 1500 or 2000 men, to support general Williamson.—February 13.

Colonel Campbell, upon intelligence of this junction, made a hasty movement the same night, and retired down the River about 14 miles. This movement led general Lincoln to order general Ashe to pursue with his detachment, and when he had gained a certain position, to leave his troops, and meet him at a certain time and place, to concert measures for their future operations.—

General Ashe obeyed, and the commanders met accordingly. At this time, generals Brian and Elbert, took a strong position upon Brian Creek, and the next day, general Ashe returned to his post. On the same day, the British general reconnoitered his camp very closely, and the next day, Lieutenant-Colonel Prevost gained the rear of the American camp by a circuitous march of about 50 miles, and commenced a furious attack. General Elbert with his handful of regulars, advanced to the charge, to check the enemy until the militia could recover their surprise and come into action; but their surprise was roused into fear, and fear into flight; the regulars under general Elbert, were cut to pieces, and general Ashe with his militia, fled to their homes, *never to be recovered*. The Americans lost 150 killed, 162 captured; the wounded were not numbered, and the remainder, about 450, joined general Lincoln.

This decisive victory, opened the whole State of Georgia to the victors, together with a free communication with the shores of South Carolina.

Alarmed for the safety of their State, they chose John Rutledge, Esq. their Governor, and delegated to him and his council, full powers "to do every thing that appeared to him and them, necessary for the public good." They at once assembled a large body of militia, at Orangeburg, near the centre of the State, to act as occasion might require. The Governor next ordered general Williamson to send parties into Georgia, and distress the enemy, by laying waste the country and driving off or destroying all the horses, cattle, provisions, carriages, &c. they could find.

General Lincoln took the liberty of remarking to the Governor, with some severity, upon the order, as affecting alike the innocent and the guilty, the aged and infirm, women and children, and filling the country with distress.

General Lincoln now being reinforced at his camp at Black-swing, determined, by the advice of a council of war, to advance into Georgia, with all his force, excepting a strong guard to be left at Purysburg, under general Veeblier; and take some strong position, that he might circumscribe the limits of the enemy, and prevent his communication with the savages of the back country.

General Prescott suffered the American General to ad-

vance 150 miles into the country, and then availed himself of the favourable moment, and made a movement to surprise general Moultrie, in his camp at Blackswamp. The General eluded this attack, by having changed his position three hours before; and being joined by Colonel Mackintosh, with his party from Purysburg, he proceeded at Fullinwider's bridge, to intercept the march of the British to Charleston.

In the first of May, general Lincoln, having learnt the movements of general Prescott, detached 300 continentals, with orders to make a rapid march and support general Moultrie; at the same time, he moved with his army, into the heart of Georgia.

Amidst these movements and execution of the orders of Governor Rutledge, the inhabitants were so distressed as to throw themselves into the arms of the British, for succour and support. This led general Lincoln to change his operations and move by forced marches, to support general Moultrie, and cover Charleston.

Governor Rutledge took the alarm at the movements of general Prescott, and burnt all the houses in the suburbs, to guard against the approach of the enemy. He next called in the neighboring militia, and general Moultrie joined his troops in the defence of Charleston.

General Prescott pushed his pursuit, and on the 11th, crossed over the ferry and appeared before Charleston. On the same day, Count Pulaski arrived with his legionary corps, and entered with spirit into the defence of the city.

General Prescott pushed his operations with such vigour, to carry the town before general Lincoln could arrive for its defence, that the civil authority sent out the following proposition:

"South Carolina will remain in a state of neutrality 'till the close of the war, and then follow the fate of her neighbors, on condition, the royal army will withdraw." To which general Prescott replied: "The garrison are in arms, and they shall surrender prisoners of war."

General Lincoln appeared with his army, before general Prescott could make any serious impression. The enemy withdrew to Beaufort, and from thence back to Georgia, and Charleston was relieved.

General Prescott indulged his army in the most aban-

doned system of plunder and devastation, and the sufferings of Carolina were such, as would have been the ravages of an Indian invasion. More than 3000 slaves were carried off by the enemy, and sold generally in the West India markets.

Sir Henry Clinton made a diversion in favor of general Prescott, by sending 2000 men from New-York, into Virginia, at this time under Sir George Collier and general Mathews, who took possession of Portsmouth and the remains of Norfolk, about the 10th of May, 1779.

General Mathews sent forward a detachment the same day, to Suffolk, where they destroyed a magazine of provisions, with such vessels and naval stores as were found there, and laid the town in ashes, together with all the gentlemen's seats on the plantations, wherever they went. The fleet committed the same ravages upon the coast; and within the space of one fortnight, about 130 vessels were captured or destroyed, together with 3000 hog-heads of tobacco: and the brave General embarked his troops with his booty, and returned safe to New-York.

General Mathews joined Sir Henry Clinton, in a successful expedition against Stoney Point and Verplank, and then Sir Henry moved on towards the Highlands.

Pending these movements, Lieutenant-Governor Hamilton, of Detroit, had concerted a plan for laying waste the back settlements of Virginia by bringing into action the Cherokees, Chickasaws, and the Indian tribes about Detroit, Michilimakinak, &c.

This plan was deeply laid, and the whole interior of Kentucky and Tennessee, &c. doomed to destruction. To expedite the plan, Governor Hamilton took up his quarters at Vincennes, that he might act the more promptly and effectually.—December 15th, 1778.

When the knowledge of this expedition reached Virginia, Colonel Clark assembled 130 men, and took the desperate resolution of surprising Governor Hamilton, at Vincennes, and by one bold stroke, putting an end to the plan. Colonel Clark, after enduring incredible hardships, traversed the desert 16 days, and reached Vincennes on the 23d of February, 1779; carried the town by assault, and the next day general Hamilton surrendered the Fort, with a garrison of 79 men, as prisoners of war. Colonel Clark next detached 60 men to inter-

cept a convoy of provisions from Detroit, to carry on the war, which was all taken, to the amount of £10,000, in goods, provisions, &c. together with a guard of 40 men. Thus, by this bold stroke, the expedition was defeated; Hamilton with his coadjutors, were safely conveyed into Virginia, and committed to close prison, and in irons, there to remain for further orders.

Previous to these operations, Sir Henry Clinton had concerted measures with the tories and British under his command, to assume a general system of predatory war in America, and submitted his plans to the British Ministry, who expressed their approbation. This plan soon reached the American Commission at Paris, and was communicated to Governor Trumbull, of Connecticut, on the 6th of April, 1779.

Sir Henry Clinton detached general Tryon, (late Governor of New York) with 2600 land forces, protected by a squadron under Sir George Collier, and supported by general Garth, to begin their depredations in Connecticut. On the 4th of July, the armament moved up the Sound, and the commanders issued their proclamation to the citizens of Connecticut, offering pardon and protection to all such as would return to their allegiance; but threatening ruin and destruction to all who should reject this overture. On the morning of the 6th, general Tryon landed his division at East-Haven; general Garth landed at the same time, at West-Haven, and proceeded directly to New-Haven, and gave up the town to promiscuous pillage. The militia collected so fast on the next day, that the enemy abandoned the town in haste; burnt several stores on long wharf, and embarked their troops.

General Tryon proceeded to plunder and lay waste the town of East-Haven; destroying the cattle, &c. and then escaped on board his fleet, and sailed for Fairfield. General Tryon sent a flag to Colonel Whiting, and summoned the town to surrender within one hour: to which the Colonel sent the following reply: "The flames have now preceeded our reply to your flag, and we shall oppose to the utmost, that power that is exerted against injured innocence." On the same night, the town was given up to pillage and conflagration, which extended to Green's Farms; and on the next day, the enemy made a hasty retreat on board their fleet, and left the town of

Fairfield, smoking in ruins. This hero of pillage and conflagration, proceeded to Norwalk, and laid that village in ashes; then returned to New-York, *covered with disgrace and infamy.*

General Washington at this time, concerted a plan of operations against Stoney-Point, which checked all further operations of general Tryon, and occasioned his hasty recall to New-York.

General Wayne commenced his movements against Stoney-Point, on the 15th, at noon; and after having crossed the mountains, through dangerous and difficult defiles, he approached the Fort, about 8 of the same evening. Having reconnoitered the position of the enemy, the General put himself at the head of his brave troops, and at 29 minutes past 12, precisely, on the night of the 16th, and entered the Fort with screwed bayonets, amidst a most tremendous fire of musket and grape, and carried the fortress without firing a gun.— Lieutenant-Colonel Fleury entered the Fort with his division, upon the opposite side, at the same time, and both parties met in the centre; but the garrison was saved and made prisoners of war, to the number of 543. General Wayne dismantled the Fort, and brought off the cannon, stores, &c. agreeable to orders.

Congress passed a vote of thanks to general Washington, general Wayne, and the officers and soldiers under their command, for the masterly exploit in the capture of Stoney Point.

About this time, general Lincoln, at the head of 5000 men, marched against the Six Nations, by the way of the River Susquehannah, to chastise them for their ravages and depredations; burnt and destroyed their villages, corn, &c. and reduced them to terms of submission.

The following memorable naval combat deserves attention. About the last of July, the American Captain, John Paul Jones, sailed from Port L'Orient, in France, on a cruise, on board the French ship, the *Bon Homme Richard*, of 40 guns and 275 men; accompanied by frigates *Alliance*, of 36 guns, *Pallas*, 32 guns, and the *Vengeance*, an armed brig, of 12 guns, and a cutter.— Commodore Jones cruised off the coast of Scotland, with his little squadron, until he fell in with the homeward bound Baltic fleet, under the convoy of the *Serapis*, Captain Pearson, and *Countess of Scarborough*, Captain



Pearcy. When Captain Pearson discovered Commodore Jones, he made sail to cover the convoy, and gave signal at the same time, for the Countess of Scarborough to join him, which was immediately done.—September 23d.

Commodore Jones immediately laid his ship along side of the Serapis, and commenced an action, which soon became desperate; but the Serapis appeared to reap advantage from her superior management. To obviate this, Commodore Jones laid his ship across the bow of the Serapis, and the ships grappled, yard arm and yard-arm, and the muzzle of their guns were nearly in contact. In this position they lay, vomiting forth death, and strewing the decks with carnage and destruction, about two hours. Both ships were frequently on fire, but the Serapis not less than ten or twelve times. The Alliance attempted to co-operate in the action, and with some good effect, until the darkness of the evening rendered it impossible to distinguish correctly, when she killed 11 men, and wounded several others, on board the Bon Homme Richard. At this critical moment, the Serapis struck, and closed the sanguinary scene. The Bon Homme Richard, at the close of the action, was so much of a wreck, as to have seven feet of water in her hold, which rendered it necessary to remove the crew on board the Serapis, and the wounded on board the Pallas. On the 24th, her pumps were closely plied; but on the 25th, she went down; fortunately no lives were lost.

The Pallas engaged and took the Countess of Scarborough, at the same time, and commodore Jones sailed with his prizes, for the coast of Holland, and anchored off the Texel.

This memorable action gave great eclat to the naval prowess of America.



## CHAPTER VII.

### GENERAL OPERATIONS OF THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

I pass over the expedition of Major Lee, against the fortress at Powles's Hook; also the appointment of John

Jay, Esq. the President of Congress, as Minister Plenipotentiary to the court of Madrid, and that of the Honourable Samuel Huntington, of Connecticut, as his successor in the Presidency; also the appointment of the Honourable John Adams, as Minister Plenipotentiary to the court of St. James, to negotiate a peace, that I may continue the southern war.

General Lincoln did not attempt to pursue general Prescott in his flight into Georgia; but devoted his whole strength to render Charleston secure against all future invasion from the enemy.

Pending these operations, he learnt the successes of the French fleet in the West-Indies, under the Count De Estaing, and that after the conquest of Grenada, he had retired to Cape Francois. Governor Rutledge, general Lincoln and the French Consul at Charleston, wrote the Count, pressingly, to come to the coast of Georgia, and co-operate with the American army, in the reduction of Savannah.

The Count obeyed the invitation, as being agreeable to his instructions; and on the 1st of September, he arrived off Charleston, with a fleet of 20 sail of the line, two of 50 guns, and eleven frigates. A British man-of-war of 80 guns, and three frigates, were surprised and taken.

General Lincoln, upon the arrival of the Count, marched with his whole force, for Savannah; the fleet sailed to join him; the French troops were landed in ten or twelve days, and Count De Estaing summoned the town to surrender to the arms of the King of France.—General Lincoln remonstrated against this, as the Americans were acting in concert. The Count persisted, and general Prescott demanded a cessation of hostilities for 24 hours, to deliberate, which was granted. During this time, seven or eight hundred troops arrived from Beaufort, and general Prescott determined to defend the town to the last extremity. The Count saw his error, and consulted general Lincoln, and they united their efforts to carry the town by a regular siege. On the 23d of September, the Allies broke ground, and commenced their operations. On the 4th of October, they opened their batteries; and began to play upon the town with nine mortars and 54 pieces of cannon, which continued four or five days without intermission, but without any apparent effect. On the morning of the 8th, the enemy sallied

ed out and attempted to set fire to the abattis; but the materials were green and the weather moist, and the attempt failed. General Prescott next requested that the women and children might be removed; but this was refused, and the Allies resolved to carry the town by storm; the morning of the 9th, was the time agreed upon, and the assault commenced. The attack was well concerted and bravely executed by the Allies; yet the fire of the enemy was so destructive, that the troops gave way, after having planted the French and American standards upon the British redoubts. At this eventful moment, the brave Count Pulaski fell, mortally wounded, at the head of his legion, when charging the enemy in their rear, in the full career of victory. The Allies supported this desperate conflict 55 minutes, under a deadly fire from the enemy's batteries, and then made good their retreat, with the loss of 637 French and 234 Continentals, killed and wounded.

General Prescott conducted this defence like an able General, and deserved well of his country.

Count De Estaing embarked his troops, cannon, baggage, &c. in ten days, and was immediately dispersed by a storm. Although seven ships had been ordered to the Chesapeake; yet one solitary ship only, gained that station; the others stood off for the West-Indies.

Pending these operations, a Colonel John White, of the Georgia militia, with six men, including his servant, surprised a battalion of Delancey's corps of Royal refugees, near the River Ogeechee, consisting of 100 men, besides 40 regulars, and by a masterly stratagem, secured the whole and conducted them safely through the country 25 miles, to an American post.\*

Congress resolved that a monument be erected to the memory of Count Pulaski, who died in October, of the wound received in the attack on Savannah, on the 9th. Thus fell Pulaski, whose services did honor to his nation, and the American cause.

On the 25th of October, agreeable to orders, general Pigot evacuated Rhode-Island, in great good order, and repaired to New-York, to support Sir Henry Clinton against an expected visit from the French fleet.

On the 26th of December, Sir Henry, finding the coast

---

\*Doctor Ramsay's History, Vol. II. page 35—43.

clear, embarked 7500 troops, and sailed for South Carolina, under convoy of Admiral Arbuthnot.

Sir Henry appeared off Charleston, about the last of January, 1780; but such was the condition of the fleet and troops, that he was not prepared to land until the 11th of February; he then effected a landing on the south side John's Island, distant about 30 miles from Charleston.\*

To meet this expected invasion, Congress had ordered on to Charleston, three of the continental frigates; and general Lincoln had despatched a trusty officer, to the Havanna, to solicit the assistance of the Spanish Governor, in ships and troops, for the defence of Charleston; promising at the same time, to furnish a force of two thousand men, to co-operate with the Spaniards in the reduction of St. Augustine.

General Lincoln engaged in the defence of Charleston, with only 1400 regulars and 1000 North Carolina militia; yet he hoped to preserve the town against the regular approach of Sir Henry, with an army of 6 or 7000 strong.

Admiral Arbuthnot entered the harbour with such ships as could be floated over the bar, and the American frigates retired up to the town, landed their crews, guns, &c. and prepared for the defence.

On the 16th of April, Sir Henry had so far completed his approaches that he summoned the town: but the garrison, with their brave General at their head, were firm. General Woodford from Virginia, with a detachment of 700 regulars, had marched 500 miles in 28 days, and reached Charleston about this time; but the garrison were not augmented by this force, for about the same number of North Carolina militia, whose term of service had expired, marched off for their homes.

Admiral Arbuthnot passed Fort Moultrie, with a strong breeze, under a severe and galling cannonade, and anchored under the batteries of the town.

On the 12th, Sir Henry opened his batteries upon the town; the fire was firmly received and returned by the besieged, and continued eight days. On the 18th, Sir Hen-

---

\*One ordnance ship was wrecked and lost on her passage, together with several transports, and others were taken by the American cruisers.

ry received a reinforcement from New-York, of 3000 men, and on the 20th, he had carried forward his approaches to the distance of 300 yards from the American lines.

General Lincoln now called a council of war, to determine on the exigencies of the case, and the result was as follows:

“A retreat would be attended with many distressing inconveniences, if not altogether impracticable, for the undermentioned causes:

1. The authority is averse to it, and would counteract the measure.

2. It must be performed in the face of a superior enemy, across a River three miles wide, &c.

3. The passes are occupied by the enemy, which must be forced.

4. All these obstacles being overcome, the Santee must be crossed without boats, in the face of a pursuing enemy, &c. We therefore advise to make immediate terms with the enemy.”

These terms were immediately rejected by one party, and strongly advocated by the other; and on the 23d, Sir Henry pushed the siege. The garrison resisted by their sorties.

On the 26th, general Lincoln again summoned another council of war, and at the eventful moment, the flag of the enemy was seen to wave on the walls of Fort Moultrie. Sullivan's Island fell into the hands of the enemy, on the 6th of May.

Sir Henry Clinton pushed his approaches, and on the 8th, he opened a correspondence with general Lincoln; renewed his summons, and offered terms, &c. and threatened to renew hostilities at 8 o'clock. The eventful hour arrived; an awful, solemn silence ensued; neither party fired a gun; all was anxious suspense for one hour; yet neither party moved a proposition. At 9, the besieged opened a fire upon the enemy, who in their turn, opened the batteries upon the town, which threatened to bury it in ruins. The town was repeatedly on fire, and many houses were burnt; at the same time, Sir Henry advanced his last parallel to the distance of twenty yards, and prepared for a general assault, by sea and land.

The critical moment had now arrived; the people by

their leaders, called on general Lincoln to renew the conference, and make terms with the enemy. The Lieutenant-Governor and council enforced the request. The militia threw down their arms, and all was submission.

General Lincoln renewed the conference with Sir Henry, and accepted his terms. Sir Henry complied, and the next day the garrison, with all such as had borne arms, marched out and became prisoners of war.

The French Consul, and the subjects of France and Spain, were, with their houses and effects, to be protected; but they themselves, were to be considered as prisoners of war.

At this time, Colonel Buford was advancing through the upper country, with a party of 300 Virginians, to the relief of Charleston. When Colonel Tarlton learned the position of this party; he advanced with about 700 cavalry and mounted infantry, by a forced march of 165 miles, in 54 hours, and surprised them at the Waxhaws, and summoned the Colonel to surrender. A parley ensued, and pending the conference, Colonel Tarlton surrounded the party and cut them to pieces, while begging for mercy. Thirty-seven only, were made prisoners, and the remainder were either killed or wounded in the butchery. Lord Cornwallis highly applauded the act, and recommended Colonel Tarlton specially, to the favour of his Sovereign. With this blow, the State of South Carolina was subdued, and a regular British government was organised.

General Gates, then in Virginia, was appointed to succeed general Lincoln, in the southern command.

Georgia and South Carolina were now wholly subdued, and the enemy saw his way clear, to advance into North Carolina.

Pending these operations in the south, generals Kniphausen, Robertson, Tryon and Sterling, crossed over from Staten-Island into New-Jersey, at the head of 5000 regulars, on the 6th of June. On the 7th, they advanced to Connecticut Farms, distant about five miles, in quest of the Rev. James Caldwell, whose patriotic zeal had rendered him peculiarly obnoxious; wantonly shot his wife in her own house; then burnt the house and Meeting-House, with about a dozen other dwelling houses. The Royal army next attempted to advance to Spring-

field; but were checked by Colonel Dayton, supported by general Maxwell, and they fled in disorder.

General Washington considered this movement as a feint in Sir Henry Clinton, to open the way for an attack upon West Point; he accordingly detached general Greene at the head of a strong party, to watch the motions of the enemy. General Washington learning from general Greene, that Springfield was their object of destination, sent forward a detachment to support general Greene.

The enemy advanced upon Springfield, at 5 in the morning of the 23d of June. General Greene disputed every pass valiantly; but obstinate bravery was constrained to yield to superior numbers; general Greene retired to the high grounds, and the enemy gained the town. Here the ravages of the Farms, were renewed; Britannia played the savage again, and Springfield smoked in ruins.

Fired with the spirit of revenge, at this wanton repetition of savage war, the militia rallied in force, and the Royal army fled with precipitation, and returned to Staten-Island.

The operations of general Greene and his officers and troops, merited and received the thanks of the Commander-in-Chief.

About this time, the Marquis La Fayette returned from France, and arrived at Head-Quarters. The Marquis had negotiated for America at the French court, and obtained supplies adapted to her wants, and now announced to general Washington and to Congress, that a fleet and armament would soon follow him from France.

Congress immediately resolved, "that bills to the amount of £25,000, be drawn on Doctor Franklin, Minister at the court of France, and that bills to the same amount, be drawn on Mr. Jay, Minister at the court of Spain, and the money applied to the immediate use of the armies."

Sir Henry Clinton had committed the southern war to the charge of Lord Cornwallis, with 4000 troops, and returned with the remainder of the army to New-York.

Paper money had now become so serious and alarming in its effects, arising from depreciation, that Congress resolved to call in by taxes, the sum of two hundred millions of dollars, and burn it, and redeem it by a new

emission of one dollar for twenty. This plan succeeded, and thousands of the best patriots in the nation, were ruined by the depreciation of that currency, they had sacrificed their estates to support at par, i. e. equal to gold and silver.

At this time, Mr. John Adams left the court of London, where he had been sent in 1776, to negotiate a treaty of peace, and was ordered by Congress, to repair to Holland, to bring to a close, the plans of alliance and commerce, which had been two years in agitation.

On the 10th of July, the fleet and armament from France, promised by the Marquis La Fayette, arrived at Newport. (Rhode-Island) consisting of two ships of 80 guns, one of 74, four of 64, two frigates of 40, a cutter of 20, an hospital ship, pierced for 64, one bomb-ship and 32 transports, under the command of the Chevalier de Ternay. Also four old regiments of land forces, together with the legion of De Lawzein, and a battalion of artillery; in the whole, about 6000, under the command of Lieutenant-General Count De Rochambeau.

General Heath received the Count at his landing, and put him and his troops, in possession of the Island, where they were handsomely accommodated. The General Assembly, then in session at Newport, by their special committee, presented the Count with a complimentary address; to which the Count replied, with assurances that a much greater force would soon follow him, and that his whole powers should be devoted to the service of the United States.

"The French troops," added the Count, "are under the strictest discipline, and acting under the orders of general Washington, will live with the Americans as brethren. I am highly sensible of the marks of respect shewn me by the Assembly, and beg leave to assure them that as brethren, not only my life, but the lives of the troops under my command, are devoted to their service."

The Marquis La Fayette, also met the French officers, and witnessed the respectful attention, as well as the general hilarity of the occasion.

General Washington recommended to the officers of the American army, in general orders, to wear black and white cockades, as a compliment to their illustrious allies.

The arrival of this fleet gave a shock to Admiral Ar-



bathnot, at New-York, whose fleet amounted to only four ships of the line; but he was joined by Admiral Graves, on the 20th, with six ships of the line, and felt himself secure.

With this reinforcement, Sir Henry Clinton meditated an attack upon the French at Newport; embarked immediately, 8000 troops, and moved with the whole fleet to Huntington-Bay, on Long-Island.

Massachusetts and Connecticut, took the alarm, and detached a strong body of militia to support their illustrious Allies.

General Washington made a diversion, and moved his whole force down to Kingsbridge; determined to act offensively against New-York. This changed the views of Sir Henry, and he returned hastily, to protect his strong hold.—August 1.

Lord Cornwallis, having settled a system of government in South Carolina, began to penetrate into North Carolina.

General Gates, with his shadow of an army, moved across Deep River, on the 27th of July, to watch the motions of the enemy. On the 6th of August, he was joined by general Caswell, at the head of a fine body of North Carolina militia, who were in good spirits, but under bad discipline; and he encamped at the Cross Roads, on his way to Camden. On the 13th, he moved forward his army to Clermont, where he was joined by Brigadier-General Stevens, with about 700 Virginia militia. An express also arrived, informing him that Colonel Sumpter would join him at Camden, with a detachment of South Carolina militia, and that an escort of clothing, ammunition and stores, was on its way from Charleston to Camden, for the use of the garrison posted there.

General Gates immediately detached Lieutenant-Colonel Woodford, at the head of the Maryland line, consisting of 100 infantry, a company of artillery, with two brass field pieces, and about 300 North Carolina militia, to join Colonel Sumpter; reduce the Forts and intercept the convoy. General Gates prepared to support Colonel Sumpter with his whole force; total, about 4000.

Lord Cornwallis, unknown to general Gates, had entered Camden the day before, and meditated an attack upon general Gates, in his camp at Clermont. Both

Generals put their armies in motion early in the evening of the 15th, and their advance parties met in the woods about 2 o'clock in the morning of the 16th; a conflict ensued, the Americans gave way in some disorder; but they soon recovered, and a skirmishing continued through the night. When morning appeared, both Generals made their dispositions to contest the field. An action commenced; the regular troops were firm, but the militia were overpowered by the British bayonets, gave way and dispersed as they fled. The victory was complete, and the General and his regulars were abandoned to their fate. Several parties of militia who were advancing to join the army, turned their arms against the fugitives, and thus completed the overthrow. The pursuit continued for more than twenty miles, and the road was strewed with the fragments of this routed army, together with the wounded, the dead and the dying. A party of horse, supported by 200 infantry, at the distance of more than 80 miles from the scene of action, upon the first intelligence, abandoned their ground and sought safety by flight.

The losses of his Lordship, his want of supplies, and the sickly season, all constrained him to abandon the pursuit and return to Camden.

Colonel Tarlton continued to ravage the country; and general Gates at the same time, exerted all his efforts to collect an army at Hillsborough; but was not very successful, and he removed to Charlotte.

At this eventful moment, general Greene, (who had been detached to this service soon after the action of Springfield) arrived and took the command, The whole force at this time, did not exceed 2300 men, and these were without clothes, magazines or discipline; subsisting on daily collections, in the heart of a disaffected country, and in the face of a victorious enemy.

Lord Cornwallis was reinforced with 1500 troops, and re-commenced his operations.

Colonel Tarlton was detached at the head of his cavalry, to dislodge general Morgan from his position at the Cowpens. He commenced his operations with his usual impetuosity; traversed the country for several days, laying waste every thing in his course, until he arrived at Morgan's position; an action commenced with the same impetuosity; the Americans were dislodged with some

disorder ; but they rallied to the charge, and were victorious in their turn. Tarlton was defeated ; his army routed ; his artillery and baggage taken, and he with the mounted fugitives, fled to Lord Cornwallis.--January 7, 1781.

This defeat roused his Lordship ; he commenced a pursuit, and the Americans retired. General Greene had the address to harass his Lordship, and yet avoid a general action, until he arrived at Guilford, near the confines of Virginia, where he made a stand, and gave him battle. General Greene, with his little army, had hopes of success against his Lordship's pursuing forces, tho' greatly superior. The movements were well concerted and as well executed, and the conflict was sharp and bloody ; but the militia gave way, the regulars were overpowered, and general Greene drew off his troops in good order, and took a strong position.

The severity of the action occasioned his Lordship to make a retrograde movement to recover his losses.

At this time, Sir Henry Clinton detached a fleet from New-York, with 1500 troops on board, to make a diversion in Virginia, and prepare to co-operate with Lord Cornwallis. This fleet entered the Chesapeake-Bay ; landed the troops, and commenced the most serious and alarming depredations. Several efforts were made to dislodge them, but to no effect.

At this critical moment, general Greene made a movement to return to North Carolina, and carry the war into what had now become the enemy's country.—He boldly advanced towards Camden, and gave battle to Lord Rawdon, then stationed in that vicinity.—April, 1781. A desperate conflict ensued ; victory for a long time held a doubtful balance ; both parties withdrew from the combat, and left the field covered with their dead. Lord Rawdon retired to Camden, and took post as a permanent position.

General Greene advanced and carried the war into South Carolina, and by a desperate assault, was on the point of carrying the strong fortress of Ninety-Six, the reduction of which would have recovered all South Carolina, except Charleston.

At this critical moment, Lord Rawdon retired in person to Charleston ; put himself at the head of 1700 fresh troops, then arrived from Ireland, and by forced march-

es, advanced to the relief of Ninety-Six. The approach of his Lordship, compelled general Greene to abandon the assault, when engaged hand to hand, with the enemy, and when victory was ready to decide in his favour. The General drew off his army towards Camden in good order, and his Lordship pursued; but general Greene eluded his Lordship, by filing off towards Charleston and taking a strong position upon the high hills of Santee. Lord Rawdon retired to Charleston.

The war, during these operations in the south, raged in Virginia, under the command of general Philips, through the month of April, and the ravages of the enemy exceeded all description. At Petersburg they destroyed all the shipping and about 400 hogsheads of tobacco. At Osborn's Mills, they took two ships and ten smaller vessels, laden with cordage, flour, &c. Four ships and a number of smaller vessels were burnt or sunk, besides many others, destroyed by the Americans, to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy; together with about 3000 hogsheads of tobacco, April 27. On the 30th, they penetrated to Manchester, and destroyed 1200 hogsheads more, from thence they proceeded to Warwick, and laid waste the shipping, both in the River and on the stocks, also extensive rope-walks, tanneries, warehouses and magazines of flour, mills, &c. in one general conflagration, and then embarked on board their shipping.

The Baron Steuben was opposed to this party of marauders; but he could not collect a force sufficient to check their career.

General Washington detached the Marquis La Fayette, with a body of troops to join the Baron; but when he arrived at Baltimore, such was the state of his troops, his military chest, and the public credit, that he was constrained to borrow 2000 guineas, upon the strength of his own credit, April 17th, to enable him to proceed.— Upon the strength of this, he advanced to Richmond, (200 miles) where he was joined by the Baron Steuben, on the 29th with the Virginia militia; and they covered the city of Richmond.

The Marquis La Fayette watched the movements of the enemy, with great zeal and activity; but his force was not sufficient to check all their operations; and gen-

eral Philips entered Petersburg on the 9th of May; where he died, on the 13th.

General Greene, in his letter to the Marquis La Fayette, dated May 1st, thus expressed himself:

“ You may depend upon it, that nothing can equal the sufferings of our little army, but their merits. Let not the love of fame get the better of your prudence, and plunge you into a misfortune, in too eager a pursuit after glory. This is the voice of a friend, not of a general.”

Pending these movements, Lord Cornwallis advanced from Guilford to Wilmington, and left general Greene to pursue his southern expedition. From Wilmington he advanced on the 25th, by forced marches, to join general Philips, and arrived at Petersburg, on the 30th — Philips was dead; but his Lordship found a force of 1800 regulars, which was attached to his command.

Thus reinforced, his Lordship advanced towards Richmond, to dislodge the Marquis La Fayette, who was now destined with about 3000 men only, to enter the lists with the renowned hero of the South.

Flushed with his triumphs, his Lordship in his letter to Sir Henry Clinton, thus expressed himself: “ *The boy cannot escape me.*” The Marquis eluded the movement of his Lordship, and evacuated Richmond, on the 27th.

Lord Cornwallis made a movement to prevent the junction of general Wayne with the Marquis; but the general joined the Marquis with 800 Pennsylvania militia, on the 7th of June.

Lord Cornwallis commenced a system of predatory war, and destroyed more than 2000 hogsheds of tobacco, &c. in his march from Richmond to Williamsburg. — On the 4th of July, he retired towards Portsmouth.

General Wayne, supposing the main British army to have crossed James River, commenced a sudden attack with his 800 militia, upon what he supposed to be their rear guard; but to his surprise, he discovered his Lordship at the head of the main army, ready to receive him. General Wayne saw but one alternative; he advanced to the charge at the head of his column, consisting of about 800 men, and the conflict was sharp; he then availed himself of this first impression, and hastily withdrew, leaving his Lordship in as much surprise as he found him. No pursuit followed, from a cautious fear, lest this

feint (as was supposed,) might draw him into an ambuscade.

His Lordship retired in the night, and effected his march to Portsmouth, and left the Marquis to indulge in a few days repose.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### REVOLUTION CONTINUED.

Immediately after the departure of Sir Henry Clinton from New-York, the hard winter of 1779 or '80, increased in its severities. The North and East Rivers were frozen so hard as to have permitted an army, with its heavy cannon, to pass and re-pass; but the privations and distresses of the American army, under the immediate command of general Washington, were so severe as to prevent him from availing himself of this unexpected event.

Immediately after the fall of Charleston, in May, Sir Henry Clinton returned to New-York, to commence the operations of the season.

About the middle of September, 1780, general Washington retired from Head Quarters, (near New-York) with his suit, general Knox and the Marquis La Fayette, to meet Admiral Terney and Count Rochambeau, at Hartford, (Connecticut) agreeable to appointment; and about the 21st, the parties met accordingly. The avowed object of this conference was to concert measures for the reduction of New-York.

In the midst of this conference, an express arrived from West Point, on the Hudson, announcing the traitorous designs of general Arnold. The council was immediately closed; the parties retired, and general Washington flew to the relief of West Point. On his arrival he found the fortress dismantled, the cannon dismounted, and that Arnold had fled and taken refuge on board the British sloop of war, *Vulture*, then laying in the River.

Whilst his Excellency was employed in repairing the fortress, a prisoner was announced, who proved to be the unfortunate Major Andre, who had volunteered his

services to Sir Henry Clinton, to negotiate the treacherous design. His character was that of a spy; his fate was death! Let us pass over this distressing scene.—The righteous sacrifice greatly interested the feelings, and touched the sympathy of every American breast.\*

The feelings of general Washington upon this eventful occasion, may be seen in the following extract from his private correspondence, of October 13th:

“In no instance since the commencement of the war, has the interposition of Divine Providence, appeared more remarkably conspicuous, than in the rescue of the Fort and garrison at West Point. Andre has met his fate, and with that fortitude that was to have been expected from an accomplished man and a gallant officer; *but I am mistaken if Arnold is not undergoing at this time, the torments of a mental Hell.*”

On the 3d of November, Congress, highly impressed with a sense of the merits of the three distinguished patriots who arrested Major Andre, on his return to New-York, and delivered him a captive at West Point, passed the following resolve:   !

“Resolved, That Congress have a high sense of the virtuous and patriotic conduct of John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac Van Vert; in testimony whereof, ordered that each of them receive annually, two hundred dollars in specie, or an equivalent in the current money of these States, during life; and that the Board of War be directed to procure for each of them, a silver medal, on one side of which shall be a shield, with this inscription, “*Fidelity*,” and on the other, the following motto: “*Vincit amor patriæ*,” and forward them to the Commander-in-Chief, who is requested to present the same, with a copy of this resolution, and the thanks of Congress, for their fidelity, and the eminent service they have rendered their country.”

On the 18th of December, died at Newport, (Rhode-Island) his Excellency, Charles Louis de Terney, Knight of St. John of Jerusalem, late Governor of the Isles of

---

\*The whole transaction between Arnold and Andre, was found in Andre's boot, in the hand writing of Arnold. This contained a plan of the works at West Point, and the manner of delivery, &c. Andre was executed on the 2d of October, 17c0.

France and Bourbon, and Chief Commander of the French squadron in the American seas. He was interred in Trinity church-yard, the next day, with military honors.

All further military operations, were suspended for the season, and the war raged in the West-Indies, between the British and the combined French and Spanish fleets; but the limits of this work will not permit me to enter into the details of foreign war.

Sir Henry Clinton detached general Arnold on a marauding expedition, into Virginia, with about 1600 men, and a number of armed vessels; he laid waste the country upon James River, in several predatory excursions, until his progress was arrested by the appearance of the French squadron from Newport. This fleet put an end to the ravages of Arnold, by capturing and destroying a very considerable part of his fleet; and would have opened the way for the destruction of the traitor, had not a British fleet appeared from New-York, for the relief of Arnold, and by a naval engagement off the capes of Virginia, with the French fleet, opened the way for his escape to New-York.

The frequent changes in the army, owing to short enlistments; the want of discipline amongst the raw troops; the want of pay, clothing, provisions, &c. had repeatedly distressed the army, and were at last accompanied with the revolt of the whole Pennsylvania line, excepting three regiments. In defiance to all the efforts of general Wayne and all the other officers, they siezed on six field-pieces, and took up their march for Princeton.

Sir Henry Clinton, upon the first intelligence, made some important movements from Staten-Island, and sent spies at the same time, to countenance and encourage the revolvers. A committee from Congress, visited the mutineers at Princeton, with liberal assurances, to persuade them to return to their duty; but general Washington sent a strong force and compelled them to return.—A general arrangement was soon made to supply the armies, both with foreign and domestic aid and resources.

About the 1st of May, 1781, Mr. Rivington, (printer in New-York) published an intercepted correspondence between general Washington and Governor Hancock, in which the General represents the unparalleled sufferings



and distresses of the American army and its dependencies, and thus concludes :

“ Distressed beyond expression, at the present situation and future prospects of the army, with regard to provisions, &c. From the posts at Saratoga to that of Dobb’s ferry, inclusive, I believe there is not, (by the returns I have received) at this moment on hand, one day’s supply of meat for the army.”

On the 14th of May, general Washington received the painful tidings that Colonel Greene, with his whole detachment, had been cut off near Croton River, by a party of Delancey’s corps, consisting of about 300 infantry and dragoons. Colonel Greene was wounded and taken prisoner, and afterwards murdered in cold blood. Major Flagg was killed in his quarters.

On the 6th of May, Monsieur de Barras arrived at Boston, in the Concord frigate, to succeed the Chevalier de Terney, in the command of the French squadron at Newport.

When the Count de Rochambeau had announced to general Washington the despatches he had received from France, the General with his suit, generals Knox and Du Portail, repaired immediately to Wethersfield, (Connecticut) where they were met by the French officers, the Count de Rochambeau and the Chevalier Chastellux, on the 21st. The ostensible object of this interview, was to concert measures for the reduction of New-York.

This conference continued about one week, with the greatest harmony and cordiality, when the illustrious characters returned to their posts. General Washington next communicated by letter, the following regulations to the Governors of the several northern States :

“ On the calculations I have been able to form, in concert with the most experienced French and American officers, the operations in view, will require, in addition to the French army, all the Continental battalions from New-Hampshire to New-Jersey, to be completed.” He afterwards added, “ As we cannot count upon their being full, and as a body of militia will also be necessary, I have called upon the several States to hold certain numbers in readiness, to move within one week of the time I may require them.”

These despatches of general Washington, amongst others, were intercepted by one James Moody, who was employed by the British Adjutant-General, and conveyed to New-York. These gave the alarm to Sir Henry Clinton, and he renewed his exertions to prepare for his defence.

At this eventful moment, a reinforcement of 1500 French troops arrived in Boston. These, together with the French troops at Newport, moved on to join general Washington, before New-York. On the 14th of June, the junction was formed complete.

On the 21st, general Washington wrote to the French Admiral at Newport, as follows: "I hope there will be no occasion for a movement to the southward, for the want of force to act against New-York, as I flattered myself that the glory of destroying the British squadron at New-York, is reserved for the King's fleet under your command, and that of the land forces at the same place, for the Allied armies."

On the evening of the 18th, precisely at 8 o'clock, the Allied armies commenced a grand movement, and marched from their encampments, down to New-York, and at 4 the next morning, they were drawn up in order of battle, whilst general Washington and Count Rochambeau, with all the General officers and Engineers, reconnoitered the enemy's works throughout their whole line. The next day they renewed their reconnoitering, and in the afternoon, drew off their troops and returned to their encampments.

These movements, together with the removal of the heavy cannon and mortars, left at Boston in 1776, across the country to North River and down to the army before New-York; as well as the intercepted correspondence, confirmed Sir Henry Clinton in his fears, and led him to withdraw a very considerable force from Lord Cornwallis, for the defence of New-York.

At this eventful moment, Count De Grasse announced his arrival in the Chesapeake Bay, with a fleet of 24 ships of the line, frigates, &c. The Allied Commanders forwarded assurances that they would put their troops in immediate motion, to co-operate with him.

Count de Grasse landed 3,300 troops, under the command of the Marquis de St. Simon, to reinforce the Marquis La Fayette.

Monsieur de Barras, at the same time, sailed from Newport with the French squadron, to join Count De Grasse.

General Washington committed the command of the forces before New-York, to general Heath, and put himself at the head of the Allied armies, and by a rapid movement, marched to Philadelphia; and from thence to the head of the River Elk.

Sir Henry Clinton, in the mean time, despatched Admiral Graves in quest of Count De Grasse. On the 5th of September, he discovered the French fleet in Lynnhaven-bay. At sight of the English fleet, Count De Grasse slipped his cables and put to sea, and at 4 o'clock an action commenced. The French were victorious, and regained the Bay; but the English retired to New-York, to repair.

At this eventful moment, De Barras entered the Bay and joined De Grasse, who sent up his transports to convey the Allied armies down the Bay. The Allied Commanders, at the same time, held an interview with the Count De Grasse, on board the *Ville de Paris*, to settle the plan of operations.

On the 25th, the whole of the Allied armies, joined the Marquis La Fayette, at Williamsburg; amounting to 12,000 men.

Pending these movements, Lord Cornwallis had removed to York-Town, and proceeded to fortify his position.

General Nelson called into service, the militia of Virginia, and took the field in person.

On the 27th, the Allied army moved forward to the distance of two miles only, from York-Town, and encamped about sunset and lay on their arms through the night.

On the 30th, the Count De Grasse moved his whole fleet up to the mouth of York River, and Lord Cornwallis was completely invested in York-Town.

On the 6th of October, the Allies opened their trenches upon his Lordship, at the distance of 600 yards. On the 9th, a cannonade commenced from the American lines, which continued through the night. On the 10th, the French opened a cannonade from their lines, for about eight hours; and on the night of the 10th, a tremendous fire was kept up from the whole line, which continued through the night. The horrors of this scene

were greatly heightened by the conflagration of two British ships, which were set on fire by the shells, and consumed in the night.

On the morning of the 11th, the Allies opened their second parallel, at the distance of 200 yards from the enemy's lines; annoyed by an incessant fire from the redoubts of the enemy. These redoubts were carried by the Allies, at the point of the bayonet; but the captives were spared. The conflict now became desperate, and his Lordship attempted to draw off his troops to Gloucester Point, and if possible, effect his escape; but a violent storm scattered his boats and defeated the plan.

On the 17th, the Allies opened their new batteries and prepared for a general assault; but his Lordship requested a parley, for 24 hours; General Washington consented. On the 18th, commissioners were appointed, and terms of capitulation drawn up and sent in to his Lordship. On the 19th, the articles were signed by his Lordship; and the whole British army marched out, *prisoners of war*. The ships were the conquest of France. The same terms were prescribed by the commissioners to Lord Cornwallis, that had been prescribed to general Lincoln at Charleston, just 18 months before; he was refused the honors of war, and general Lincoln was deputed to receive the sword of his Lordship.

Lord Cornwallis pressed hard for permission to embark the British and German troops to Europe, under suitable engagements not to serve during the war; also that the Tories might be protected; but both were refused. His Lordship was, however, indulged with the permission that the Bonetta sloop of war, might pass unsearched; and many of the most obnoxious Tories escaped from the rage of their injured and insulted countrymen.

Seven thousand troops under the command of Earl Cornwallis, together with 1500 seamen, were the subjects of this convention; together with one frigate of 24 guns, besides transports, (20 of which had been sunk or otherwise destroyed) 75 brass, and 69 iron ordnance, howitzers and mortars. Also a military chest containing 22113 6s. sterling, which, trifling as it was, could not fail to be acceptable to the army.

Five days after the surrender of his Lordship, Admiral Graves again arrived off the Capes of Virginia, with

about 7000 troops from New-York, for the relief of Lord Cornwallis; but it was too late, the Allies were triumphant; and the armament returned to New-York.

His Excellency, General Washington, closed this glorious scene at York-Town, by publishing to the army, both officers and soldiers, in general orders, the grateful effusions of his heart, and ordered the whole to be assembled in divisions and brigades, to attend to divine service, *and render thanks to that God who had given them the victory.*

Congress received the letter of general Washington, on the 24th, announcing the capture of the British army, with the most cordial satisfaction, and immediately resolved to move in procession, at 2 o'clock, to the Lutheran Church, and return public thanks to Almighty God, for crowning with success, the Allied arms of America and France. Congress next resolved that a proclamation be issued for the religious observance of the 13th of December, then next, as a day of public thanksgiving and prayer, throughout the United States.

Thus joy, gratitude and praise to God, were united, and became universal, and swelled with transports, every patriotic breast throughout United America.

Congress resolved, on the 29th, "That thanks be presented to General Washington, Count de Rochambeau, Count De Grasse, and the officers of the different corps, and the men under their command, for their services in the reduction of Lord Cornwallis."

They next resolved, "That a marble column be erected at York-Town, adorned with emblems commemorative of the alliance between the United States and his Most Christian Majesty; and inscribed with a succinct account of the surrendry of the British army."

Congress next resolved, that two stands of colours be presented to general Washington, and two pieces of ordnance be by him presented to Count Rochambeau, as trophies of their illustrious victory; and that the Chevalier de Le Luzerne, be requested to inform his Most Christian Majesty, that it was the wish of Congress, that Count De Grasse might be permitted to accept the same testimonials, with the Count de Rochambeau.

The troops under the command of the Marquis de St. Simon, were embarked for the West-Indies, and the A-

merican troops returned to their former stations, excepting such cavalry and infantry as were necessary to the service of general Greene; these were sent forward in November, under the command of general St. Clair, to co-operate in the southern war.

The French fleet, under the Count De Grasse, sailed at the same time, for the West-Indies, and the operations of the season were generally closed.

His Excellency, General Washington, retired to Philadelphia, to give repose to his mind, as well as to confer with Congress upon the future exigencies of the nation.

One universal expression of gratitude and applause, burst forth from all parts of the country, to the allied heroes who fought under Washington, and triumphed over Britain. Ministers at the altar, of all denominations, caught the sacred flame, and the temples of Almighty God, resounded with gratitude and praise to His great name, throughout United America.



## CHAPTER IX.

### REVOLUTION CONTINUED.

I passed over the operations of the southern war in their chronological order, that the great and interesting subject of the last chapter, might be continued unbroken. Also the operations of the traitor Arnold, at New-London, &c. because I would not *foul* such splendid events with so infamous a name, nor tarnish the glorious achievements of the Allies, with such infamous deeds.—We will now notice the base exploits of Arnold, and then carry forward the southern war.

In the month of September, Sir Henry Clinton detached general Arnold with a strong party, to renew the marauding system, in Connecticut. Arnold proceeded to New-London, landed his troops; carried Forts Griswold and Trumbull, after a brave resistance, and put many of the garrison to the sword, after their surrendry; reduced the town to ashes, and returned to New-York, *as black as he went*.

The officer who entered Fort Griswold, peremptorily demanded, “Who commands this Fort?” To which

Colonel Ledyard replied, "I did, but you do now;" and presented him his sword; this he took and plunged it into the Colonel's breast. A scene of butchery ensued, too cruel to be related.

We noticed in a former chapter, the strong position general Greene had taken among the high hills of Santee. We will now notice a few extracts of letters from general Greene to his friends, which will disclose clearly, the character of the southern war.

While before Ninety Six, general Greene wrote thus to Colonel Davies, May 23d:—"The animosity between the whigs and tories of this State, renders their situation truly deplorable. There is not a day that passes, but there are more or less that fall a sacrifice to this savage disposition. The whigs seem determined to extirpate the tories, and the tories the whigs. Some thousands have fallen in this way, in this quarter; and the evil rages with more violence than ever. If a stop cannot be put to these massacres, the country will be depopulated, as neither whig nor tory can live."

General Greene wrote to Colonel Perkins, on the 5th of June:—"The inhabitants near Parker's Ford, on the Saluda, are in great distresses from the savage conduct of a party of men belonging to Colonel Hammond's regiment; this party plunders without mercy, and murders the defenceless people, just as pique, private prejudice, or personal resentment dictate. Principles of humanity, as well as policy, require that proper measures be taken to restrain these abuses, heal differences, and unite the people as much as possible."

In June, a general exchange of prisoners, took place in the south, and the American prisoners were sent into Virginia and Pennsylvania. Soon after, the families of all such prisoners as resided at Charleston, were ordered to remove out of the province, by Colonel Balfour, the British commander at Charleston.

Near the close of the month, Governor Rutledge resumed the government of South Carolina, and retaliated the conduct of Colonel Balfour, upon the Royalists, by driving them and their families also, within the British line, at Charleston.

On the 7th of September, general Greene made a sudden movement, and attacked Colonel Stewart, at the Eutaw Springs, 60 miles south of Charleston. Both

armies were about 2000 strong; the conflict was sharp and bloody, until general Greene ordered Colonel Williams to advance to the charge with trailed arms. The order was promptly obeyed, amidst a most terrible cannonade and shower of musketry, and they carried all before them; the enemy were routed and put to flight, and the victory was complete. More than 500 prisoners, with 70 wounded, together with about 1000 stand of arms, fell into the hands of the victors.

General Greene lost more than one third of his whole force, in this desperate conflict; yet the enemy abandoned their strong hold; betook themselves to the defence of Charleston, and carried on a system of predatory war.

Congress voted their thanks to general Greene, and the different corps under his command, with their commanders, on the 24th; and directed that he be presented with a British standard and a gold medal.

A mutiny, serious and alarming, broke out at this time, in the army of general Greene, which he quelled by bringing his troops into immediate action, by a sudden movement upon a British post at Dorchester. So sharp was this encounter, and such the disposition of general Greene after the action, that the enemy abandoned their post and retired to the quarter house, on Charleston-Neck, and the State was cleared of the enemy, except Charleston.

On the 14th of December, general Greene disclosed to the Secretary at War, that he was destitute of ammunition, camp utensils, &c. and that he could not command one single quire of paper.

On the 4th of January, 1781, he was joined by general St. Clair, with the troops detached from the conquest of York-Town; and general Greene advanced and took his position near to Charleston.

In this position, general Greene thus expressed himself to the Secretary at War:—" *I have been seven months in the field, without taking off my clothes. Our difficulties are numerous, and our wants so pressing, that I have not a moment's relief from the most painful anxieties.*"

March 11th,—"*A great part of our troops are in a deplorable situation for want of clothing; we have 300 men without arms, and more than 1000 are so naked that they can only be put on duty, in cases of a desperate nature. I feel much for this department; no part of*



Saxony, during the last war, I believe, ever felt the ravaging hand of war with greater severity, than it has been felt here.”\*

April 22d,—“Discontent is daily increasing, and the spirit of mutiny very prevalent. I have been able to prove the fact upon but one man, and he a sergeant of the Pennsylvania line, whom I ordered to be shot this day. I hope this example will deter others from executing the conspiracy of betraying the army into the hands of the enemy, which we have dreaded every night.”

On the 18th of January, 1782, Governor Rutledge convened the Assembly of South Carolina, at Jacksonsbouough, and they confiscated the estates of all the refugees.

General Greene detached Colonel Posey, with 300 men, to join general Wayne in Georgia. The British commander at Savannah, laid waste the country, by burning and destroying all the crops and provisions, extensively upon the borders of the River.

At this time, the state of the army under general Washington, may be seen by the following letter of the Baron De Steuben, dated Fishkill, May 28, 1782:—“Yesterday was the third day our army has been without provisions. Every department is without money and credit. The army could not make a march of one day, for the want of the necessary supplies. Officers and soldiers are exceedingly discontented. You doubtless have heard of the premeditated revolt of the Connecticut line, happily discovered the day previous to that on which it was to have been put in execution. The ringleader was punished with death. Wherever I go I hear complaints which make me dread the most fatal consequences. The distresses of our army, have arrived to the greatest possible height.  
STEUBEN.”

Quotations of similar purport, might be multiplied to a great extent; but these may suffice to shew the wretched state of the armies, as well as the deranged state of the finances. Who that views with attention these facts, can fail to see and acknowledge the special agency of Divine Providence, in crowning with success, the Amer-

---

\*Fourteen hundred widows were made in the single district of Ninety-Six.

ican arms, and thus opening the way for peace at this eventful crisis, when the resources of the country were exhausted, and the hearts of the soldiers ready to sink under the accumulated weight of their sufferings. Let those of us who witnessed these eventful scenes, eye the hand of that God who ruled the destinies of America, and adore that wisdom, power and goodness, that rescued her from the all-devouring grasp of her enemies, and opened the way for her national happiness and glory.

On the 4th of March, the House of Commons resolved, "That the House will consider as enemies to his Majesty and the country, all those who shall advise, or attempt the further prosecution of the war in North America."

On the 2d of August, Sir Guy Carleton and Admiral Digby, announced by letter to general Washington, that negotiations for a general peace, were opened at Paris, and that transports had been prepared in England, to convey the American prisoners in England, to America, to be exchanged.

Two ships soon after arrived, with 583 American prisoners, at Marblehead.

On the 11th of June, the town of Savannah was evacuated by the British, in good order and harmony.

Congress pursued the plan of loans from France and Holland; and through their Ministers, liberal supplies were obtained. All further operations in South Carolina ceased, and Charleston was evacuated on the 14th of December, 1782, in the most perfect order, and in two days, the regular police of the city and government of the State, were restored.

The French troops, rendered so illustrious at the siege of York-Town, now commenced their march for Boston, and embarked for France.

The subject of peace now became general in Europe and America. Negotiations had been opened at Paris, as early as June, under Doctor Franklin, Mr. Jay and Mr. Adams, on the part of America; the Count de Vergennes, on the part of France; with Mr. Fitzherbert and Mr. Oswald, on the part of Great-Britain; and the Count de Aranda, on the part of Spain.

Many points laboured; the negotiation spun out.— The British Ministers could not be prevailed on to take the starting point, and acknowledge the independence of

America, until they had received positive instructions from their court.

The fisheries next laboured with England; and France did not favour the views of America, upon that point.— During this struggle in this council, Mr. Adams left Holland, at the request of Mr. Jay, and repaired to Paris.— Upon consultation, they agreed to negotiate separately with the British Ministers, if the Count de Vergennes did not yield the claims of the United States, on the fisheries, &c. This movement succeeded, and brought the negotiations to a close.

Pending these negotiations, a new scene opened upon the Commander-in-Chief of the American armies. The troops before New-York, became infected with a general mutiny, founded upon a demand for arrearages of pay, with sufficient guarantee before they should be disbanded. His Excellency, General Washington, by his masterly address, quelled this mutiny. He then laid the whole affair before Congress, by letter, in which he urged his desires in the strongest terms, that the army might be gratified. Congress met the wishes of the General and his brave companions in arms, promptly, and voted “that the officers should receive to the amount of five years full pay, in money or securities, at six per cent interest, per annum. instead of half pay for life.” This was satisfactory.

On the 24th of March, it was announced in Congress, by a letter from the Marquis La Fayette, bearing date February 5th, “That the preliminaries of a general peace, had been signed at Paris, on the 24th of February.”—1783.

On the 4th of April, 1783, a confirmation of the signing of the treaty on the 20th of February, arrived at Salem, in the ship *Astria*, Captain John Derby,\* in 22 days from Nantz. Also that the two Sovereigns of France and England, had ratified, and their Ministers exchanged the same, on the 3d of February; from which day, all hostilities were to cease.

On the 10th of April, the treaty was published in the United States. On the 19th, his Excellency, General Washington, proclaimed it in general orders, to the A-

---

\*The same Captain that carried out to Europe, the news of the Lexington battle.—1775.

merican army. This day completed the eighth year of the Revolutionary War.

On or about the middle of June, the Notes of the Financier were received, a resolve of Congress, and a general settlement so far effected with the army, that they were honorably discharged, and returned quietly to their several homes.

On the 18th, his Excellency, General Washington, addressed a circular letter to the Governors and Presidents of the several States, in which he impressively urged the necessity of the following important points:

1. An indissoluble union of all the States, under *one Federal head*.

2. A sacred regard to public justice.

3. The adoption of a proper peace establishment.

4. The prevalence of that pacific and friendly intercourse among the people of the United States, which will induce them to forget their local prejudices and politics; to make those mutual concessions which are requisite to the general prosperity; and in some instances to sacrifice their individual advantages, to the interest of the community. These are the pillars on which the glorious fabric of our independence and national character, must be supported. It remains then, to be my final and only request, that your Excellency will communicate these sentiments to your Legislature, at their next meeting; and that they may be considered as the legacy of one who has ardently wished, upon all occasions, to be useful to his country, and who, even in the shades of retirement, will not fail to implore the Divine benediction upon it.

The Honorable Peter John Van Berekel, Minister Plenipotentiary, from their High Mightinesses, the States-General of the United Netherlands, was admitted to an audience by Congress.—October 31.

On the 2d of November, his Excellency, General Washington, issued his farewell orders to the armies of the United States, in the following style:

“It only remains for the Commander-in-Chief to address himself once more, and that for the last time, to the armies of the United States, (however widely dispersed the individuals who composed them may be,) and to bid them an affectionate—a long farewell,” &c.

Sir Guy Carleton was entrusted with the command of

the Royal army in North America, in May. In August, he received the final orders of the British court, to evacuate the city of New-York; and on the 25th of November, his orders were obeyed, and the city evacuated.

His Excellency, General Washington, with his principal officers, the Governor of the State of New-York, &c. moved in procession, attended by a vast concourse of citizens. The ceremony was conducted with great solemnity, and did honor to the occasion.

When the festivity and hilarity of this interesting scene were closed, his Excellency, General Washington, took an affectionate leave of the officers who had been his brave companions in arms; then calling for a glass of wine, he thus addressed them:

“With a heart full of love and gratitude, I now take leave of you; I most devoutly wish that your latter days may be as prosperous and happy, as your former ones have been glorious and honorable.” He then stretched forth his hand, and each one in succession, approached him and bade a silent adieu. His Excellency withdrew and retired to Philadelphia, and exhibited his accounts to the Comptroller, in his own hand writing. He next retired to Annapolis, where Congress were then sitting, by adjournment, and on the 20th of December, 1783, resigned his commission of Commander-in-Chief.

Agreeable to appointment, and by notice from the President, his Excellency rose from his seat, in the midst of a numerous and brilliant assembly, and with the dignity of himself, addressed the House in an appropriate speech.

The President rose from his seat and addressed his Excellency, in an affectionate and dignified reply. His Excellency withdrew.

Language can no more express the emotions of his soul, than it can paint the true worth and greatness of his character. The affections of Congress and of the audience, did homage to his virtues, by their tears of gratitude, which flowed spontaneously, upon this solemn, this interesting, this momentous occasion.

Thus closed the greatest Revolution that had ever been attempted, accompanied with the greatest displays of wisdom, patience, fortitude, disinterested patriotism, and feats of arms, ever before recorded; and with a gen-

eral success, un contemplated by the most sanguine sons of liberty.

The liberties of America, were now sealed by the resignation of that illustrious Chief, who had been the instrument, under God, of obtaining and securing all her blessings, and on whose sword, hung the destinies of America.

The Father of his country, retired to his seat in Virginia; there to enjoy in the bosom of repose, the prayers and benedictions of a free and grateful people.

The definitive treaty between Great-Britain and the United States, (accompanied with the joint letter of the American Commissioners, bearing date, Passy, September 10th) was laid before Congress, on the 13th of December, and referred to a special committee, who made their report on the 14th of January, to the acceptance of the nine States then present. Thus the treaty was ratified, and became the law of the land.

On the 13th of May, 1783, the officers of the American army, formed themselves into a Society, and entered into the following compact:

“The officers of the army, do hereby in the most solemn manner, associate, constitute and combine themselves into a *Society of friends, to endure so long as they shall endure, or any of their eldest male posterity; and in failure thereof, the collateral branches, who may be judged worthy of becoming its supporters and members.*” This Society, thus formed, was denominated the Society of *Cincinnati*; in honor of that illustrious Roman Chief, Quintus Cincinnatus, whose virtuous valour, saved his country.

## **PART V.**

### **CHAPTER I.**

#### **CAUSES THAT LED TO A CHANGE IN THE GOVERNMENT OF THE UNITED STATES**

At the close of the American Revolution, the flood-gates of commerce were thrown open to the world.—Great Britain, France and Holland, through their own Agents, crowded their manufactures into the American market, which not only infringed upon the rights of the American merchants, but brought on collisions between the merchants and the government. To obviate the evils and promote the public revenue, Congress attempted to lay a national impost, which failed. This opened the eyes of the American people, to the necessity of a more efficient government.

Congress, in the year 1784, passed resolutions recommending it to the several States, “to vest the United States, in Congress assembled, for the term of fifteen years, with powers to prevent any goods, wares or merchandise, from being imported into, or exported from, the United States, in vessels belonging to, or navigated by, the subjects of any power with whom the United States shall not have formed treaties of commerce,” &c.

In February, 1785, Congress appointed John Adams, Esq. as Minister Plenipotentiary, to the court of Great Britain, for the express purpose of negotiating a commercial treaty. The mission failed, upon the ground that Congress possessed no powers to enforce the due observance of such treaty. The contempt which Great Britain thus expressed towards the powers of Congress, opened the eyes of the people, and led them again to see the necessity of a more efficient government. A spirit of discontent burst forth in Boston, and filled their Gazettes with warm resolutions, which resulted in an address to their Legislature; a petition to Congress, and a circular letter to the merchants of all the trading towns upon the sea coast, in the United States. This memorial was backed by another of similar purport, from the merchants of Philadelphia. The subject was felt throughout the nation, and the alarm became general.

Congress met these petitions by originating several resolutions, recommending it to the several States to vest in Congress, sufficient powers, under certain restrictions, to regulate commerce. &c. But such was the jealousy of the States, that these resolutions were not adopted, and the discontent of the people became more serious and alarming.

Mr. Adams also presented a memorial to the British Minister, complaining of the infraction of the 7th article of the treaty of peace, on the part of Great Britain, in withholding the military posts on the western frontier.

Lord Carmarthen met the memorial with an explicit acknowledgement of the fact; alledging at the same time, that America had given just cause for this, by violating the 4th article of the treaty, in withholding the payment of such bona fide debts as were embraced in that article, and added, "whenever this embarrassment shall be removed, the 7th article shall be fulfilled, and the posts delivered up," &c.

This declaration opened the eyes of Congress to a true sense of their situation, and shewed the government to be nothing more than a rope of sand. In this state of things, the evidences of public debt, were undergoing a rapid depreciation, under the corruptest system of speculation, until they were run down to the pitiful sum of two shillings and sixpence on the pound.

Alarmed for the safety and honor of the nation, the Legislature of Virginia, in January, 1786, adopted a resolution for the appointment of Commissioners, to convene at Annapolis, with such as might be appointed by the other States, to take into consideration the commercial state of the nation; establish a uniform system, and report to the States, for their ratification. Five States only, were represented in this council, and the Commissioners rose and abandoned the object; but in their report, they recommended that Commissioners be appointed by all the States, to meet at Philadelphia, in May next, for the express purpose of revising the articles of confederation, and enlarging the powers of Congress.

On the 21st of February, 1787, Congress met the recommendation of the Commissioners at Annapolis, by the following resolve:



“Resolved, That in the opinion of Congress, it is expedient that, on the 2d of May next, a convention of delegates be convened at Philadelphia, who shall have been appointed by the several States, for the express purpose of revising the articles of confederation, and reporting to Congress and the several Legislatures, such alterations and provisions therein, as shall, when agreed to in Congress, and confirmed by the States, render the Federal Constitution adequate to the exigencies of government, and the preservation of the Union.”

On the 19th of May, 1787, this Convention met at Philadelphia, agreeable to appointment; twelve States were represented; but Rhode-Island declined.

His Excellency, General Washington, was unanimously chosen President; Charles Thompson, Esq. was chosen Secretary; and the Convention proceeded, with closed doors, to the momentous subject before them.

When the Convention had accomplished the object of their labors, and agreed upon a form of government, they resolved, “That it should be laid before the United States, in Congress assembled, and from thence be submitted to a Convention of delegates, chosen in each State by the people thereof, under the recommendation of its Legislature, for their assent and ratification.—That as soon as nine States shall have so ratified the constitution, it shall be carried into operation by the United States, in Congress assembled.”

The President was then directed, by the unanimous resolve of the Convention, to transmit the same to Congress; which was accordingly done under his signature, September 17th, with the following remarks:

“The Convention have resolved that this constitution be transmitted to Congress, as the result of a spirit of amity, and of that mutual deference and concession which the peculiarity of their political situation, rendered indispensable.

“That it will meet the full and entire approbation of every State, (adds the President) is not to be expected; but each will doubtless consider, that had her interests been alone consulted, the consequences might have been particularly disagreeable or injurious to others. That it is liable to as few exceptions as could reasonably have been expected, we hope and believe. That it may pro-

note the lasting welfare of our country, so dear to us all and secure her freedom and happiness, is our ardent wish."

Previous to the meeting of this convention, an alarming insurrection had broken out in the State of Massachusetts, under Captain Daniel Shays, which threatened the subversion of the government, and filled the country with alarm. This doubtless, had its influence in uniting the Convention, and the nation in a general system of government.

Pending the State deliberations upon the merits of the new constitution, in their several State Conventions, a series of numbers appeared in the New-York papers, under the signature of the *Federalist*, which displayed a strength of character and talents, that bore down all opposition, and evinced to the people of the United States, that under God, the Federal Constitution was destined to become the palladium of United America.

Eleven States assented to, and adopted the Constitution in their several Conventions, promptly; and the necessary preparations as promptly made, to carry it into effect.

Electors were chosen by the several States, agreeable to the rules prescribed by the Constitution, who met in December, and gave an unanimous suffrage for George Washington, as President, and a majority for John Adams, as Vice-President. A new Congress was chosen, which was convened in the city of New-York, in March following. On the 6th of April, a quorum of both Houses was formed. On the 14th, President Washington was officially notified of his appointment. On the 30th, he was inducted into office, in the presence of the most numerous, brilliant and dignified assembly, and upon the most interesting and eventful occasion that United America had ever witnessed. A scene wherein it was difficult to say which of the two was most admired, the *greatness* of the *hero*, or the *goodness* of the *man*.

## PART VI.

### CHAPTER I.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT—ORIGIN OF PARTY.

When the President had been regularly inducted into office, he retired to the Hall of the Senate, where he convened the House of Representatives, and addressed both Houses in a most dignified and appropriate speech, in which were conspicuously displayed, *the modesty of the man; the wisdom of the statesman, and the affectionate solicitude of the Chief Magistrate.*

The Senate and House of Representatives, returned, each, a most respectful and affectionate reply; highly expressive of that mutual harmony that glowed in their breasts.

A permanent revenue for the support of government and the public faith, became one of the first objects of legislation. To effect this, Mr. Madison, of Virginia, introduced a bill for the purpose of raising a revenue by the way of impost and tonnage duties, which was regularly adopted.

Mr. Madison next brought forward a proposition that several new articles be added to the constitution, by way of amendment, and submitted to the several States for their approbation. Twelve new articles were accordingly agreed upon and submitted to the several States, and by a majority of three-fourths of them, approved and added to the Constitution. The object of these amendments, was to promote a more general harmony in the public mind.

The officers of the Cabinet, next claimed the attention of Congress, or rather of the President, whose duty it was to make the nominations. Thomas Jefferson was accordingly nominated to the office of Secretary of State. Colonel Hamilton was nominated Secretary of the Treasury; General Knox, Secretary at War, and Edmund Randolph, Esq. Attorney-General.

The President next proceeded to nominate the Judiciary Department, at the head of which he placed the Honorable John Jay, Esq. With Mr. Jay were associ-

ated the Honorable John Rutledge, James Wilson, William Cushing, Robert Harrison, and John Blair, Esqs. All which were approved and regularly inducted into their several offices.

The same anxious solicitude attended the President, in selecting the officers of the District Courts; and thus through the wisdom and integrity of the Chief Magistrate, the departments of government were filled with the first weight of talents and respectability, as well as responsibility, in the nation.

Who that surveys the weight of character that filled the offices of President, Vice-President, and all the above departments, can fail to acknowledge that such an assemblage of virtue and dignified worth, has rarely, if ever, been attached to any government on earth.

Congress next passed the following resolutions:

1. "That the House consider an adequate provision for the support of the public credit, as a matter of high importance to the national honor.

2. "That the Secretary of the Treasury, be directed to prepare a plan for that purpose, and report the same to the House, at their next meeting."

Congress then adjourned on the 29th of September, to meet on the 1st of January.

What wisdom, what firmness, what integrity, what zeal for the public good, and yet what concord and unanimity between the several departments of government! All, all conspired to shew that the power of God, the wisdom of God, and the goodness of God, had all been conspicuously displayed in laying the foundation of the government of Federal America.

On the 15th of October, the President commenced his tour through the Northern States, accompanied by Major Jackson and Mr. Lear, his private Secretary. He extended his route as far as Portsmouth; visited the theatre of the first campaign, and returned to New-York on the 13th of November.

To shew the numerous expressions of affection and respect which flowed from the constituted authorities, corporate bodies and literary institutions, particular trades and occupations, the militia, together with every class of citizens, who vied with each other, in their respectful and affectionate addresses to the father of his country, accompanied with illuminations, military par-

ades, triumphal arches, &c. would exceed the powers of my pen.

The affectionate warmth and sincerity with which President Washington reciprocated the addresses of his fellow-citizens, may be seen in the following reply to the address of the citizens of the town of Boston.

"I rejoice with you, my fellow-citizens, in every circumstance that declares your prosperity; I do so the most cordially, because you have well deserved to be happy.

"Your love of liberty; your respect for the laws; your habits of industry, and your practice of the moral and religious obligations, are the strongest claims to national and individual happiness. And they will I trust, be firmly and lastingly established."

The president passed by Rhode-Island, because she had not yet joined the Federal Union.

In the month of November, North Carolina, by her State Convention, adopted the Constitution, making the 12th pillar in the National Government.

On the 8th of January, 1790, the President opened the second session of the first Congress, by a dignified address to both Houses. In this speech, the President called up the attention of Congress to the necessity of providing for the public defence, by a well regulated militia together with a serious attention to such manufactories as might be essential to their military defence.—The sentiments of the President upon the subject of literature, were thus expressed:

"Nor am I less persuaded that you will agree with me in opinion, that there is nothing that better deserves your patronage, than the promotion of science and literature. Knowledge is in every country, the surest basis of public happiness," &c.

This speech was received in both Houses, with the most affectionate zeal and concord.

The report of the Secretary of the Treasury, in obedience to the resolution of Congress, of the 21st of September, claimed the next attention of Congress.

"Good faith," says the Secretary in his report, "is recommended, not only by the strongest inducements of political expediency, but is enforced by considerations of still greater authority," &c.

"The debt of the United States, is the price of liberty.

The faith of the nation has been frequently pledged for it, with solemnities that gave peculiar force to the obligation," &c.

On the 28th, this report came regularly before the House for discussion: but it was postponed until the 8th of February, to give time for consideration and reflection.

On the 8th of February, Congress resumed this interesting and important subject, which opened a field of debate that shook the government to its foundation.

Provision was made for the foreign debt, cordially and unanimously, but the provision for the domestic debt, excited great warmth of feeling, and may fairly be said to be the origin of all that division of sentiment, which for a long time, agitated the national councils.

The evidences of the domestic debt, were then current in market at 2s. 6d. on the pound, and this it was contended, was all that the holders of the debt had a right to claim. To this it was objected, that the original holders ought not to be defrauded of their just rights, because knaves and fools had parted with theirs for a less sum than its nominal value.

Mr. Madison then attempted to introduce a resolution that would do justice to both parties, by granting to the original holder, the full value of the face of his debts, and to the speculator, the full value of what he honestly paid in fair market. This opened a torrent of debate, with such warmth and zeal, as shook the government to its centre. The resolution was lost, and the report of the Secretary, *that the full amount of all the evidences of the national debt, should be religiously paid*, was finally carried.

The next question that claimed the attention of Congress, was the assumption of the State debts, in connection with the national debt, stiled the funding system, which was also recommended by the Secretary of the Treasury. This opened another warm and animated field of debate, and at this time was rejected; but a bill having passed soon after, for removing the government from New York to Philadelphia, for ten years, and from thence to the banks of the Potomac, as a permanent establishment; the subject was resumed, and the bill to establish the funding system, was finally adopted.

It was next proposed that certain deductions should

be made voluntarily, by the public creditors, and that the debt become irredeemable, otherwise than by the consent of the creditor, except in certain specific proportions.

This resolution opened again a torrent of debates; but was finally carried in the affirmative.

The proceeds of the sales of the public lands, lying in the western territory, together with the surplus revenue, and a loan of two millions of dollars, which the President was authorised to borrow at 5 per cent, were to be applied as a sinking fund, for the redemption of the public debt.

This measure laid the foundation of public credit, upon a basis that raised the depreciated debt from 2s. 6. immediately up to 20s. on the pound; and in a short time after, to a handsome per centage above par. The strength thus given to public credit, realized immediate fortunes to the extensive holders of public securities, and gave a general spring to the affairs of the nation.—New efforts and new energies sprang up throughout the nation. Public confidence, public and private credit, a spirit of agriculture, commerce, and enterprise, universally prevailed. A foundation was laid for all that unrivalled prosperity America has enjoyed, and all that greatness she is destined to enjoy.

On the 12th of August, Congress adjourned, to meet at Philadelphia, on the first Monday of December following.

During these proceedings of Congress, a general hostile disposition appeared amongst the western and southern Indians, which threatened the peace of the western frontiers. To obviate this calamity, Colonel Willett was despatched on an embassy to the Creek Nation, with overtures of peace, which so far succeeded as to cause M'Gillivray to repair to New-York, with several of his Chiefs, and there settle a peace, on the 7th of August, 1790.

Spain not only attempted to defeat this treaty, at New-York, by her agents; but continued to embarrass the western section of the United States, by her restrictions upon the navigation of the Mississippi River.

Great-Britain also continued to hold the western posts and through their influence, to excite the savages in their vicinity to acts of hostility with the United States.

Upon the return of Mr. Adams from the court of London, the President had empowered Mr. Gouverneur Morris, (then in Europe) to effect a general negotiation with the British Cabinet, upon the points in controversy; but it again failed, and the savages upon the western frontiers, continued their murders and depredations.

The President improved this recess of Congress, to visit his beloved seat at Mount Vernon, and give permanence to his health, by relaxing his mind from the cares of public life.

Rhode-Island still stood aloof from the Federal Union. To conciliate the passions and feelings of this State, the President made an excursion into Rhode-Island, previous to his departure for his seat in Virginia; where he was received with all those expressions of grateful affection and respect, which had been shewed him in his tour through the other New-England States.

On the first Monday of December, the President met Congress, at Philadelphia, agreeable to their adjournment, by a customary speech. He noticed particularly, the pleasure he derived from the flattering prospects of public credit, and a productive revenue, &c. as being not only a "pledge of the fertility of the national resources, but an honorable testimony of the patriotic integrity of the mercantile part of the community."

This address was echoed from both Houses of Congress, with all that glow of mutual confidence and affection which had marked the replies of former sessions.

The Secretary of the Treasury, then followed with sundry reports, recommending such further measures as were judged necessary to complete the establishment of public credit.

The first object recommended in the report, was a duty on wines, spirits, teas, coffee, &c. and domestic distilled spirits. The bill introduced upon this report, opened the flood-gates of the passions, and produced a torrent of debate; in which reason, good sense, and even common sense and common decency, were carried away in the storm. A general increase of the duties on imported articles was proposed, as a substitute for the duty on domestic spirits; also an amendment to the bill was proposed, by striking out the duty on domestic spirits, and lost, 36 to 16. The original bill was carried, 35 to 21.



The Senate originated a bill, agreeable to the report of the Secretary of the Treasury, for the establishment of a national bank. This opened again the field of wordy war, and the whole artillery of the south, was played off against the bill, as being unconstitutional, as well as inexpedient. These arguments were met by the firmness of the north; and these two great sections of the Union, now appeared for the first time, arrayed against each other.

To allay the storm, the President called upon the heads of departments, to examine the subject, and give their opinions in writing.

The Secretary, in this council, supported his report, against the opinions of the Secretary of State and the Attorney-General; and when the bill was passed, it received the signature of the President; but the parties were still at issue in feeling, and never became reconciled.

These great questions involved also, the question of a due balance of power, between the Federal and State governments.

One party claimed and maintained, that the whole strength of the nation, depended upon a preponderance of power in the Federal government. The other considered that the safety of the nation, depended on maintaining such a balance between the Federal and State governments, that an equilibrium should be preserved, and each remain independent, agreeable to the true sense of the Constitution.

This division of sentiment, became involved in every great national question, for many years; but is now most happily, wholly done away.

Thus balanced, the parties continued to act until the 3d of March, 1791, when, after passing an act to augment the military establishment of the United States, Congress adjourned.

The feelings of the parties in Congress, were now generally diffused through the nation, and the people began to be engaged in the controversy, with zeal and bitterness.

## CHAPTER II.

## INDIAN WAR—AFFAIRS OF GOVERNMENT, &amp;c.

Pending this strife of party, and the collisions of this wordy war in Congress, an Indian war broke out upon the north western frontier, which became serious and alarming in its operations and effects. The President had exhausted the whole field of pacific arrangements, to avert this storm, but without effect; and he saw no other alternative, but the sword. A military force was accordingly sent against the Indian settlements upon the Sciota and Wabash Rivers, under the command of that old revolutionary veteran, General Harmar. About the 15th of October, he commenced his operations, at the head of 1500 men, and laid waste the villages of the enemy, upon the Sciota, without much opposition, and commenced a retrograde movement, to re-gain his position at Fort Washington. Near the village of Chillicothe, a detachment of 300 men under Colonel Harden, supported by Majors Wyllys, McMillan and Fountain, fell into an Indian ambush. Majors Wyllys and Fountain, fell early in the conflict, and Colonel Harden effected his retreat, with the loss of more than two-thirds of his party. General Harmar made good his retreat, and returned to Fort Washington.

The President availed himself of an act of Congress, and caused a body of levies to be raised, for six months, and appointed Major-General Arthur St. Clair to the command, as successor to General Harmar; with full powers to treat with the savages and settle a peace.

Things being thus arranged for the north-western expedition, the President commenced his southern tour, to pay a visit to that section of the Union, as he had done to the northern or eastern, before. Here he was highly gratified to find in every state, the same cordial expressions of the most affectionate regard and respect, that had so much delighted him in his northern tour.—In his letter to Gouverneur Morris, of the 28th of July, he thus expressed himself:

“In my late tour through the southern States, I experienced great satisfaction in seeing the good effects of the general government, in that part of the Union, &c. Industry has there taken place of idleness, and econ-

omy of dissipation. The establishment of public credit, is an immense point gained, in our national concerns. A late instance has been given, of the confidence reposed in our measures, by the rapidity with which the subscriptions to the national bank were filled. In two hours after the books were opened, the whole number of shares were taken up, and four thousand more applied for, than were allowed by the institution," &c.

The recruiting service progressed so slowly, that the President availed himself of that part of the act of Congress, that authorised him to call a force, to any extent, of mounted militia, in defence of the western frontier. He accordingly sent forward two expeditions, in the spring of 1791, against the Indian settlements on the Wabash River; which laid waste their villages and corn-fields; destroyed many of their warriors, and brought off their old men, women and children.

The object of this predatory warfare, was to compel the enemy to settle a just and equitable peace. The object failed; the enemy were exasperated, but not humbled. Their renewed murders and ravages, called up the attention of the nation, to the causes that excited and promoted these savage depredations. This was traced to the influence of the British, at the western military posts. The President remonstrated against this procedure to Lord Dorchester, Governor-General of Canada.

At this eventful moment, the second Congress convened at Philadelphia, October 24th, 1791, agreeable to adjournment.

The President, in his speech at the opening of the session, congratulated Congress upon the prosperous state of the nation, &c. and thus concluded:

"It is desirable upon all occasions, to unite with a firm and steady adherence to constitutional and necessary acts of government, the fullest evidence of a disposition, as far as may be practicable, to consult the wishes of every part of the community, and to lay the foundations of the public administration in the affections of the people."

This speech was cordially received, and as cordially echoed by both Houses of Congress.

Congress next proceeded to take into consideration, a bill "for apportioning the Representatives of the several States, according to the first enumeration." This bill

embraced the number of one for every thirty thousand. A motion was made to amend the bill, by striking out the word thirty, which excited some warmth of feeling and expression, but was finally lost. Several other amendments were introduced, viz. thirty-five, thirty-four, and thirty-three thousand; but they were all lost, and the House passed the original bill.

The Senate amended the bill, by fixing the ratio at thirty-three thousand, and returned it to the House; but they adhered to their former vote, and the bill was lost.

The House originated another bill, very similar to the first, which passed with but few remarks. This bill the Senate amended, by enlarging the number of Representatives by an indiscriminate apportionment upon the States collectively, not individually, which at first was rejected by the House, and afterwards agreed to, upon a conference. This bill was rejected by the Executive, as unconstitutional, and returned to the House, with his reasons.

The House then introduced a third bill, apportioning the Representatives to every thirty-three thousand, which passed both Houses, and was approved by the President.

Congress next proceeded to pass a bill for the establishment of a uniform militia system, throughout the Union, agreeable to the recommendation of the President, in 1789.

On the 3d of November, General St. Clair assembled an army of about 2000 men, in the vicinity of the Miami villages, and fortified his position.

Thus posted, the General contemplated to commence the work of destruction, the next morning. But the enemy, alive to their safety, surprised the party of militia that formed the advance guard, at break of day; put them to flight, and drove them back in great disorder, upon the main body. General St. Clair beat to arms, and rallied his whole force to the charge, to support the militia; but all in vain; the enemy surrounded his camp, and poured in a deadly fire from the thicket, that strewed the field with death.

The contest now became desperate. The savages rushed to the combat, regardless of danger and fearless of death, and penetrated even to the mouths of the cannon; the Artillerists were slain; the guns were taken, and the savages penetrated the camp. General

Butler fell, mortally wounded. General St. Clair ordered the charge of the bayonet to be renewed; the order was promptly obeyed; the enemy were repulsed; the camp was cleared, and the cannon recovered.

General St. Clair ordered Major Clarke to charge the enemy in front, and clear the road, that the army might be recovered from ruin, by a retreat. The order was promptly obeyed; the road was cleared, and the army commenced a flight, which was closely pursued by the savages, about four miles. The savages then returned to share the spoils of the camp; and General St. Clair continued his flight to Fort Jefferson, (about 30 miles.) From thence he retired to Fort Washington.

The severity of this bloody action, may be seen by the following statement of the losses of the American army:

Thirty-eight commissioned officers killed in the action. Five hundred and ninety-three non-commissioned officers and privates, killed and missing.

Twenty-two commissioned officers wounded, (several died of their wounds.) Two hundred and forty-two non-commissioned officers and privates, also wounded. The whole American camp and Artillery, fell into the hands of the enemy.

Seldom has it fallen to the lot of the historian, to record a more signal overthrow, than this sustained by the army under the command of General St. Clair.

Such was the uneasiness of the public mind, that the General requested a Court Martial to investigate his conduct; but there were not left in the army, officers of rank sufficient to constitute a Court.

Congress gratified the wishes of the General, by appointing a special committee, to hold a Court of Inquiry, who exculpated him in explicit terms, and the public mind became quiet.

Congress took the alarm, and attempted to arrest the depredations that were expected to result from this signal defeat, by augmenting the army. A bill was accordingly introduced, which met with an opposition more warm and pointed, than any that had hitherto agitated that House; but the bill was carried, and the Secretary of the Treasury was directed to devise ways and means for the support of this army, and report to the House. The

Secretary reported accordingly. The report, after a warm debate, was accepted.

Congress adjourned on the 8th of May, to the 5th of November.

Thus terminated the conflicting passions of Congress; but they carried the seeds of them into their retirement, where they were sown amongst their constituents, and became general throughout the nation.

Thus we have traced the origin of party; the causes that produced it, and some slight effects that have resulted from those causes. I shall avoid all remarks, and proceed to disclose their effects with all the *impartiality, the nature, importance and delicacy* of the subject demand; as far as my pen can be controuled by the principles of *candour* and of *truth*.

The bold measures devised and pursued by the Secretary of the Treasury, gave an early alarm to the Secretary of State, which grew and acquired strength, as the Administration progressed, until it issued in open and irreconcilable variance and opposition.

The fundamental principles of this variance, were a jealousy that the one was the advocate for too great an accession of power to the Administration, or rather to the Constitution, through the Executive; and that the other was disposed to place more dependance on the State governments, than was consistent with the safety of the General government and the nation. Here they were at issue.

The wisdom, virtue, integrity, as well as high popularity of the Executive, held a balance between the parties, that preserved the government, and kept the nation steady. To effect this, he addressed a letter to the Secretary of State, bearing date, August 23d, 1792.

After remarking upon the foreign relations of the government, the President thus proceeds:

"How unfortunate, and how much is it to be regretted then, that while we are encompassed upon all sides with avowed enemies and insidious friends, internal dissensions should be harrowing and tearing our vitals. The last, to me is the most serious, the most alarming, and the most affecting of the two," &c. "In this way, the government must inevitably be torn asunder, and in my opinion, the fairest prospect of happiness and prosperity

that ever presented itself to man, will be lost, forever," &c.

"I do not mean to apply this advice or these observations, to any particular person or character. I have given them in the same general terms, to other officers of the government,\* because the disagreements which have arisen from the difference of opinions, and the attacks which have been made upon almost all the measures of government and most of its Executive officers,† have for a long time filled me with painful sensations, and cannot fail, I think, of producing unhappy consequences, at home and abroad."

This friendly, yet gentle admonition, not producing the desired effect, the President addressed the following to the Secretary of the Treasury, in answer to his reply to a former address, upon the same subject :

"I regret, deeply regret, the difference of opinion that has divided you and another principal officer of the government ; and wish devoutly, there could be an accommodation of them, by mutual yieldings. For I will frankly and solemnly declare, that I believe the views of both to be pure and well meant, and that experience only will decide, with respect to the salubrity of the measures which are the objects of dispute.

"Why then, when some of the best citizens of the United States, men of discernment, uniform and tried patriots, who have no sinister views to promote, but are chaste in their ways of thinking and acting, are to be found, some on one side and some on the other, of the questions which have caused these agitations ; why should you be so tenacious of your opinions, as to make no allowance for the other," &c.

"I have a great and sincere regard for you both, and ardently wish that some line could be marked out, by which both of you could walk."

Thus far for the origin of party, in the United States, which at this time began to become seriously involved in

---

\*The Secretary of the Treasury and the Attorney-General.

†In the Gazette of the United States, on the part of the Treasury, and the National Gazette, on the part of the Department of State.

the politics of Europe ; but more immediately, in that wonderful phenomenon, the French Revolution.

The opposition to the excise law, had been serious in the back counties of Pennsylvania, west of the Mountains, and now became alarming.

In September, 1791, (soon after the excise act was passed) the malcontent counties held a meeting at Pittsburg, and passed a set of resolutions, in confirmation of those which had been passed in their county meetings ; proscribing all such persons as should attempt to execute the excise laws, as enemies to the country, and unworthy of public confidence. These measures took such effect that the President recommended a revision of the excise law, in October, which was finally passed in May following, with the special intent to remove all such parts of said law, as could be reasonably objected to. This produced no effect ; the opposition continued, and the counties held another meeting at Pittsburg, and appointed a committee of correspondence, to call forth the opposition of the nation.

The President issued his proclamation, exhorting and admonishing all persons to desist from all combinations or proceedings, tending to obstruct the execution of the laws, and calling on the civil magistrates to do their duty, and keep the peace. Prosecutions were directed to be instituted against all offenders, according to due course of law.

This proclamation produced no effect. Both magistrates and people were alike involved in the opposition, and the laws became silent, in the midst of a whiskey mob.

On the 5th of November, agreeable to adjournment, Congress again convened. The President opened the session with a speech, as usual, in which he touched upon the Indian war, whiskey insurrection, &c. and thus concluded :

“ I entertain a strong hope that the state of the National Finances, is now sufficient to enable you to enter upon a systematic and effectual arrangement for the regular redemption and discharge of the public debt, according to the right which has been reserved to the government.”

This speech was kindly received, and cordially answered by both Houses.



The subject of the National Debt, engrossed more of the attention of Congress, than the limits of this work will permit me to notice. The Secretary of the Treasury proposed additional taxes on pleasure horses, carriages, &c. in order to enable the revenue to meet the exigences of government. This was met by a motion for postponement, and another to reduce the military establishment, which agitated the feelings and passions of Congress, until the 4th of January, when it was rejected. The plan for redeeming the public debt, failed also, at this time.

The President availed himself of a law passed in August, 1790, for borrowing twelve millions of dollars, to be applied to the payment of the foreign debt, and empowered the Secretary of the Treasury to open loans for that purpose, to meet such sums of the foreign debt, as might become due at the end of the year 1791. These loans were opened accordingly.

Instructions were given to the Agent of the United States, in Europe, in May, 1791, to apply the proceeds of future loans, in payments to France, except such sums as should be otherwise specifically appropriated. Certain plans of the National Assembly of France, for converting these payments into supplies for St. Domingo, were intimated by the French Minister of Marine, which diverted their application for a time. At the same time, the Secretary of the Treasury drew into the United States, such parts of these loans, as were designed to apply to the sinking fund.

At this eventful moment, an insurrection broke out in St. Domingo, August, 1791, that involved the white population in one general and indiscriminate butchery. In this state of confusion, the Secretary of the Treasury suffered a portion of the instalments, actually due to France, to remain unpaid.

On the 23d of January, Mr. Giles, of Virginia, introduced several resolutions, requiring information from the Treasury, upon the whole subject. These resolutions were adopted.

The Secretary of the Treasury met these resolutions with such a full and ample statement, as was highly satisfactory to the House. Mr. Giles, however, was not satisfied but introduced sundry other resolutions, upon the same subject, tending pointedly to criminate the

Secretary of the Treasury, with a special clause, directing "that a copy of them be transmitted to the President."

These resolutions, after a torrent of debate, were rejected by an overwhelming majority. On the 4th of March, 1793, Congress adjourned to the 1st of December next.

Parties in the United States were now distinctly formed, and distinguished by the names of Federalist and Democrat.

Such had become the warmth and bitterness of party feeling, that these resolutions were designed to criminate, not only the Secretary of the Treasury, as an ambitious man, aiming at tyranny and usurpation, but the Executive also, as the abettor of his measures and an accomplice in the plan. The reputation of the Secretary was not altogether invulnerable; but the popularity of the President, stood high above the reach of party calumny, and enabled him to hold the balances with a steady hand.

At this eventful period, the French Revolution had so far progressed, as that the National Convention had succeeded the National Assembly; brought the King to the guillotine, and given full scope to the reign of terror, under the mask of liberty and equality, in France.

The President of the United States, clearly foresaw that without an efficient government, the people of America would become entangled in the vortex of the French Revolution, and the new Federal Constitution, be swallowed up in the general wreck of discord, anarchy and confusion.

Pending these convulsions, the Electors of United America, were called upon again, to fill the offices of the two Chief Magistrates of the nation. Warm and violent was the strife of party; but the Electors were true to their country, and gave a unanimous suffrage for George Washington, as President, and a majority for John Adams, as Vice-President; and the President was prevailed upon, by the solicitations of his friends, once more to take the Chair.

Great efforts had been and still continued to be made, to settle a peace with the hostile Indians, on the north-western frontier, and appearances had now become more favourable; but a general peace had not yet been con-

cluded. The President pursued his preparations to prosecute the war.

The alarming state of things in Europe, arising out of the French Revolution, now engrossed the attention of the President of the United States. Early in April, news arrived that France had declared war against England and Holland. On the 17th, the President repaired to the Seat of Government, and on the 18th, addressed to the Heads of Departments, (*his Cabinet Council*) several important queries, relating to the conduct of the United States towards France; and requested their attendance at his house, to decide upon the momentous subject.

The Council met accordingly, and after mature deliberation, were unanimous in their opinion, "that a proclamation ought to be issued, announcing the neutrality of the United States, towards all belligerent powers," &c.

They were also unanimous, that a Minister ought to be received from France; but they were divided in sentiment, as to the terms upon which such Minister ought to be received.

Upon the question, "whether it was advisable to convene Congress," the Council were unanimous in the negative.

The President next requested the Council to express their opinions, in writing, upon the subjects on which they were divided, with their reasons and authorities at large; and at the same time, directed the Attorney-General to prepare a proclamation; which was done accordingly, and approved by the Council; signed by the President, on the 22d, and ordered to be published.

The publication of this proclamation of neutrality, opened a field for the display of those passions, upon the great theatre of the nation, which we have heretofore witnessed in the national councils. All the bitterness of party, burst forth, in loud acclamations against the measure. The partizans of France, claimed, that in gratitude, the United States were bound to make common cause with France. Base, avaricious and unprincipled men, denounced the proclamation as an abridgement of that commerce, which they had calculated to turn to their advantage, in the traffic of articles, contraband of war; and they joined in the party clamours. In this state of things, the government of France, recall-

ed from the United States, the Minister of the crown; and sent out Mr. Genet, a subtle, artful, violent jacobin.

Mr. Genet arrived at Charleston, (South Carolina) on the 8th of April, 1793, where he was received by the Governor of the State, and her best citizens, with all that enthusiasm which the American people had cherished for his nation, since the days of York-Town.

All this might have been innocent in itself, but when Mr. Genet presumed upon the strength of this, to insult the government of the United States, by assuming the power of commissioning privateers, to cruise against nations then at peace with America, and sell their prizes in the ports of the United States, under the authority of the Consuls of France, even before he had been accredited by the government, involved in it consequences serious and alarming.

On the 18th, Mr. Genet arrived at Philadelphia, where he was received by the citizens, with the same acclamations of joy, which he had witnessed at Charleston.— When presented to the government, he was received by the President, with expressions of sincere and cordial regard for the French people; but the President was silent upon the subject of the French Republic. Mr. Genet approved the proclamation of neutrality, as being highly favorable to the interests of France.

Mr. Hammond, the British Minister, had laid before the President, a statement of the captures of British vessels, which had been made by the authorised privateers of Mr. Genet, and he called a Cabinet Council, to advise upon the mode of procedure, lawful and expedient, to be pursued. Here again, the Cabinet were divided, as upon the question of the new Minister from France. The Secretary of State and the Attorney-General, were of the opinion that the Courts of law were the proper tribunals to decide the question, and were disposed to favour the procedure. The Secretaries of the Treasury and of War, were of opinion that all governments ought to be so far respected, as to direct and controul all events relating to peace or war, under their jurisdiction, and that the proceedings of Mr. Genet, were an outrage upon the sovereignty as well as neutrality of the United States, and therefore the government ought to cause restitution to be made.

The President took time to deliberate, and addressed

circular letters to the Chief Magistrates of the several States, calling on them to enforce the laws within their several jurisdictions, and compel a due obedience, by force, if necessary.

Mr. Genet resented this procedure, and remonstrated to the President, by letter, with an indecorous warmth. Upon which, the President signified to Mr. Genet, that it was expected that the armed vessels which had given the offence, would immediately withdraw from the ports of the United States. Prosecutions, at the same time, were ordered and actually commenced against such citizens of the United States, as had been engaged in this privateering business.

Mr. Genet again expressed his resentment, and appealed from the government to the people of the United States, in a style too indecorous to be named.

Mr. Genet next remonstrated to the Secretary of State, against the decisions of the Executive, and demanded the release of those persons under arrest by order of government, "as acting under the authority of France, and defending the glorious cause of liberty, in common with her children."

The appeal of Mr. Genet to the American people, through the channels of the public prints, threw the nation into two great parties; the one adhered to the government, and the other rallied round the Minister.

At this time, certain societies sprang up in America, bearing the political stamp of the Jacobin societies in France, and assumed a dictatorial style, in the affairs of the nation. Civic feasts, and other public assemblages of the people, became general; especially at the south, and in all the large towns; at which, the ensigns of France and the United States, were displayed in union; and the red cap of liberty and fraternity, triumphantly circulated from head to head, accompanied with toasts, expressive of the identity of the French and American Republics; crowned with their favorite toast, "*Principles not men*;" in allusion to the popular influence of the President, and as a reflection upon his measures; particularly the suppression of privateering and the proclamation of neutrality; often styled the "Royal Edict."

Thus were the Executive, the Government and the

Nation, outraged by this enthusiastic zealot of the French Republic.

Pause reader and reflect; what would have become the fate of America under the old confederation, or even under the new, with a weak Executive? and acknowledge the hand of God, in thus preserving *the vine which he had planted*.

To detail the overt acts of outrage against the Executive, as well as the government, by this diplomatic disciple of liberty and equality, and shew how he meditated war against Florida and Louisiana, by raising troops in Georgia and Kentucky, without the knowledge and consent of the United States, and in defiance to the government, as well as existing treaties, would exceed the limits of this work; suffice it to say, that when the dignified patience of the Executive had become exhausted, he demanded of the French government, that Mr. Genet should be recalled, and he was recalled.

Mr. Genet was succeeded by Mr. Fauchet; and at the same time, Mr. Monroe was sent out to France, to succeed Mr. Morris, recalled.

On the 1st of December, Congress convened at Philadelphia, agreeable to adjournment; notwithstanding the yellow fever had not wholly subsided.\* On the 4th, the President delivered his speech, which displayed the political state of the nation; was cordially received and as cordially echoed by both Houses.

Early in the session, the Secretary of State (agreeable to a resolution of the House, passed in February, 1791) presented a report upon the commercial state of the nation, with his views and advice thereon, &c.

On the 30th, the Secretary presented an additional report, which was occasioned by certain regulations of a commercial nature, on the part of France, with regard to the West-India trade, &c. Both of which were highly acceptable, and did honor to the department.

With this official act, and agreeable to previous notice, the Secretary resigned, and was succeeded by Edmund Randolph, Esq. January, 1794.

The limits of this work will not permit me notice particularly, the resolutions brought forward by Mr. Madi-

---

\*This malignant disease had raged like the plague, through the autumn.

son, upon this report; the objects of which were the humiliation of Great-Britain, and the exaltation of France; nor the warm and animated debates that ensued. The subject of the resolutions was postponed until March.

In the midst of this commercial strife, the State of Algiers commenced depredations upon the commerce of the United States, and captured eleven sail of her merchantmen. This, when communicated to Congress, by the Executive, led to the following resolution:

“Resolved, That a naval force, adequate to the protection of the commerce of the United States, against the Algeriae corsairs, ought to be provided.”

This resolve opened a torrent of debate, and let loose all the violence of party jealousy and party strife, in the sharp conflict of wordy war. The bill finally passed by a majority of eleven only, authorising the building of six frigates; four of 44, and two of 32 guns each, and received the assent of the President.

At this time, the depredations of France and Great-Britain, became so serious upon American commerce, under sanction of their commercial decrees, that Congress authorised the President to lay an embargo; strengthen the military posts; fortify the seaports; raise a corps of engineers and artilleryists, and organize the militia, &c.

The President met the resolves of Congress promptly, and at the same time held out the olive branch, by nominating the Honorable John Jay, as Envoy Extraordinary, to the court of Great-Britain, to negotiate a commercial treaty, April 16th. The recommendation was finally approved, and Mr. Jay proceeded on his mission accordingly. At the same time a bill passed the House, to suspend all further commercial intercourse with Great-Britain; but it was negatived in the Senate, by the casting vote of the Vice-President.

To meet the pressing exigencies of government, the Secretary of the Treasury recommended that taxes be levied upon licences to retailers of wines and other spiritous liquors, also on pleasure carriages, snuff, and refined sugar.

During the negotiation of Mr. Jay, an attempt was made to adjust the differences with the hostile tribes of Indians, by a treaty, which was spun out through the summer, and so far into autumn, as to prevent Gener-

al Wayne from attempting any serious operations.—The General advanced to Greenville; erected a Fort upon the ground where the Americans were defeated in 1791; called it Fort Recovery, and took up his winter quarters.

At the same time, a detachment from the garrison of Detroit, erected a Fort upon the Miami of the Lake, 50 miles within the limits of the United States, which gave great excitement, and occasioned sharp remonstrances from the American government.

General Wayne pushed his preparations to commence the campaign early; but such were the unavoidable delays in furnishing the necessary supplies, that he could not take the field before mid-summer.

About the first of August, 1794, General Wayne advanced upon the banks of the Miami of the Lake, to the distance of thirty miles from the British Fort, where he was joined by General Scott, at the head of eleven hundred Kentucky militia. The General made one more effort to settle a peace with the Indians, by inviting them to meet him in Council, by a deputation for that purpose; but without effect.

On the 15th, he advanced down the Miami, until he reached the Rapids, where his advance guard, under Major Price, fell into an Indian ambuscade. Major Price advanced upon the enemy with trailed arms, and at the point of the bayonet, roused him from his covert. General Wayne supported his advance guard, and the enemy were driven from the field, and pursued under the guns of the British Fort.

General Wayne lost in this action, 107 killed, wounded and missing. The loss of the enemy was supposed to be much greater. The General returned to his former station, by easy marches, and laid waste the Indian villages and corn fields, &c. to the extent of 50 miles on each side of the River, and erected Forts, to secure the conquests, and keep the Indians quiet.

At this time, the whiskey boys in the back part of Pennsylvania, resisted the excise law by force of arms, and a general insurrection took place.

When these proceedings reached the Executive, he called on the Judge of the District to certify "that the laws of the United States had been opposed by combinations too powerful to be suppressed by the ordinary



course of judicial proceedings, or by the powers vested in the Marshals;" which certificate authorised the President to call out the militia, to quell the insurrection.— This regular preliminary being settled, the President consulted his cabinet council, together with the Governor of Pennsylvania, and then issued his proclamation; commanding the insurgents to retire peaceably to their several abodes, on or before the first day of September next. At the same time the President called on the States of New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia, for their several quotas of militia, to raise an army of twelve thousand men, to be ready at a moment's warning, to march into the back counties of Pennsylvania, and quell the insurrection.

In the mean time, the President despatched the Attorney-General, Judge Yates and a Mr. Ross, Senator from Pennsylvania, on an embassy to receive the submission of the insurgents, and grant amnesty to all such as should lay down their arms and submit to the laws.

Governor Mifflin also issued a proclamation, and sent Commissioners to co-operate with those of the government; but all to no effect; the insurrection went forward, determined to oppose the excise law to the last extremity.

Upon the failure of this embassy, the President issued another proclamation, calling upon the several quotas of troops held in requisition, to assemble, and rendezvous at Bedford and Cumberland. And he gave the command to Governor Lee, of Virginia

The President reviewed this army by divisions, and being pleased with its appearance, he left the Secretary of the Treasury, to accompany the Commander-in Chief, and returned to Philadelphia, to attend the approaching session of Congress.

The insurrection was quelled without opposition; the people returned to their duty; but several of their principal leaders fled and made their escape.

The General stationed General Morgan, with a small force, in the heart of the disaffected country, and disbanded the remainder of the army.

The alacrity and zeal with which all classes of citizens turned out to support the laws, was highly honorable to our country, and gratifying to the government,

but more particularly so, when General Officers were seen at the head of companies, and others in the ranks, with knapsacks upon their backs, as common soldiers.— Even young Quakers of the first families, enrolled themselves in the service of their country, and marched to quell the insurgents.

On the 3d of November, agreeable to adjournment, Congress assembled, and on the 18th, a quorum was formed to receive the speech of the President. He applauded the zeal and alacrity of the officers and troops, in quelling the insurrection, and justly animadverted upon those *“self-created societies, which had been instrumental in exciting and promoting it,”* &c.

On the 1st of December following, the Secretary of the Treasury, Colonel Hamilton, resigned his office, and was succeeded by Oliver Wolcott, Esq. of Connecticut. The talents, integrity and experience of Mr. Wolcott, all combined to render him highly qualified for this elevated station.

On the 28th the Secretary at War, announced to the President, by letter, his resolution to retire from office on the first of January. The President accepted his resignation, and appointed Timothy Pickering, Esq. as his successor.

Mr. Jay, agreeable to his appointment, arrived in London, June 15th, 1794; where he negotiated a treaty of amity, commerce and navigation, with Great-Britain; which was signed by Mr. Jay and Lord Grenville, on the 19th of November, and transmitted to America, where it arrived on the 7th of March, 1795.

On the 8th of June, the Senate were convened by the President, for the express purpose of discussing the merits of the treaty. On the 24th, after a minute and close investigation, that honorable body, barely by a constitutional majority, approved of the treaty, and advised to its ratification.

The President took the advice of the Senate into consideration, although he strongly balanced in favor of signing the treaty.

At this time, the English prints announced that the order of the 8th of June, 1793, for the seizure of provisions bound to France, was renewed. This led the President to pause and reflect, to learn its bearings upon the American commerce, as well as upon the public mind.

During this state of suspense and deliberation, the President set out for Mount Vernon; but his attention was arrested at Baltimore, with a warm and spirited address from the citizens of Boston, against the ratification of the treaty. This was soon followed by others of the same stamp, from the large towns, which occasioned him to hasten back to Philadelphia, and consult his cabinet council.

On the 12th of August, the President gave his final decision upon the treaty, by affixing his signature, with an accompanying remonstrance against the order of the 8th of June, 1793. The ratifications were exchanged, and the order revoked.

Although this treaty had given as high excitement to the public mind, as any one event since the adoption of the constitution, yet the ratification proved very popular, and the commerce of the nation became remarkably prosperous. The western posts were given up, agreeable to the treaty of 1783; and a general peace was established with the hostile tribes of Indians.

At this time the Secretary of State, (Mr. Randolph) resigned, and was succeeded by Mr. M'Henry.

On the 5th of September, a treaty of amity was concluded with the Dey of Algiers; the American captives were set free, and the commerce of the Mediterranean restored.

On the 20th of October, a treaty was concluded with Spain, that settled all the contested points that regarded a free navigation of the River Mississippi.

Congress convened on the 1st of December, agreeable to adjournment, and the President met them with the following remarks, in his speech:

"I trust I do not deceive myself, while I indulge the persuasion that I never have met you at a period, when, more than at the present, the situation of our public affairs, has afforded just cause for mutual congratulation, and for inviting you to join with me in profound gratitude to the Author of all good, for the numerous and extraordinary blessings we enjoy."

Mr. Adet, (French Minister) had succeeded Mr. Fauchet, in the summer, and in December, he announced his diplomatic mission to the Executive. On the 1st of January, he presented to the Executive, the colours of France, accompanied with a letter, highly expressive of

national fraternity, which was laid before Congress, and the colours deposited in the hall of the House of Representatives, accompanied with an elegant address to Congress.

I pass over those violent conflicts of party in the House, upon the resolutions to provide means for carrying the British treaty into effect. The opposition was silenced; means were finally provided; the treaty was carried into effect, and the nation flourished under it, beyond all former example.

The President, having thus surmounted all opposition, and laid the foundation of the American Republic upon the broad basis of *peace on earth and good will to men*, next turned his attention to the benevolent act of negotiating with the King of England and the Emperor of Germany, for the liberation of his beloved friend, the Marquis La Fayette, from the prison of Olmutz; which was accomplished by General Bonaparte, at the peace of Campo Formio, the next year.

The President, having learned that France meditated hostilities against the United States, by way of depredations upon their West-India commerce, recalled Mr. Monroe from the court of Versailles, and sent Mr. Pinckney in his place. He next announced his resolution to retire from public life, at the close of his term, and published to the American people, his *Valedictory Address*. I regret extremely, that the limits of this work will not permit me to insert this address, not only on account of its own intrinsic worth, but on account of the extensive good it is calculated to do to every true American, who reads it with candid attention.

I pass over the gross intrigues that accompanied the election of a successor to President Washington, by observing that the Electors gave a majority for John Adams, as President, and for Thomas Jefferson, as Vice-President; and the Father of his country, retired to Mount Vernon, under the benedictions of the nation; there to enjoy, once more, the sweets of private as well as domestic life.

High raised on the summit of immortal fame, Washington looked down with calmness and composure, upon the strife of conflicting party, and as the guardian angel of America, offered to Heaven, his fervent supplications for his distracted country.

## PART VII.

ADMINISTRATIONS OF PRESIDENT ADAMS—PRESIDENT JEFFERSON—PRESIDENT MADISON, AND PRESIDENT MONROE.

### CHAPTER I.

#### ADAMS' ADMINISTRATION, &c.

The Administration of Mr. Adams, was met at the threshold, by open indignity on the part of France, in her refusing to accept Mr. Pinckney in exchange for Mr. Monroe. This refusal roused the sensibilities of Mr. Adams, and he immediately nominated two others, Mr. Marshall and Mr. Gerry, who were sent out to France, to co-operate with Mr. Pinckney, if possible, to settle an accommodation with the Directory.

When those Envoys arrived in Paris, instead of being accredited by the Government, they were kept aloof by certain indirect propositions from the Directory, under the signatures of X, Y and Z, for large sums of money, by way of loan from the United States to France, as conditional to their acceptance. These propositions were promptly refused. They were then urged and demanded as a *sine qua non*. This was considered by the Envoys as a demand for tribute, and indignantly repelled. The informal agents of the Directory, then assumed an imperious style, and threatened the Envoys, by assuring them "that Austria was humbled, that Great-Britain would soon follow; that all Europe would soon be prostrate before the all-conquering arms of France, and that America would then stand alone; that the Directory had the means of rendering the Envoys, as well as their government, contemptible in America."

Firm to their trusts, the Envoys repelled these threats with firmness, and communicated the whole correspondence to their government. This was soon diffused through the nation by the public prints, which roused the public feeling.

Two of the Envoys returned to America, and left Mr. Gerry in France, with some flattering assurances on the part of the Directory, that he might possibly effect something; these assurances failed, and he returned.

President Adams publicly declared that he would

make no further overtures to France, until assured that his Envoys would be received in character suited to the dignity of a great and independent nation.

This insult offered to the American government, was followed by outrage and depredations upon her commerce, by the citizens of France; all which roused the indignation of the American people, and they expressed their feelings by this memorable sentiment: "*Millions for defence; but not a cent for tribute.*"

Under the impression of this sentiment, the American government proceeded to raise and equip a provisional army of 12,000 men, and the late President Washington, agreeable to appointment, accepted the command.—1798.

A revolution at this time in France, placed General Bonaparte at the head of the Consular government — This, together with the firmness of the American government, and their successful war upon the French commerce, induced the French government to express to the American government, through Mr. Vans Murray, Minister at the Hague, "that the differences between the two nations, might be accommodated."—1799

President Adams met this overture promptly, and sent Mr. Davis,\* and Mr. Ellsworth,† to join Mr. Murray at Paris, and negotiate a treaty. Their mission proved successful.

On the night of the 13th of December, General Washington was seized suddenly and violently, with an inflammatory affection of the lungs, occasioned by an exposure to a slight rain, the preceding day, which put a period to his valuable life, on the 14th. His remains were deposited in the family vault, on Wednesday, the 18th, with military honors.

The death of the Father of his country, spread a gloom over the nation. Congress felt the shock, and immediately upon the intelligence, adjourned. The next day they convened, and resolved, "that it be recommended to the Members of that body and the nation at large, to wear crape on the left arm, for thirty days, and that the President express by letter to Mrs. Washington, the condolance of Congress, and request that the re-

---

\*Governor of North Carolina.

†Chief Justice of the United States.

mains of her departed husband might be removed to the City of Washington, for interment."

A committee specially appointed by Congress, recommended that a marble Monument be erected for the purpose, at the expense of the government; and that a funeral Oration, be delivered on the occasion, before both Houses of Congress, at the German Lutheran Church.

All these resolutions passed unanimously, and General Henry Lee delivered a solemn, eloquent and dignified Oration, accordingly.

The nation followed the government, and gave vent to their feelings, by their numerous funeral processions and eulogies.

The Monument, however, has never been erected.— "That the great events of the political as well as military life of General Washington, should be commemorated, could not be pleasing to those who had condemned and continued to condemn, the whole course of his Administration."—*Marshall's Life of Washington*.

On Wednesday, May 24th, 1800, Congress adjourned to meet at the City of Washington, agreeable to a law providing for the same.

This year the electioneering field, to fill the offices of the two Chief Magistrates in the government, was opened with uncommon zeal and warmth, by the parties.— Mr. Jefferson, Mr. Burr, and Mr. Clinton, were the Republican or Democratic candidates, and Mr. Adams and Mr. Pinckney, the Federal. The Constitution, at this time, provided that the candidate who received the greatest number of votes, should be President, and that the next highest number, should be Vice President.

Mr. Jefferson and Mr. Burr, not only received the highest number, but their votes were equal, (73 each) and the choice of President, from the two, devolved upon the House of Representatives, agreeable to the Constitution, to vote by States. This opened a new scene; the House became divided; the Federal party for Mr. Burr, and the Democratic party for Mr. Jefferson. The balloting continued for several days and nights in succession, with great warmth and bitterness of feeling.\* The whole nation took part in the event, and were anx-

---

\*The Members carried their night-caps into the Hall, and slept on their seats, whilst the ballots were counting.

iously alive to the subject. Mr. Jefferson prevailed, and was elected President, and Mr. Burr became Vice-President, of course.

The new Judiciary system, together with the alien and sedition laws, which had been recently passed, were supposed to have defeated the re-election of Mr. Adams.

On the 4th of March, 1801, Mr. Jefferson was regularly inducted into the office of President. By his inaugural speech, he unfolded to view, the whole field of his political creed, and unmasked the plan of his Administration. Although this was very intelligible to his party, yet to all such as had not been initiated into the mysteries, it resembled the responses of the oracle of Delphos; it meant any thing, every thing and nothing; but as his Administration progressed, it fully unveiled the mystery.

Mr. Jefferson, not only by his inaugural speech, but at the commencement of his Administration, took a bold stand, and introduced a system of measures, hostile to the general system of Washington's Administration, and directly calculated to subvert it in all its fundamental principles. Liberty and economy, (instead of equality) became the order of the day. To effect this, he made a general change in the officers of the government; particularly those that were the most lucrative, in the several Departments. Commenced and carried on a regular attack upon the Army, the Navy, the Judiciary system, the Bank, and the Internal Revenue; which introduced a new order of things.

The parties in this Congress, had become regularly and decidedly formed, in the election contest for President, and now entered the field of legislation, in solid columns, determined to carry all before them. All this opened a field of discussion, that convulsed, not only the government, but the nation. The new Judiciary system was repealed; the internal taxes were removed, &c. and the plans of Mr. Jefferson, were generally carried into effect,—1801 and '2.

In 1803, fresh collisions sprang up between Spain and the United States, with regard to the navigation of the River Mississippi. By a former treaty with Spain, the port of New-Orleans became a place of deposit, for the merchandize of the citizens of the United States, in passing up and down that River; but the Spanish Inten-



dent of that port, violated the treaty at this time, by denying to the citizens of the United States, the right of deposit. This incensed the American government, and kindled a fire in Congress. The Senate originated a bill authorising the President to raise a strong military force, and sieze on New-Orleans, together with Louisiana, and hold it by the right of conquest; but this was overruled, after a long and animated discussion, and the President, through the interposition of France, purchased the whole country of Spanish Louisiana, for 15,000,000 of dollars.\*

During the period of this political strife, sharp and frequent collisions had arisen between the Regency of Tripoli and the commercial citizens of the United States; several American vessels had been taken, and their crews carried into slavery. The American government, indignant at this outrage, sent a small naval force up the Mediterranean, to check these depredations.—William Eaton, Consul at Tripoli, repaired to Egypt, in quest of the Ex-Bashaw of Tripoli, who had been driven from his government by the reigning usurper, and had taken refuge in that country.

General Eaton found the object of his pursuit; engaged him in his interest; assembled in Egypt a small military force of the country; put himself at their head, and traversed the desert of Barca, in the autumn and winter of 1804. In the spring of 1805, he arrived on the confines of the dominions of Tripoli, with his little army. The reigning Bashaw hastened to oppose him; they met near the city of Derne; a sharp action ensued; Eaton was victorious; the Bashaw fled, and returned to Tripoli. Eaton prepared to follow up his victory, and attack the Bashaw in his Capital, and close the war by a general conquest. The American fleet prepared to co-operate in the enterprise.

In the mean time, the Bashaw sued for peace, and

---

\*Spain ceded this country to France, and France to the United States, for 15,000,000 of dollars. Eleven millions of the purchase money, were to be applied to the demands of the citizens of the United States, by way of indemnification for the spoiliations of France upon American commerce.

Mr. Lear, the American Consul at Tripoli, agreeable to powers vested in him, concluded a peace, which made suitable indemnification to the American government, for all spoiliations, and set the captives free.

General Eaton disbanded his army and returned to America.

On the 11th of June, 1804, Vice-President Burr, called Colonel Hamilton into the field, and killed him in a duel.

In December, 1804, Mr. Jefferson was re-elected President, and George Clinton, Vice-President; and in March, 1805, their terms of office commenced.

In February, 1805, an impeachment was instituted in the House of Representatives, against Samuel Chase, a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States. A long and interesting trial commenced before the Senate, agreeable to the Constitution; but the Judge was honorably acquitted.

During the first period of Mr. Jefferson's Presidential term, the French Consul was triumphing over the powers in the south of Europe, and now continued his triumphs, as Emperor of France and King of Italy, and threatened England with an alarming invasion.

The distressed, the wretched state of Europe, distracted the commerce of America, and involved the government in a labyrinth of difficulties; all which inflamed the feelings and passions of party, in America, and distracted the government and the nation.

To crown this mad career of politics, Colonel Burr commenced a system of intrigue in the western States, with high ambitious views; and actually assembled a small military force upon the waters of the River Ohio,\* for the purpose of carrying on an expedition against New-Orleans, and thus severing the Union, as was then supposed.

In 1806, Colonel Burr descended the Ohio and the Mississippi, with his party; but by the vigilance of the government, he was arrested in his career, in the Mississippi Territory, and conveyed to Richmond, in Virginia, and committed to prison.

In 1807, he was indicted for high treason, before the Circuit Court, at Richmond, where he was tried in due form, and acquitted.—See Burr's trial, in 2 vols. 8 vo.

---

\*At Blannarhasset's Island.

About the same time, the Captain of the British ship *Leopard*, fell in with the American frigate *Chesapeake*, off the Capes of Virginia, and demanded of Commodore Barron, sundry British seamen, (deserters) supposed to be on board; but upon the demand being refused, the *Leopard* fired two broadsides into the *Chesapeake*, which killed five men, and wounded twenty. The *Chesapeake* struck her colours. Four deserters were taken from the *Chesapeake*, and the ship was released.

This outrage gave high excitement to the public mind, and called aloud for war; but the President issued his proclamation, ordering all British armed vessels to quit the waters of the United States; interdicting at the same time, all intercourse between them and the American citizens.

The British government at once disavowed the act of the *Leopard*, as unauthorised, and sent an Envoy Extraordinary to the United States, to adjust the affair.—But the depredations committed by the British upon the American commerce, precluded all possibility of accommodation, and Congress proceeded to interdict the importation of sundry articles of British goods into the United States.

During this strife of the parties, the French Emperor had humbled the King of Prussia; issued his Berlin decree of November, 1806, and dictated the peace of Tilsit. This decree called forth the noted orders in council, in England,\* by way of retaliation. America now saw her commerce exposed to the rapacity of the belligerents; and on the 22d of December, 1807, Congress entered into the continental system, and laid an indefinite embargo.

To retaliate upon Great-Britain for her orders in council, the French Emperor issued his Milan decree, declaring "all vessels denationalized, which shall have submitted to a search from a British ship, and every vessel a good prize, which shall sail to or from Great-Britain, or any of her colonies or countries occupied by British troops."

---

\*These orders in council, decreed France and all powers dependent upon her, to be in a state of blockade.—This included the whole sea-coast of Europe, except Russia, Sweden and Portugal.

Thus balanced, America began to feel more immediately, the convulsions of Europe, and to find herself involved in the contest. One grand system of intrigue now pervaded all Christendom, and paved the way for the calamities that followed.

Mr. Jefferson declined a re-election, this year, and the Electors gave their suffrages in December, for James Madison, President, and George Clinton, again, Vice-President.

At this eventful era, the Empire of France had subverted almost every throne in Christendom, and then shook to its centre, the Republic of America. The insults and injuries the American flag was then suffering, from the decrees of France and orders in council, of England, had kindled a spirit of indignation in Congress, that breathed a spirit of war against those powers which distracted the Administration.

On the first of March, 1809, Congress repealed the embargo law, and passed a law in its place, interdicting all commercial intercourse with Great-Britain and France, until they should revoke their edicts, or either of them; then the President was authorised to renew the intercourse with the revoking power.

Mr. Erskine, the British Minister, met this overture by such an arrangement with the American government, as was satisfactory, and the President declared by proclamation, that commercial intercourse would be renewed accordingly, with Great-Britain, on the 10th of June.—But the British government disavowed this act of their Minister, as unauthorised, and things remained as they were.

Mr. Erskine was re-called, and his successor, Mr. Jackson, arrived in America, in September; but his haughty imperious style, soon rendered him so obnoxious to the Executive, as to preclude all further diplomatic intercourse, and he was re-called.

The same system of intrigue, continued into the year 1811. The Emperor of France issued his decree of Rambouillet, declaring all American vessels, with their cargoes, good prizes, if found in any of the ports of France, or of countries occupied by French troops.—March, 1810.

This decree excited great warmth of feeling in America, and the nation was ripe for war; but the Emperor

Napoleon, palliated this blow, by causing his Minister to declare to the American Minister, at Paris, "that the Berlin and Milan decrees were revoked, and would cease to operate on the 1st of November next," upon certain conditions therein expressed.

Mr. Madison issued his proclamation, announcing the fact, and declaring that the intercourse with France, might be renewed after the 2d of November following.— Thus the parties were balanced through the year.

In May, 1811, the affair of the Chesapeak was renewed by an attack of the British sloop of war, *Little Belt*, upon the American frigate, *President*; several broadsides were exchanged, and much damage done, but nothing decisive.

At the opening of Congress, in November, the President, in his speech, considered the insult as a just cause of war, unless due reparation should be made by Great-Britain.

This speech gave serious alarm to Congress, and they passed sundry resolutions, preparatory to the national defence. Twenty five thousand troops were ordered to be raised, and great preparation was made, to enlarge and improve the naval establishment. The whole nation felt the shock and prepared for the contest.

This spirit continued through the year, and early in 1812, a resolution was brought forward in Congress, to raise 20,000 volunteers, in addition to the former force, for the purpose of wresting the Canadas and Nova Scotia from Great-Britain; but the resolution was lost, 49 to 57.

This plan had for its object, to defeat a conspiracy, then suspected to be carried on between certain leading characters in the northern or eastern States, with the British government, through the agency of a Captain John Henry, to dismember the Union, by a coalition with Canada, and to form what was then termed the *Northern Kingdom*.

The President communicated to Congress, by Message, an intercepted correspondence, between this Captain Henry and the Governor of Canada, purporting the same; but upon a close investigation of the subject, no satisfactory evidence appeared, and the alarm subsided.

Congress pursued their hostile preparations, and laid an embargo for 90 days.—April 3d.

In June, the President announced to Congress, by Message, that the aggressions on the part of Great-Britain, were sufficient to justify a declaration of war. Among other things, he charged Great Britain with exciting the Indians to acts of hostility on the western frontiers.\*

Congress met this recommendation of the President, promptly, and passed a bill announcing a declaration of war against Great Britain.†

The northern States were opposed to the war, and their Representatives in Congress, formed a minority, that entered their protest against the measure, and their constituents could never be induced to enter cordially into the war.



## CHAPTER II.

### WAR WITH GREAT-BRITAIN.

The war opened by an attack upon Upper Canada.—General Hull advanced from Detroit, at the head of about 2000 men into the British dominions, and issued his proclamation, with full expectations that the people would make a common cause with the United States; rally round his standard, and engage in the conquest of Lower Canada; but to his great disappointment and mortification, he was met by General Brock, at the head of a superior British army, and constrained to make a hasty retreat back to Detroit.—August 8th, 1812.

General Brock pursued General Hull to the walls of Detroit, after having gained a signal victory at the River Raisin; another at Brown's Town, and at Maguaga.—August 9th.

---

\*The Wabash Indians began their usual ravages in 1811; but they were defeated in a severe and bloody action with General Harrison, Governor of Indiana Territory, and sued for peace.

†The Emperor Napoleon had at this time, assembled an army in Poland, of 4 to 600,000 men, in readiness to commence the Russian expedition.

On the 15th, General Brock summoned the fortress of Detroit in due form, and on the 16th, it was surrendered, together with the adjacent country, without further resistance, and the garrison marched out prisoners of war.

The surrendry of this fortress, in this dastardly manner, caused great excitement throughout the nation, which called for satisfaction. General Hull was accused of treachery and cowardice, and tried by a Court-Martial, and condemned to be shot. The sentence was approved by the President; but the punishment was remitted, in consideration of his advanced age and former services; General Hull was at the same time, sentenced by the President, with a total disability for all further public service.

Pending these movements on the land, the naval force of the United States, prepared to retrieve the honor of their country, by their gallant exploits on the water.

Commodore Rodgers put to sea from New-York, in the President, with a small squadron, early in June, to cruise on the West-India station. Com. Rodgers fell in with, and attempted to engage, the British frigate *Belvidera*; but had the misfortune to receive a severe wound, and lose at the same time, nineteen men in the chase, by the bursting of one of his guns.

Commodore Rodgers next crossed over to the European coast, where he cruised with success, three months, and then returned to Boston.

Captain Porter, in the *Essex*, and Captain Hull, in the *Constitution*, put to sea, in August. On the 19th of September, the *Constitution* fell in with his Britannic Majesty's frigate, the *Gurriere*, Captain Dacres; an action commenced with desperate valour, and in 15 minutes, the *Gurriere* struck her colours, a complete wreck; with the loss of 15 killed and 60 wounded. The *Constitution* had 7 killed and 7 wounded. Captain Hull burnt the prize at sea.

Captain Porter pursued his course, and cut out a brig from a convoy, on the coast of Brazil, and took out of her, 14,000 dollars in cash, and 150 soldiers. He next fell in with, and captured, the sloop of war, *Alert*, in 8 minutes, and then continued his cruise.

Commodore Rodgers put to sea again, in October, with his little squadron; fell in with, and captured, the

British packet *Swallow*, with 200,000 dollars in specie, on board. The squadron returned to New York, after a successful cruise.

On the 18th of October, Captain Jones, in the United States' sloop of war *Wasp*, of 16 guns, fell in with, and captured, his Britannic Majesty's sloop of war *Frolic*, of 18 guns, Captain Wingates, after a sharp and desperate action of 43 minutes. The *Frolic* lost 30 killed and 50 wounded; the *Wasp*, 5 killed and five wounded.

His Britannic Majesty's ship of war, *Poictiers* of 74 guns, fell in with, and captured, the *Wasp* and her prize, soon after the action.

Commodore Decatur, on the 25th of October, off the Western Isles, fell in with, and captured, the British frigate, *Macedonian*, J. S. Carden, commander, after an action of one hour and 30 minutes. The *Macedonian* lost 36 killed and 68 wounded. The United States, 5 killed and 7 wounded.

On the 29th of December, the United States' frigate, *Constitution*, 44 guns, Commodore Bambridge, fell in with, and captured his Britannic Majesty's frigate, *Java*, of 44 guns, Captain Lambert, off the coast of Brazil; after an action of 50 minutes. The *Java* lost 69 killed and 101 wounded. The *Constitution*, 9 killed and 25 wounded.

Formidable preparations were now in forwardness, against Canada. One army was assembled under the command of General Harrison, Governor of Indiana, called the North-Western Army. Another under the command of General Stephen Van Renselaer, called the Army of the Centre, and another under the command of General Dearbon, called the Army of the North.

In the course of the general operations against Canada, this autumn, the Americans surprised and took two valuable fur ships, upon Lake Erie, and brought off one valued at 100,000 dollars. This successful enterprise, kindled fresh ardor in the breasts of the American troops, and they pressed General Van Renselaer to lead them against the enemy. The General gratified their wishes, and on the 12th of October, crossed over the River, near Niagara, at the head of about 2000 men, and effected a landing upon the Canada shore, at Queenstown. General Van Renselaer was severely wounded upon his first landing, but kept the field at the head of his brave troops,



where he was soon joined by Colonel Scott, with his artillery, and the British retired before the victors. The troops at Buffalo and Lewiston, were put in motion at the same time, to be in readiness to cross over and support General Van Renselaer.

Pending these operations, General Brock advanced to the combat, with a strong reinforcement of regulars and Indians, and the battle became fierce and bloody; but the British recoiled. Stung with chagrin and mortification, General Brock rallied his troops to the charge; but he fell, mortally wounded, in the heat of the action, and his troops again recoiled.

At this eventful moment, when the American troops were exhausted with the fatigues of the day, and anxiously expecting the volunteers to cross over and secure the victory they had gained, General Van Renselaer, impatient of their delay, crossed over in person, to lead on the reserve; but to his inexpressible disappointment and mortification, they refused to follow, upon *constitutional grounds*.

During this parley, the British again rallied to the combat, to revenge the death of their brave General Brock, and to wipe off the disgrace of the day. The conflict was renewed, and raged with such violence, that the Americans were overpowered; about 60 were killed, 100 wounded and 1000 taken prisoners. Had the volunteers followed their General, the victory of the day would, most probably, have been complete, and the whole aspect of the campaign, changed.

General Van Renselaer soon after, retired from the command, and was succeeded by General Smyth.

General Smyth reconnoitered the position of the enemy, and made great preparations to cross over and renew the combat on the shores of Canada. He accordingly issued a proclamation, calling for volunteers to join in the enterprise, and actually assembled his troops upon a given day, (November 28) to embark upon the expedition against the enemy. The van of the army crossed over, and finding the enemy ready to receive them, they retired from the fire of their batteries, and returned; leaving a detachment of about 30 men, who had effected a landing, to fall into the hands of the enemy.

Such was the resentment of the officers and troops generally, at this dastardly failure, that General Smyth

was constrained to renew the attempt; and General Porter, of the New-York volunteers, took the command of the van.—December 4th. The troops were generally embarked and ready for the onset; but General Smyth, at this interesting moment, when all hearts were alive to the object before them, abandoned the enterprise, for the season, and the troops retired into winter quarters.

Such was the mortification and resentment of the army, that General Smyth thought it necessary to challenge General Porter, to vindicate his courage, and then to withdraw from the command.

During these operations on the northern frontier, the Indians committed such depredations and murders on the north-western frontiers, as deeply wounded the pride, and excited the resentment of the States of Kentucky and Ohio. They roused to the contest, as volunteers, and rallied round the standard of General Harrison, in such numbers, that he was constrained to dismiss several whole regiments, as supernumeraries.

General Harrison, in September, sent several detachments of those volunteers, into the Indian country, to relieve such posts as were in immediate danger from savage war, and desperate attacks; particularly Fort Harrison, upon the Wabash, which Captain Taylor was then defending with desperate valour.

In those expeditions, Generals Hopkins and Tupper, with Colonels Campbell and Russell, distinguished themselves, in giving relief and security to the Forts and frontier, generally.

Pending these movements, General Winchester detached a strong party from Fort Winchester, under the command of Colonel Lewis, to give assistance to the village of Frenchtown, upon the River Raisin. Colonel Lewis with his 500 Kentucky volunteers and regulars, reached the Raisin, on the 18th of January, 1813; and by a bold and decisive movement, attacked, routed and dispersed the enemy.

General Harrison, having arrived at Fort Winchester, at this time, sent forward General Winchester, at the head of 200 men, to support his detachment, and take the command. He arrived safe, and encamped for the night, contiguous to the fortified camp of Colonel Lewis; but the enemy collected his forces, and, supported by a strong reinforcement, on the night of the 22d, com-

menced a desperate attack upon the camp of General Winchester, killed and took the whole party, together with the General and Colonel Lewis. This opened the way for an attack upon the fortified camp; but a firm resistance and desperate conflict ensued, until about 11 o'clock, then a parley commenced. The enemy proffered an honorable capitulation, if the party would surrender prisoners of war; but threatened savage vengeance if they refused. His arts prevailed; the whole detachment laid down their arms and submitted as prisoners of war.

General Proctor violated his engagements, and gave up the prisoners to indiscriminate massacre, as well as cruel savage torture; and the wounded were, the next day, to the number of 60, all consumed in the general conflagration of the village.

To attempt to paint the horrors of this scene, would exceed the powers of my pen; language would fail; humanity stand appalled, and even Britannia herself, would blush at the deed.

General Harrison, upon the first intelligence of this defeat, constructed hastily, a stockade upon the Miami of the Lake, for the protection of his troops, which he called Fort Meigs.\*

General Proctor followed up his victory; advanced to meet General Harrison, and invested him in Fort Meigs. He commenced his attacks upon this Fort, with great fury, which continued for several days, until General Clay and Colonel Dudley advanced for the relief of the Fort, and put the enemy to flight. Colonel Dudley, in his unguarded pursuit of the enemy, fell into an ambush, and suffered severely in the loss of his whole party.

General Clay, in co-operation with the garrison, succeeded in raising the siege and dispersing the enemy; and thus Fort Meigs was relieved, after a siege of thirteen days.

These gloomy and distressing scenes of the forest, served as so many shades to the brilliant scenes on the ocean, where the American flag continued to wave victorious.

On the 24th of February, 1813, Captain Lawrence, in the *Hornet*, of 16 guns, fell in with, and captured, his

---

\*In honor of the then Governor of the State of Ohio.

Brittanic Majesty's brig Peacock, of 18 guns, after an action of 15 minutes. The Peacock went down, at the close of the action, with her brave Captain Peake and the rest of her killed; but the 33 wounded, were all saved. The Hornet had one killed, 4 wounded, and lost three sunk in the prize.

In April, Captain Lawrence returned to port, and was promoted to the command of the Chesapeake, then lying at Boston and ready for sea.

The British frigate Shannon, (Captain Broke,) with the Tenedos in company, appeared off the harbour of Boston and invited the Chesapeake to the contest. Captain Lawrence accepted the invitation, promptly, and put to sea.—June 1. The Shannon manœvered for the combat, and the ships were soon in action and along side. A short, but desperate conflict ensued; Captain Lawrence was wounded early in the action: but kept his station until the fatal ball pierced his body, and he was carried below. He then exclaimed, "*Don't give up the ship.*"

Captain Broke seized the favorable moment; boarded the Chesapeake, and carried her, after all her officers were either killed or wounded; and 70 of her crew were killed and 80 wounded. The Shannon had 23 killed and 56 wounded.

The Shannon sailed for Halifax, with her prize, where Captain Lawrence and Lieutenant Ludlow, were honorably interred, with the honors of war.\*

About the same time, the United States' brig Argas, Captain Allen, sailed for France, with the American Minister, and from thence on a cruise in the British Channel, where her successes led the British government to despatch several frigates to check her career. The Argus fell in with one of those frigates, the Pelican, and after a sharp action of 47 minutes, was captured and carried into port. Captain Allen fell, mortally wounded, at the first broadside; his Lieutenant, soon after, and his wheel being shot away, the brig became a wreck; yet she maintained a brave and obstinate conflict until all resistance

---

\*The remains of Captain Lawrence, were afterwards removed to New-York and interred with great solemnity.

became ineffectual, then surrendered.-- August 14th.-- The loss upon both sides, was nearly equal.

In the month of August, the skirmishing commenced upon Lake Ontario, with various success. The Creek and Choctaw Indians, began their successful ravages.-- The British fleet under the command of Sir J. B. Warren, blockaded the ports south of the Chesapeak Bay.

On the 3d of September, the United States' brig *Enterprise*, of 16 guns, Captain Burrows, fell in with, and captured, his Britannic Majesty's brig *Boxer*, of 18 guns, Captain Blythe, after an action of 45 minutes. The *Enterprise* lost 9; the *Boxer*, 45. Both Captains fell in the action.

On the 26th, Commodore Rodgers arrived in port, after a long cruise. He explored the Atlantic; circumnavigated the British Isles, and had but one conflict, in which he captured the *Highflyer*, one of the tenders of Sir J. B. Warren's fleet, off the American coast.

The limits of this work will not permit me to pursue this brilliant scene of naval war, and shew in detail, the capture of his Britannic Majesty's frigates *Cyane* and *Levant*, by the United States' frigate *Constitution*, in a desperate action; of his Britannic Majesty's brig *Epervier*, of 18 guns, by the United States' sloop of war *Peacock*; of his Britannic Majesty's sloop of war *Reindeer*, by the United States' sloop of war *Wasp*; or of his Britannic Majesty's brigs *Lettice* and *Bon Accord*, and sloop of war *Avon*, by the *Wasp*. The last of which, sunk in the action.

These captures were the result of desperate conflicts. Many of these prizes were stripped of every spar; and several so cut to pieces as to become unmanageable, and were burnt at sea. Others sunk in the action, or immediately after.

In December, Mr. Madison was re-elected President, and Mr. Gerry was elected Vice-President, in place of George Clinton, deceased.

## CHAPTER III.

BRITISH WAR CONTINUED—GENERAL OPERATIONS UPON THE  
SEA BOARD—AGAINST CANADA, LOUISIANA, &c.—PEACE.

Early in the spring of 1813, a British squadron entered the Delaware Bay, under the command of Admiral Beresford, and commenced their operations on the American sea-board. Lewistown suffered severely. The enemy next proceeded to the Chesapeake, where they committed the most cruel ravages; Frenchtown, Havre-de-Grace, Fredericktown, Georgetown and Norfolk, all felt the ruthless hand of the marauders, and several of those places were wholly destroyed. Admiral Cockburn joined Admiral Beresford, and took the command.

Admiral Warren made an unsuccessful attack upon Craney Island—June 24, (near Norfolk.) The next day the enemy made a descent upon Hampton, and gave it up to indiscriminate plunder. licentiousness and brutality; such brutality as was never alleged against a savage, and such as would make a *savage blush*.

During these operations, three American frigates which had been blockaded in the port of New-York, made their escape through the Sound, and were chased into the port of New London, where they were blockaded through the remainder of the war.

The enemy attempted to bombard Stonington, about this time; but the borough was so valiantly defended, that it suffered very little damage.

General Dearborn, who had succeeded General Smyth, in the command of the Northern Army, commenced his operations early in the spring of 1813, to carry the war into Canada. He detached General Pike, with 2000 men, to make a descent upon York, and seize on the naval and military stores, as well as the vessels on the stocks.

General Pike embarked his troops on the 25th of April, crossed over the Lake, and executed his commission promptly. The enemy were driven from their redoubts, and General Pike had halted his troops to give them a moment's repose, when he was astonished by the explosion of a terrible magazine, which overwhelmed his troops with a shower of stones, timber, &c. that killed and wounded more than two hundred men. The indig-

nation of the soldiers soon recovered them from their surprise and rallied them again to the charge. Their brave General animated their courage, as he lay expiring under a severe confusion from the awful explosion, with this solemn charge: "*Revenge the death of your General.*"

Colonel Pease led on the troops to the conquest of York, without further opposition, and the town surrendered by capitulation.

It is recorded of York, "*that a human skull was found in the Hall of the Assembly, placed over the mace of the Speaker.*"

General Dearborn secured the stores, prisoners, &c. and abandoned the place.

On the 22d of May, the General embarked his army and proceeded against the British Forts on the Niagara, under cover of Commodore Chauncey's fleet. General Lewis led on the troops to victory and conquest, during the illness of General Dearborn. The British Forts, and more than 500 Canadian militia, surrendered prisoners of war. The Americans lost 39 killed and 111 wounded. The next day the British blew up Fort Erie, and all remaining fortifications, and retired to the head of Burlington-Bay.

On the 1st of June, Generals Chandler and Winder, were detached with a force of 2600 men, (just double the number of the enemy) to destroy this British force. They advanced to Stoney Creek, to prepare for the attack; but the enemy anticipated their views; commenced a furious attack upon their camp, in dead of night; routed and dispersed the party, after a severe conflict, and carried their two Generals into captivity.

Pending these operations and during the absence of Commodore Chauncey, Commodore Yeo appeared with his fleet, before Sacket's Harbor, and landed about 1200 men, under the command of Sir George Prevost. The place was in a defenceless situation, and would have fallen an easy conquest; but General Brown rallied the neighboring militia and fell upon the enemy with such fury as put him to flight, and compelled him to abandon the enterprise and retire into Canada. Such was the panic excited by this invasion, that the Americans destroyed by fire, a great quantity of public stores that were not exposed to the depredations of the enemy.

The Six Nations now joined the Americans, in the war.

General Lewis, who had succeeded to the command, upon the resignation of General Dearborn, detached Colonel Bœerstler with 500 men, to dislodge the British at La Louvre House. (so called ;) but unfortunately, he fell into an Indian ambuscade, and was taken with all his party.

General Boyd and Colonel Miller, about this time, surprised and took Fort George, after a sharp and severe conflict.

General Proctor, at the head of a strong party of regulars, Canadians and Indians, attempted to surprise Fort Meigs, on the Miami, and Stephenson, on the Sandusky; both of which failed; but at the latter, the enemy met with signal defeat and disgrace.

The general movements for the reduction of Canada, were now completed; the fleets on Lakes Erie and Ontario, were about equal, and ready for action. The American forces under General Harrison, moved towards Detroit. An action commenced at the same time, on Lake Erie, between the American fleet, under the command of Commodore Perry, and the British fleet, under the command of Commodore Barclay.—September 10, 1813.

The fleets were nearly equal.\* Commodore Barclay, an old, experienced officer, in the school of Nelson, had seen much service. Commodore Perry was a young officer, and without experience.

The conflict commenced on the part of the enemy, about noon; the action soon became general and desperate. Commodore Perry's ship, (Lawrence) being disabled, he changed his flag on board the Niagara, in an open boat, in the heat of the action, and at once bore down upon the enemy; broke through their line, and the fleets were closely engaged. The action was short and terrible. The whole British squadron surrendered to Commodore Perry.

The Commodore announced this victory to General Harrison, in the following style:

---

\*The British force consisted of five vessels and 63 guns. The American force of nine vessels and 54 guns.



"Dear General,—We have met the enemy, and they are ours. Two ships, two brigs and one sloop.

Yours with respect and esteem,

O. H. PERRY.

September 10th, 1813."

The British immediately evacuated Detroit; General Harrison advanced; took possession, and pursued into Canada.—September 28th. The illustrious Perry joined him, and became his companion in arms.

On the 5th, of October, General Harrison gained a complete victory over General Proctor, and captured and destroyed his whole army.

Commodore Chauncey at the same time, took and destroyed seven sail of the British squadron on Lake Ontario.\*

On the 4th of November, overtures for peace, arrived from England, and at the same time General Wilkinson took the command of the Northern Army; moved his whole force to Sacket's Harbor, and from thence down the St. Lawrence to Ogdensburg; where he appointed an interview with General Hampton, at St. Regis, which failed.

Pending these movements, General McClure evacuated Fort George; set fire to the village of Newark, and retired out of Canada.

General Harrison had followed up his victory, and proceeded down to join General Wilkinson; but his movements were so hasty, that he left the whole Niagara frontier uncovered. The enemy availed himself of this; crossed over and burnt the village of Buffalo, with several others, to revenge the destruction of Newark; took Fort Niagara, and put the garrison to the sword.

These movements closed the campaign of the north, and both armies went into winter quarters.

---

\*Such had been the naval competition on Lake Ontario, that several ships were constructed by both parties, of from 20 to 60 guns, at Sacket's Harbor and Kingston; and at the close of the war, the British had one ship on the stocks, of about 160 guns, at Kingston, and the Americans had two ships of the largest class on the stocks at Sacket's Harbor. All which were nearly ready for sea.

At this time, General Jackson took vengeance on the Creek Indians, for their predatory ravages, and in the ensuing spring, they were completely humbled.

Messrs. Gallatin and Bayard, had been appointed Commissioners, and sent out to Petersburg, (Russia) in April, to meet such Commissioners as the British court might send, and in union with Mr. Adams, then Minister Resident, of the United States, at Petersburg, enter upon negotiations for peace, under the mediation of the Emperor Alexander.

Great-Britain declined this overture; but appointed Lord Gambier, Henry Colbourn and William Adams, to meet the American Commissioners at Gottenburg.

The President of the United States, appointed J. Russel and H. Clay, to unite with the American Commissioners named in April, and the city of Ghent, was agreed upon as the place of negotiation.—January, 1814. In August, the whole of the above named Commissioners assembled at Ghent, and entered upon the business of their appointment.

The United States' frigate Essex, Captain Porter, which had sailed early in the war; cruised with great success, in the Pacific Ocean, off the coast of Peru and Chili, and captured and destroyed the British whale ships in those seas. Captain Porter at the close of his cruise, repaired to the bay of Valparaiso, to obtain supplies, where he was overtaken and blockaded by a superior British force, the Phœbe and Cherub, and was captured, after an action of two hours and 30 minutes.—March 28th, 1814.

On the 3d of June, operations re-commenced upon the northern frontier. General Izard had now succeeded Generals Wilkinson and Hampton, and General Brown took the command upon the Niagara station.

On the 3d of July, General Brown commenced operations by crossing over and surprising Fort Erie, which fell an easy conquest, and the next day he advanced to the plains of Chippewa, where he engaged the enemy and gained a signal victory.\* This victory gave great eclat to the American arms, and diffused a general joy throughout the nation.

---

\*The Americans lost 60 killed and 248 wounded.—  
The British lost 133 killed and 320 wounded.

General Brown returned to Queenstown, and from thence to the plains of Chippewa, to await the enemy, who was advancing with a strong reinforcement, under General Drummond.

General Brown, supported by General Scott, met the enemy at Bridgewater, commanded by Generals Drummond and Riall; a desperate action commenced and continued, with various successes, until midnight. The Americans carried the field, and the British retired.—Generals Brown and Scott, were both wounded in this action, and General Ripley led back the army, the next day, to Fort Erie.

The loss of the British in this action, was estimated at 860 killed and wounded; and the loss of the Americans at about the same number. The whole force engaged, was 4000 on the part of the British, and 3000 on the part of the Americans. Few actions have been recorded more bloody than this, for its numbers engaged.

General Drummond advanced and invested the American army in Fort Erie; but finding an obstinate resistance, he attempted to carry it by storm.—August 15th.—Here the scenes of Chippewa and Bridgewater, were renewed. The enemy were repulsed with great loss.

General Brown had now recovered of his wounds and succeeded to the command.—September 2d.

General Drummond continued his operations before Fort Erie; strengthened his works and pushed the siege.

On the 17th, General Brown executed a gallant sortie, by performing a circuitous march, and surprising the enemy upon the flank of his trenches: charged him in column and carried his works with a dreadful carnage. More than 800 men fell, on the side of the enemy, and the Americans lost 300. General Drummond raised the siege and retired to Chippewa.

During these operations, General Izard arrived with a reinforcement from Plattsburgh, of 400 men, to support the garrison at Erie; but finding the garrison relieved by the retreat of the enemy, he ordered the Fort to be destroyed, and retired into winter quarters at Buffalo.

On the 11th of September, (soon after the departure of General Izard,) the town of Plattsburg was assaulted by a land force, under the command of General Prevost, and a naval force under the command of Commodore Downie. The town was defended by General McComb,

in the absence of General Izard, and the Harbour, by a squadron under the command of Commodore McDonough. The merits of this action, so glorious to the American navy, may be seen by the following official report of Commodore McDonough.\*

“United States’ ship *Saratoga*, off }  
Plattsburg, September 11th, 1814. }

Sir—The Almighty has been pleased to grant us a signal victory on Lake Champlain, in the capture of one frigate, one brig and two sloops of war.

I have the honor to be most respectfully,

Sir, your most obedient servant,

T. McDONOUGH.

Hon. Wm. Jones. Secretary of the Navy.”

General Prevost commenced a formidable attack at the same time, upon the town of Plattsburg ; but he was repulsed with such spirit as to be constrained to retire, with the loss of a great part of his ammunition, baggage and wounded. The Americans pursued, and he returned into Canada.

This action closed the campaign in the north, and the troops went into winter quarters.

About the middle of August, the British entered the Chesapeake with a fleet of about 60 sail, including transports, and landed about six thousand men at Benedict,† on the Patuxent, under the command of General Ross.

On the 22d, General Ross reached the Wood-yard, (so called) 12 miles from Washington, where Commodore Barney caused a large flotilla of gun-boats to be destroyed, to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy.

On the 23d General Ross reached Bladensburg, six miles from Washington, where he dispersed the militia, after a short resistance, and advanced to the city.—Commodore Barney had assembled a small force in defence of the capital, with several 18 pounders, and made a stand; but he was soon overpowered by numbers, wounded and taken prisoner, and the Capital fell into

---

\*The British naval force consisted of 95 guns and 1050 men. The American force of 86 guns and 826 men.—The loss of the British to that of the Americans, was 341 to 52 killed, and 110 to 98 wounded.

†Forty miles from the city of Washington.

the hands of the enemy. The Navy yard was destroyed.

Here stands recorded one more display of British magnanimity. *By order of General Ross, the Capitol, the President's house and Executive offices were burnt.*

The enemy retired on the night of the 25th, by rapid marches; regained their ships and embarked.

A detachment from this fleet, visited Alexandria; plundered the city, and carried off a great quantity of flour, &c.

On the 11th of September, a large detachment of this fleet appeared at the mouth of the Potomac, 12 miles from the city of Baltimore. A part of this fleet moved up to the north point, and landed about 7000 men, under the command of Major-General Ross. The next day, General Ross moved forward to enter the city. A sharp action commenced; but the Americans were constrained to retire within their lines. On the 27th, General Ross advanced again to the combat; but the Americans shewed so firm a front, that he abandoned the enterprise; drew off his troops, and hastily embarked. — Major-General Ross fell in this enterprise.

On the same day, the enemy commenced a serious attack, from his fleet, upon Fort M'Henry, and a terrible cannonade ensued, that continued into the night. At the same time, Admiral Cockburn landed about 2000 men, with a view of surprising the city; but the Americans were in force, and the British were again compelled to abandon the enterprise and retire hastily and with loss, on board their fleet. The next day the whole fleet moved down the bay.\*

Early in October, a special committee was appointed by the General Court of Massachusetts, to take into consideration that part of the speech of his Excellency, Governor Strong, which related to national defence, &c. and report. On the 8th, this committee made the following report, viz. "that ten thousand men be raised for the defence of the sea board, that a number of delegates be appointed to meet such delegates, in convention, as may be appointed by other states, to confer on the subject of their public grievances; upon the best

---

\*The loss of the parties was about equal; between two and three hundred each, killed, wounded and missing.

means of preserving their resources, and of defence against the enemy; and to devise and suggest for adoption, by those respective States, such measures as they may deem expedient; and also to take measures, if they think proper, for procuring a convention of delegates from all the United States, in order to revise the constitution thereof," &c.

These resolutions were adopted and forwarded to the several New-England States, for their consideration.—Massachusetts, Connecticut and Rhode-Island, chose their delegates accordingly; but New-Hampshire and Vermont declined.

About the middle of December, these delegates assembled in Convention, at Hartford, (Connecticut.) On the fourth of January, 1815, they summarily thus reported: "That the constitution be altered so that taxation and representation be in direct proportion to the number of free persons: that no new State be admitted into the Union, without the concurrence of two-thirds of both Houses of Congress: that no embargo be laid for more than sixty days: that commercial intercourse shall not be interdicted, nor war declared, without the concurrence of two-thirds of both Houses of Congress: that no person hereafter naturalized, shall be eligible as Senator or Representative: that no President shall be twice elected, nor a President chosen twice from the same State, in succession," &c.

This Convention then resolved, "that another Convention be called, to carry into effect the doings of this Convention, &c. in case the government of the United States refuse permission to the New-England States to assume the defence of their territory; holding a reasonable proportion of the public taxes to defray the necessary expense, until peace shall take place, or Congress assume their just and proper defence," &c.

Peace soon after took place, and the doings of this Convention, became null and void.\*

On the 15th of September, 1814, a small British squadron appeared before Fort Bowyer, at Mobile Point,

---

\*Although the resolutions for amending the constitution, were submitted to the consideration of the Legislatures of the several States, they were almost universally rejected.

to co-operate with a land force of 100 Marines and 400 Indians, in reducing the fortress; but such was the firmness of Captain Lawrence, that with a garrison of 120 men, he resisted the repeated attacks of the enemy, and obliged him to retire with loss, and abandon the enterprise.

On the 5th of November, General Jackson marched to Pensacola, at the head of a force of about 3000 men, to chastise the English and Spaniards, who had kindled and kept alive, the war with the Seminole Indians. After destroying their Forts and dispersing the British, he returned to Mobile.

The marauders of the Chesapeake, when they abandoned the enterprise against Baltimore, retired to Bermuda, where they prepared a formidable armament, and sailed for New-Orleans, with a fleet of sixty sail, besides transports and barges.

Upon the first intelligence of this movement, General Jackson marched with his whole force, to the defence of this key of the western country. On the 2d of December, he reached New-Orleans, and hastened his preparations to receive the enemy. The citizens, as well as the slaves, united with the troops in the arduous labors of constructing works of defence, and the General participated in all their toils.

On the 12th of December, the fleet of the enemy, appeared in the Bay of St. Louis, and the American flotilla retired up the River to a more favorable position. On the 14th, the enemy commenced an attack upon the flotilla, and captured the whole.

General Jackson next ordered martial law to be proclaimed, and the whole militia to appear on duty.

The Legislature made the necessary appropriations, and laid an embargo on all vessels then in port.

On the 21st, General Carrol arrived and joined General Jackson, with 4000 brave Tennesseans, (partially armed) and the Barratarians arrived at the same time, to join in the general defence.

General Jackson next ordered all the canals leading to the Lake, to be closed; but the enemy, about 12,000 strong, reached the high banks of the River, on the 28th, notwithstanding this precaution, where they halted to take refreshment, before they entered the city, then full in their view.

General Jackson assembled his whole force of about 6000 men, and marched down to meet the enemy; but did not reach them before dark. After reconnoitering their position, he commenced an attack, which surprised the British and threw them into disorder; but they soon rallied to the combat, and a sharp rencounter ensued.—A thick fog arose that rendered it necessary for General Jackson to withdraw his troops, and he retired about two miles up the River, and took his stand at his fortified position.

At the dawn of day, the British army was in motion, and advanced in columns to the combat. General Jackson reserved his fire until the enemy approached within the reach of his grape, he then opened a destructive fire from his artillery, that mowed down their ranks. These were successively closed, and the enemy continued to advance, until they came within musket shot; then the whole lines vomited forth one incessant sheet of flame from the deadly rifle, which strewed the plain with indiscriminate slaughter, and threatened the whole columns with universal ruin. The enemy broke and fled in confusion; except a small detachment that bravely advanced to the lines; but these all fell, to a man. Stung with indignation, the British officers rallied their troops and advanced again to the charge. Again they were overwhelmed with the fire of the deadly rifle, and again they fled; leaving the field strewed with the carnage of more than 2000 wounded, dead and dying. The General-in-Chief, Sir Edward Pakenham, together with several other Generals and an unusual proportion of officers, were among the slain. About 500 were taken prisoners; total loss of the enemy, about 3000. The loss of the Americans in this action, did not exceed 20 killed and wounded.—January 8th, 1815.

The British who survived, retired on board their fleet; descended the River and proceeded to attack Fort Bowyer, which they carried, after a brave resistance; but the return of peace, soon restored it again to the Americans.

On the 15th of January, 1815, the United States' frigate President, Commodore Decatur, was pursued by four British frigates, and a sharp action commenced with the Endymion; but she was beaten off and silenced. The



other three availed themselves of this action, and compelled the President to surrender.

On the 11th of February, news arrived in New-York, that peace had been concluded by the Commissioners at Ghent, on the 24th of December. On the 17th of January, 1815, the treaty was ratified by the Senate and received the signature of the President. All parties rejoiced at the event.

The grievances complained of by the American Government, as causes of the war, were not noticed in the treaty.

Thus ended this mighty war with Britain, and the American Navy bore away the palm.

On the 2d of March 1815, war was declared by the American government, against the Regency of Algiers, and a squadron of 11 frigates and armed vessels, were despatched to the Mediterranean, in two divisions, under Commodores Boscawen and Decatur, to humble that nest of pirates. In four months, all the Barbary powers were united in treaties with the American government; our own prisoners, and those of several European States, released; expressions of submission, from several of those powers, obtained, not hitherto contemplated, and such as had never been extorted by any other nation.—  
*A just tribute to the American flag.*

The nation settled down and became tranquil under the peace, and nothing of importance occurred during the remainder of President Madison's Administration.

In 1816, Mr. Madison declined a re-election and Mr. Monroe was chosen President and Mr. Tompkins was chosen Vice-President.

The chastisement of the Seminole Indians and the conquest of Pensacola, by General Jackson in 1813, opened the way for a cession of the Florida to the United States, by Spain, in February, 1821. For a long and interesting Spanish negotiation terminated; war with Spain, so long contemplated, was averted, and a suitable indemnification was made to those American citizens that had suffered from Spanish depredations.

The Floridas, the same year, were placed under a Territorial government, and General Andrew Jackson was appointed Governor.

Under the first term of President Monroe's Administration, the asperity of party greatly softened down, and the nation became more united.

In 1821, Mr. Monroe was re-elected President, and Mr. Tompkins was also re-elected Vice President. The same increase of union and harmony, prevails in the nation, and promises fair to continue to prevail.

## PART VIII.

### CHAPTER I.

**CHRONOLOGICAL VIEW OF THE WESTERN STATES, AS THEY BECAME TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENTS AND WERE ADMITTED INTO THE FEDERAL UNION.**

The country formerly known by the name of the North-Western Territory, was first explored by Marquette, a Frenchman, from Canada, in the year 1671.—He traversed the country, by the way of the Lakes; ascended the Fox River, from Lake Michigan; crossed over the portage to the Ouisconsin; descended the latter and discovered the Mississippi; descended that River to the mouth of the Missouri, and returned.

La Salle, another Frenchman, explored the country from the St. Lawrence to the Ohio; followed its course to the Mississippi, and discovered their junction.—1680.

From this time, numerous French traders visited this vast interior, for the benefit of the fur trade; but no settlements were attempted until the year 1735, then the French commenced the settlement of Vincennes, upon the Wabash.

In 1750, the English government made a grant to a company in Virginia, of 600,000 acres of land upon the River Ohio, for the purpose of establishing the British claims to this western wilderness.

To counteract these claims, the French erected Fort Duquesne, at the head of the Ohio.—1753.

In 1758, the English dispossessed the French of this Fort, (as has been noticed under the old French war,) which struck a fatal blow to the claims of France.

At the peace of Paris, 1763, France relinquished to Great-Britain, by the cession of Canada, all further claims to this western country.

In 1788, the Ohio company, under the direction of Rufus Putnam, Esq. commenced the settlement of Marietta, at the confluence of the Muskingum.

In 1789, John Cleves Symmes, commenced a settlement at the confluence of the Great Miami. The same year, a settlement commenced at the confluence of the

Little Miami, and Fort Washington was erected upon the Scioto, for general protection.

The hostile disposition of the savages prevented a general settlement of this country, until the peace of Greenville, which followed the famous victory of General Wayne.—August 3d. 1795. Since that time, the settlements have progressed rapidly. Three free and independent States have sprung up in this North-Western Territory, and added a numerous population to the Federal Union.

The limits of this work will not permit me to give that historical view of the Western States generally, which the importance of the subject demands; I shall therefore compress the whole into the following chronological form:

#### KENTUCKY.

This State originally composed a part of Virginia, and was first settled by Colonel Daniel Boon, from Powell's Valley, 1773.

Adventurers from Virginia followed Colonel Boon, and attempted the settlement of the country: but their progress was greatly obstructed by the Indians, until the successful excursions of General Clark, 1778.

From this time the settlements progressed so rapidly, that Virginia erected Kentucky into a county, and established a regular system of laws, with a Supreme Court, 1779.

The same year, the first tree was cut in Lexington: which is now the Capital of the State, with a population of nearly 6000. Such and so rapid were the settlements in this county, that they petitioned the Legislature of Virginia, to be set off as an independent District, 1785.

The Legislature of Virginia took the prayer of their petition into consideration, and finally granted it, 1790.

Such had now become the population of Kentucky, that they petitioned Congress for admission into the Federal Union, which was granted, 1792.

In eight years after this, the Legislature of Kentucky incorporated the Transylvania University, 1798.

Kentucky adopted her present Constitution, 1799.

The seminary of Transylvania now contains more than 200 students, 1822.

For a more particular view of the rapid population of Kentucky, see the census of the United States.

## TENNESSEE.

This State formerly composed a part of Carolina, and upon a division of that government. Tennessee fell within the limits of North-Carolina.

No attempts were made to settle this wilderness, west of the Allegany, until the year 1754.

This first settlement failed, and no further attempts were made until the year 1765.

This year a settlement commenced upon the River Watawga, which flourished and grew up under their own laws and regulations, independent of Carolina, until the year 1776.

This district then sent delegates to the Convention of North Carolina; assisted in forming and adopting her Constitution, and became an integral part of the government. North Carolina ceded her lands west of the Allegany, to the United States, 1789.

Such was the rapid population of this district, that the next year Congress erected Tennessee into a Territorial government, 1790.

Six years after, the present Constitution was formed and adopted, and Tennessee was admitted into the Federal Union, 1796.

Three public seminaries are incorporated in West-Tennessee, and one in East-Tennessee.

Tennessee like Kentucky, has grown up under a most rapid population.—See the census of the United States.

## OHIO.

This State composed a part of the North Western Territory, so called, and was formerly claimed by Virginia and Connecticut.

Virginia ceded all her claims to this country excepting certain reservations for military purposes, at the close of the Revolution, 1783.

Connecticut also ceded all her claims, excepting a reservation of about four millions of acres, lying upon the south side of Lake Erie.

The settlement and population of the State, were slow, until the peace of Greenville humbled the Indians, 1795.

From that time forward, emigrations from New-England and other parts of the United States, multiplied so rapidly, that at the first census, Ohio could boast a population of 42,000, 1800.

Two years after this, Ohio was admitted into the Union, 1802.

In the succeeding eight years, the population of Ohio, multiplied to the amount of 231,000, 1810.

The State of Ohio purchased of the Indians, on their north-western borders, about 4,000,000 of acres, 1818.

At the third census, the State of Ohio could boast a population of more than 500 000, 1820.

The town of Cincinnati contained at that time, a population of about 12,000. Also more than 2000 buildings, of brick, stone and wood; and from one to four stories high. More than 70 Steam Boats, some of 400 tons burthen, had at that time been built at Cincinnati. A grist-mill 85 feet by 62, upon the ground, and nine stories or 110 feet high, was then in operation by steam.

For the encouragement of literature in this State, three entire townships have been granted from the public lands, and one mile square, near the centre of each township, is reserved for the benefit of common schools.

Three of these townships have been appropriated by the Legislature, for the support of the Ohio University.

Two other of the Universities, the Miami and Cincinnati, have also been incorporated by the State Legislature.

The funds of the Miami University, are said to exceed \$500 dollars, arising from the sale of lands appropriated by Congress. The funds of the University of Cincinnati, arise entirely from private donations.

For a description of the ancient fortifications of this State, see Antiquities and Curiosities, in the chapter of geographical sketches.

## LOUISIANA.

This State, which lies between the Territory of Arkansas, on the north, and the Gulf of Mexico on the south, was purchased of France, together with the vast regions of Louisiana, for 15,000,000 of dollars, 1803.

Erected into a State and admitted into the Union, 1812.

## MISSISSIPPI.

This State originally belonged to Georgia, and was erected into a Territorial government, 1800.

Became a State and was admitted into the Union, 1817.

## ILLINOIS.

This State was originally a part of the North-Western Territory, and erected into a Territorial government, 1801.

Became a State and was admitted into the Union, 1818.

## ALABAMA.

This State originally belonged to Georgia and West-Florida. Became a Territorial government, 1817.

Became a State and was admitted into the Union, 1819.

## MISSOURI.

This State, situated upon the great River Missouri, from whence it derives its name, was erected into a Territorial government, 1804.

Formed her State Constitution, 1820.

Was admitted into the Union, 1823.

The question, "Whether slavery should be tolerated in Missouri," agitated Congress and the nation, through the session of 1820. Was resumed again in 1821, and threatened the peace, if not the union, of the nation; but was finally overruled in favor of slavery in Missouri. A condition was, however, annexed, that slavery should forever be prohibited, to the north and west of that State.

## ARKANSAS.

This Territory is situated between the States of Louisiana and Missouri, and composes a part of the vast regions of the Louisiana purchase.

Was erected into a Territorial government, and General James Miller, appointed Governor, 1819.

## EAST AND WEST FLORIDA.

The whole of East, and the remaining part of West Florida, were ceded by Spain to the United States; erected into a Territorial government, and General Andrew Jackson appointed Governor, 1821.

These States have all adopted republican forms of government, upon the original plans of New England and Pennsylvania, and have thus become so many pillars in that Grand Temple of American Liberty, the Federal Constitution.

The primary object of this work, has been to shew the origin of this pure system of liberty, to and trace its progress from the days of the 14th century, down to the times in which we live, and shew how the pure religion of the Gospel has kindled the sacred fire, until it has become the vast column, and given light and life to these dark and benighted regions of the west.

Twenty or thirty years since, these western States were literally the habitations of cruelty; the abodes of savage beasts and more savage men. Now they are covered with rich and flourishing towns and villages; filled with a numerous population of free and enlightened citizens, whose noble and virtuous exertions, have added nine illustrious pillars to the glorious Republic of United America.

This vast interior abounds with every variety of soil and climate, and furnishes in rich abundance, all the conveniences, and as many of the luxuries of life, as are essential to the happiness and prosperity of man.

The vast waters of the Mississippi, through the medium of her numerous tributary streams, afford all the facilities of internal navigation, as well as foreign intercourse with the ocean, that could possibly be desired.

The numerous steam-boats and vessels on the western waters, (which now exceed one hundred) have rendered



this internal navigation, both safe and expeditious, and given to the western farmer and merchant, all the facilities of mutual interchange of commodities, that the Atlantic States enjoy on their extensive sea-board. Added to all this, the hands of these hardy and industrious sons of labour, have cleared the forests, levelled hills and vallies, and opened numerous roads that intersect each other in all necessary directions, to promote mutual and reciprocal intercourse throughout this vast region.

The Federal Government, ever mindful of the best interests of this section of United America, has provided as a permanent fund for the education of the rising generation, 45,600 acres of land for each new State, or two entire townships, to be applied to the purpose of endowing seminaries of learning. Also 640 acres for the benefit of each town, as a permanent fund for the support of schools.

Education is the broad basis upon which the civil and religious privileges of United America have rested, and must continue to rest; remove this, and the Grand Fabric of American Liberty, will totter to its base and tumble into ruins. Preserve this, with the virtuous principles, intelligent understandings, and skillful industry she now enjoys, and the United Republic of America may bid defiance to faction and conspiracy, and become the admiration of ages!



## APPENDIX.

### A BRIEF GEOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE UNITED STATES.

*Boundaries.*—The United States are bounded on the north by Upper and Lower Canada, and the British dominions, and on the north-east by New-Brunswick; south-east by the Atlantic Ocean; south by the Gulf of Mexico; south-west by New-Mexico, and west by the Pacific Ocean.

*Lakes and Rivers.*—The United States are intersected and watered by the largest and most numerous Lakes and Rivers, that are to be found in any country on the Globe. Among the former may be ranked those vast Lakes or inland Seas, that divide the United States from Canada, with numerous others of a minor class. Among the latter may be ranked the St. Lawrence,\* that conveys the waters of the great Lakes into the Gulf of its own name. Also the Mississippi, with its majestic tributary streams, the principal of which are the Illinois, Missouri, Ohio, White River, Arkansas, Red River, &c. with their numerous tributary streams, that convey the vast waters of the west into the Gulf of Mexico.

Among the numerous streams that convey the waters of the coast into the Atlantic Ocean, may be seen the Kennebec, Merrimac, Connecticut, Hudson, Delaware, Susquehannah, Potomac, James, Roanoke, Pedee, Santee, Savannah and Altamaha. These with numerous others of a minor class, water the Atlantic coast of the United States.

The Rivers Appalachicola, Alabama, Pascagaula and Pearl, that pass through the Floridas and fall into the Gulf of Mexico, are majestic streams, and fertilize a delightful section of the United States.

*Canals.*—The Great Canal of the State of New-York, now in forwardness, between Albany and Buffalo, will connect the Hudson with Lake Erie, and from thence a communication will extend through Lakes Huron and

---

\*Although the St. Lawrence more properly belongs to British America, yet it deserves our notice as the sole conductor of the waters of the Great Lakes that lie within the United States.

Superior, up to the Lake of the Woods, on the north-west.

By a short Canal from the head waters of the Chicago to the head waters of the Illinois, the same chain of communication may be extended through Lake Michigan, over to the River Mississippi, and from the Mississippi to the head waters of the Missouri, and thus the trade of this vast interior, may be brought to pass through the Great Canal to Albany, and from thence to New-York.\*

A Canal is already opened from the head waters of the Hudson, to communicate with Lake Champlain and the St. Lawrence, and thus the trade of the north may also have free access to the grand mart of New-York.

The facility of transporting goods through these channels, throughout this vast interior, will be greatly improved, and the conveyance even to the head waters of Mississippi and Missouri, will become much easier and cheaper than from New-Orleans; even by Steam-Boats up the Mississippi.

One more Canal from the head waters of the Cuva-hoga to the head waters of the Muskingum, would bring the trade of the majestic Ohio into Lake Erie, and thus through the Great Canal to Albany and New-York. To effect this, Congress have appropriated 200,000 acres of land to be specially applied, when necessary.

Another Canal from the head waters of the Miami of the Lake, or Maumee, to the head waters of the Wabash, will greatly promote the great current of this vast interior commerce. Congress have also appropriated 100,000 acres of public lands to be applied to this purpose, and 100,000 more to effect the contemplated Canal from the Chicago to the Illinois.

All these Canals are practicable, and will undoubtedly be entered upon in succession, as soon as the Great Canal is completed.

All these Canals combined, will open to New-York, an

---

\*This great Canal will ultimately prove one of the strongest bonds of union between the eastern and western States, that the country affords, and thus its political advantages may be rendered equal to its commercial.

unrivalled field of commerce, and render her the *London of America*.\*

*Soil and Productions.*—Under this head may be ranked all the variety that is to be found upon the whole habitable earth. The soil of the United States, is rich and fertile, generally, throughout their whole extent, excepting the high Mountains and the sand barrens of the south.

The productions of the Northern and Middle States, are Wheat, Rye, Indian-corn or Maize, Barley, Oats, Tobacco, Culinary Vegetables, Apples, Pears, Plumbs, Peaches, &c. Hemp, Flax, and some Cotton. South of 35 degrees, Cotton, Rice, Indigo, Sugar-Cane, Figs, Pomegranates, Oranges, &c. Grapes are among the spontaneous productions of the United States, and in great abundance; Hops, west of the Allegany Mountains, and they flourish under culture, throughout.

May not the tea-plant flourish in Georgia, Florida and Louisiana; and may not the coffee-tree be transplanted into that climate, with as much success as it was transplanted into the West-Indies, from Asia, in the 17th century?

Three objects demand the immediate attention of the American cultivators, viz. the Bee, the Grape, and the Silk-worm; all which might be rendered very productive in the United States.

*Mines and Minerals.*—The limits of this work will not permit me to pursue this interesting subject, in all its extensive ramifications; suffice it to say, that no country abounds with a greater variety of the most useful and valuable metals and minerals, than the United States, and no people on earth, have more extensive conveniences to render them productive. Iron, Lead,† Copper and Coal, are found extensively, in the United States;

---

\*The internal commerce of New-York, bids fair to rival even that of Petersburg, in Russia. By one portage only, from the head waters of the Missouri to those of the Columbia, the internal commerce of New-York, will extend to the Pacific Ocean.

†The Lead Mine in the State of Missouri, now worked by Mr. Austin, is calculated to produce \$20,000 per annum.

and near St. Louis, (State of Missouri,) considerable quantities of Tin, have been discovered.—*Dana's sketches of the Western States.*

*Salines.*—These are more numerous and extensive in the United States, than are to be found in any other country, and exceed every thing of the kind, excepting the salt mines of Poland. They may be ranked among the striking evidences, that God in his providence, originally designed this country to become the theatre of a numerous population; and we ourselves are witnesses that he is fast accomplishing his purpose.

The salines of Louisiana, are said to surpass those of the interior, east of the Mississippi, both in number and extent, and are sufficient for the use of the whole United States, under any degree of population.

*Natural Curiosities.*—Under this head may be classed the vast inland Seas of the United States; the Falls of Niagara and of St. Anthony; the passage of the Potomac through the Blue Ridge of the Allegany; the Hanging Bridge; Blowing Cave, &c. of Virginia, and numerous other caves throughout the interior; the Gates of the Rocky Mountains,\* and Cataracts of the Missouri.†

*Commerce.*—The United States have become the second commercial nation in the world. They now enjoy a free commercial intercourse with all nations, and their rapid commercial improvements may be seen by the following sketch:

1774, the exports of the British Colonies	
amounted to	\$6,100,000.
1784, the exports of the United States	
amounted to	10,150,000.
1796,	67,064,097.
1801,	93,020,515.
1807,	108,373,225.

---

\*The River Missouri passes through an elevation of rocks, 1200 feet perpendicular, from the surface of the water, and the River is compressed within the compass of 150 yards, for the space of more than five miles. For more than three miles a man cannot stand between the rock and the water.

†Here the River is 350 yards wide, and the water descends 360 feet, over three perpendicular falls, in passing 18 miles.

The imports of the United States, have generally exceeded her exports, about one million of dollars, annually, down to the year 1899, and most probably have thus continued down to this time.

The tonnage of the United States in 1784,  
stood at 199,910.

Do. Do. 1899, 1,250,000.

I have not the documents before me, to shew the ratio of increase down to the present time. It may possibly vary from the ratio as above stated.

*Mountains.*—Under this head may be classed the range of Mountains that divide the Rivers that fall into the Atlantic Ocean, from those that fall into the Mississippi River, known by the name of the Allegany or Appalachian Mountains. These are called the back-bone of the United States, and extend in a range with the sea-coast, nearly the whole length of the United States.

The Rocky Mountains of Louisiana, range extensively through that vast interior, and divide the waters of the Mississippi from the waters that flow into the Pacific Ocean. These are a continuation of the Andes of South America, and extend as far north as the Frozen Ocean.

East of the Rocky Mountains lies the Chippewan Range, which extends from the Arctic Circle down into Mexico, and forms the high table land of that region.—Branches of these Mountains, range between the Arkansas and Red Rivers, and form also, the source of the Osage.

These are the most important ranges of Mountains in the United States, and give rise to the principal Rivers. The numerous other Mountains may be seen in the several Geographies and Atlases, common in the United States.

*Government.*—This may be denominated a Republican Confederacy, united under one Grand Federal System, and the whole formed upon the elective plan.

*Religion.*—All religions that do not infringe upon good order and the laws, are tolerated in the United States.

The number of places of worship, is about 9000; and of Clergymen, 5900; of these, the number of Congregational Churches, is estimated at 1500, and about the same number of Ministers. The Presbyterians have

more than 1400 Churches, and 900 Ministers. 150 Candidates, and three Theological Seminaries. The Methodists have three Dioceses; 1100 itinerant Preachers; 3000 stationary Ministers, and 2500 places of worship. The Baptists have 3594 Churches; 2219 Ministers, and three Theological Seminaries. The numbers of other denominations, are not exactly known.

*Literature.*—I have compressed this article into the following table, which will shew the principal seminaries of learning in the United States.

*Universities founded, Academies instituted, &c.*

American academy of arts and sciences in Massachusetts, May 4, 1780.

Brown's university, Rhode-Island, 1770.

Bacon academy, Connecticut, 1803.

Burlington college, Vermont, 1791.

Baltimore college, 1807.

Cambridge, New England, 1630, called Harvard college, founded by John Harvard.

Cokesbury college, Maryland, 1785.

College of physicians at Philadelphia, 1787.

Columbian college, New-York, 1787.

Divinity college, Massachusetts, 1808.

Dartmouth college, 1769.

Dickenson college, Pennsylvania, 1783.

Franklin college, Lancaster, Pennsylvania, 1787.

Greenville college, Tennessee, 1794.

Georgia university, 1785.

Hemlock, Virginia, 1619.

Massachusetts' academies in number forty-eight, exclusive of the grammar and other schools in the various townships, 1812.

New-England colleges, the graduates in 1807, were 200.

Nassau Hall, Princeton, New-Jersey, 1738.

North Carolina university, 1789.

Pennsylvania university, 1779.

Philadelphia academy, 1753.

Rhode Island college, 1734.

St. John's college, Annapolis, 1784.

St. Mary's college, Baltimore, 1804.

Transylvania university, Lexington, Kentucky, 1798.

Union college, Schenectady, 1794.



Washington college, Chester-town, Maryland, 1782.

William and Mary college, Virginia, 1691.

Williamstown college, Massachusetts, 1793.

Yale college, New-Haven, 1700.

Hamilton college.

*Population.*—The population of the United States, amounted to nearly four millions, in 1790; to more than five millions, in 1800; to more than seven millions, in 1810; and more than nine millions, in 1820. In this ratio, their population doubles in about 25 years, and in the same ratio, in the beginning of the next century, the population of the United States, will amount to nearly 100,000,000; provided they continue free from wars and wasting sickness, and enjoy their present free government.—See the following table.

## CENSUS OF THE UNITED STATES.

States.	Years	White population.	All oth- er free persons	Slaves.	Total.
Maine.	1790	96,002	538	none.	96,540
	1800	150,921	818		151,739
	1810	227,736	969		228,705
	1820	297,340	929		298,335
N. Hamp- shire.	1790	141,097	630	158	141,885
	1800	184,998	852	8	185,858
	1810	213,290	970	none.	214,260
	1820	243,236	786		244,161
Vermont.	1790	85,268	255	16	85,539
	1800	153,908	557		154,465
	1810	217,163	750		217,913
	1820	234,846	918		235,764
Massachu- setts.	1790	373,324	5,463		378,787
	1800	416,293	6,452		422,745
	1810	465,303	6,737		472,040
	1820	516,419	6,740		523,287
R. Island.	1790	64,470	3,407	948	68,825
	1800	65,438	3,304	380	69,122
	1810	73,184	3,609	108	76,901
	1820	79,413	3,554	48	83,059

States.	Years	White popula- tion.	All oth- er free persons	Slaves.	Total.
Connecti- cut.	1790	232,374	2,805	2,764	237,946
	1800	244,721	5,330	951	251,002
	1810	255,279	6,453	310	261,942
	1820	267,181	7,870	97	275,148
N. York.	1790	314,142	4,654	21,324	340,120
	1800	505,216	10,374	20,631	536,203
	1810	918,870	25,333	15,017	959,220
	1820	1,332,744	29,279	10,088	1,372,812
N. Jersey.	1790	169,954	2,762	11,423	184,139
	1800	194,245	4,462	12,422	211,069
	1810	226,561	7,843	10,851	245,255
	1820	257,409	12,460	7,557	277,575
Pennsylva- nia.	1790	424,099	6,573	3,737	434,373
	1800	602,865	14,574	1,706	618,645
	1810	786,804	22,492	795	810,091
	1820	1,017,094	39,202	211	1,049,458
Delaware.	1790	46,310	3,899	8,887	59,696
	1800	49,852	8,268	6,153	64,273
	1810	55,361	13,116	4,177	72,654
	1820	55,282	12,958	4,509	72,749
Maryland.	1790	208,649	8,043	163,036	319,728
	1800	221,998	19,987	167,767	349,692
	1810	235,117	33,927	111,562	380,546
	1820	260,222	39,730	107,398	407,350
District of Columbia.	1810	16,079	2,549	5,395	24,023
	1820	22,614	4,048	6,377	33,039
Virginia.	1790	442,117	12,866	292,627	747,610
	1800	518,874	20,567	346,968	886,349
	1810	551,534	30,570	392,518	974,622
	1820	603,074	36,889	425,153	1,065,366
N. Carolina.	1790	288,204	4,975	100,572	393,751
	1800	337,764	7,643	133,296	478,103
	1810	376,410	10,266	168,824	555,500
	1820	419,200	14,612	205,617	638,829
S. Carolina.	1790	140,178	1,801	107,099	249,078
	1800	196,255	3,185	146,051	345,491
	1810	265,196	4,551	196,345	466,095
	1820	297,410	6,826	258,475	502,741

States.	Years.	White popula- tion.	All oth- er free persons	Slaves	Total.
Georgia.	1790	32,886	398	29,264	82,548
	1800	102,261	1,919	54,599	163,779
	1810	145,414	1,801	105,318	252,533
	1820	189,566	1,763	149,656	340,989
Alabama.	1820	85,451	571	41,879	127,901
Mississippi.	1820	42,176	458	32,814	75,448
Louisiana.	1820	72,383	10,476	69,064	153,407
Tennessee.	1800	92,769	309	13,584	106,602
	1820	339,925	2,739	80,097	422,813
Kentucky.	1790	57,959	114	12,430	70,494
	1800	179,874	741	40,343	220,958
	1810	324,237	1,713	80,561	406,511
	1820	434,644	2,759	126,732	564,317
Ohio.	1800	45,028	337		45,365
	1810	225,947	1,896		227,843
	1820	576,572	4,723		581,434
Indiana.	1800	5,343	163	835	5,641
	1810	23,890	393	237	29,520
	1820	145,758	1,230	190	147,178
Illinois.	1810	11,501	613	128	12,242
	1820	53,788	457	917	55,211
Missouri.	1820	55,988	347	10,222	66,586
Michigan.	1820	8,591	174		8,896
Arkansas.	1820	12,579	59	1,617	14,273

May the same kind Providence continue to smile upon the United States, for centuries to come, that has poured out his blessings upon them so profusely, for the two centuries that have past, and may they continue to cultivate and preserve the virtues of their forefathers, to the latest generation!

*Antiquities and Curiosities.*—Under this head may be ranked those remarkable mounds and fortifications which are yet to be seen throughout the vast interior of the United States, together with the engravings upon the flat rocks of the Enchanted Mountains, (so called) in the State of Tennessee, and other inscriptions found on large flat rocks, in the western country.

For a more particular description of the works of

antiquity, see the following extract from Dana's Sketches of the Western States :

“Near the confluence of the Ohio and Big Miami, on the west bank, is an extensive rich bottom, consisting of several thousand acres; on, and in the vicinity of which, are several ancient mounds. Northwardly of Hardensburgh, one half mile from the Miami, on the top of a hill, supposed to be elevated above the adjoining bottom 150 feet, is a fortification inclosing ten or twelve acres. The wall of earth, from four to five feet high, does not conform to any exact figure; but is regulated in its direction by the extremities of the level ground round the top of the hill, at the highest points of declivity, in an irregular form, so as to enclose all the level ground. There are two or three gate-ways. On the south, near where the hill is very steep, within the fort, is a considerable mound; and on the south side of the hill, about one-third of the distance from the base to the top, is a spacious high-way, more than thirty feet in width, remarkably level and straight; the excavation on the upper side of which, in some parts of the hill, is twelve or fifteen feet deep: this highway extends in length, on the side of the hill 160 rods, each end terminates at points where the declivity was gentle, and the ascent easy to the fortification; within which are two considerable artificial concavities. The numerous human bones washed bare by the rains, on the sloping places, indicate that the ancient population was great.

On the opposite side of the Miami, on the top of a hill, is another extensive fortification, described in Dr. Drake's picture of Cincinnati. Another is discoverable on a hill near Hamilton, containing more than 50 acres, near which is a mound; various monuments of ancient labours appear in the Miami country.

Mounds vary both in magnitude and form. Some are conical, from the base to the top; others present only the lower segment of a cone; others are semi-globular; others in the form of a parallelogram. At Marietta, is one of a conical figure, seven rods in diameter at the base; fifty feet high, and twenty feet at the top.

The largest mound that has been found in the Ohio Valley, stands at Big-Grave Creek, near the Ohio, 14 miles below Wheeling. It is between fifteen and twenty rods diameter, at the base; its perpendicular height sev-

enty feet, and on the summit nearly sixty feet diameter, in the centre of which is a regular cavity consisting of about 3000 cubical feet, on which is a green white-oak tree, three feet in diameter, and more than seventy feet high; within a few rods stand five other smaller mounds. (Quere. What analogy may there be between these mounds, and the pyramids of Egypt, in their original design?)

The most remarkable mounds, or pyramids, in the western country, are on the Mississippi, consisting of two groups. The one about ten miles above the Kahokia, which empties near St. Louis; and the other nearly the same distance below it; which in all exceed one hundred and fifty. The largest of these mounds is a stupendous pile of earth, to form which must have required the labors of thousands, for years. It stands immediately on the banks of the Kahokia; the form is a parallelogram, from north to south; on the south is a broad apron, about half way down, and from this another projection, nearly fifteen feet wide; the whole circumference 800 yards, and the height of the mound about 90 feet. The Monks of La Trappe have settled near it, who have made the apron into a kitchen garden, and sowed the top with wheat.

Near St. Louis is a curious work called the Fallen Garden. It suggests to the spectator the idea of a situation for assembling the people for public councils."

Numerous other similar ruins are noticed by the same author, extending from the Lakes of Canada to the confines of Mexico.

#### REMARKS.

These are the records of ages that are past, beyond the bounds of the remotest tradition, and hang suspended on the field of conjecture, in the age in which we live.

A few remarks upon this mysterious subject, may not be uninteresting in this place.

It will be recollected that the art of *Navigation*, had its origin amongst the Phœnicians and Egyptians, about 2000 years before the Christian Era, and that this was conducted by the coasting adventure, for about 3,300 years, down to the time of the discovery of *Magnetism*, and the *Mariner's Compass*, at the commencement of the

14th century; that in the course of this time, this coasting-adventure had led to the discovery of the shores of the Mediterranean, and the Atlantic shores of Europe; and that the whole continent of Africa, had been circumnavigated. Now it is presumed that some of these adventurers were blown off the coast, and driven by the trade winds across the Atlantic, and formed the settlement at Mexico; for this would be the point where the trade winds and the Gulf-Stream would naturally land them.

To support this conjecture, I have presumed to introduce the following facts:

The Phœnicians and Egyptians worshipped the sun; had the art of embalming their dead; possessed the arts extensively, and practised human sacrifice. All these were common to the Mexicans, when they were conquered by Cortez.

I place no further confidence in the tradition delivered by Montezuma to Cortez, "that his ancestors came from the *remote regions of the east*, and settled that empire; and that their descendants should come at some future day and take possession of the empire," than as it may serve for one of the links in the chain, by which my conjectures are united.

These facts being settled, let us pursue the colonies of these people, up the Mississippi, and examine their attempts to settle the interior country, contiguous to the great waters of that River.

Here it is true, are no cities like Mexico, to shew the relative connection; but here are to be seen extensively, the fortified camps, and ancient cemeteries of a people who possessed the arts.\* Here are to be seen the impressions of the feet of men, horses, and numerous other animals and fowls, curiously engraven upon the flat rocks of the Enchanted Mountains of Tennessee; here have been found inscriptions engraven upon large flat rocks, in various parts of the country, in a character unknown. These inscriptions have been exactly transcribed and sent to the several Universities of our country, to be decyphered, where they have been supposed

---

\*The monuments of antiquity are found from the southern borders of the Great Lakes, down to the confines of Mexico.

to be Phœnician, because they so nearly resemble the Hebrew and Chaldean characters, from whence sprang the Phœnician, which is now lost.

Dr. Morse in his Geography, says "that a copper coin has lately been found near the Wabash, several feet beneath the surface of the earth, which retains distinctly, its *Persian stamp and inscription*." It is well known that the Phœnicians sprang from the Persians or Chaldeans, and that they used the same coin in their national intercourse. All these facts united, have fixed a strong degree of probability upon my mind, that these works of art, are the monuments of the labors of a part of the Mexican colony, in their attempts to settle this western country, and may possibly lead to others that may serve to unfold the mystery still more clearly.

*Naval Establishment.*—The following is a summary of the names and force of the Navy of the United States.\*

*Ships of the Line.*

<i>Names.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Names.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
Independence,	74	North Carolina,	74
Washington,	do.	Ohio,	do.
Franklin,	do.	Delaware,	do.
Columbus,	do.	One building at Bos-	
Chippewa,	do.	ton,	do.
New-Orleans,	do.	do. do. Portsmouth,	do.

*Frigates.*

Constitution,	44	Macedonian,	36
United States,	do.	Confiance,	32
Guerriere,	do.	Mohawk,	do.
Javé,	do.	Cyane,	28
Superior,	do.	John Adams,corvette,	24
One building at Wash-		Saratoga,	22
ton,	do.	Steam Frigate Fulton.	
Constellation,	36		
Congress,	do.		

\*January 1, 1826.—The Navy of the United States, consisted of the following vessels: eleven ships of the line, and five on the stocks; eleven frigates, and four building: six sloops and brigs of war; besides a number of schooners, a steam-frigate, &c. At Sacket's-Harbor, there are two ships of the line, on the stocks.

<i>Sloops of War.</i>			
<i>Names.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>	<i>Names.</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
Lawrence,	20	Sylph,	16
Erie,	18	Ticonderoga,	14
Peacock,	do.	Oncida,	do.
Ontario,	do.	Queen Charlotte,	do.
Hornet,	do.	Ranger,	do.
Detroit,	18	Enterprise,	12
Jefferson,	do.	Shark,	do.
Jones,	do.	Eagle,	do.
Madison,	do.	Also several smaller vessels, bomb-ketches, &c.	
Louisiana,	do.		
Niagara,	do.		
Linnet,	16		



## DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.

### PREAMBLE.

“When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands that have united them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal stations, to which the laws of nature and of nature’s God, entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to a separation.

“We hold these truths to be self-evident; that all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator, with certain unalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; that to secure these rights, governments are instituted amongst men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed: that whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or abolish it, and to institute a new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness.

“Prudence indeed, will dictate, that governments long established, should not be changed for light and transient causes: and accordingly all experience hath shewn



that mankind are more disposed to suffer while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves, by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism; it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such a government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these colonies, and such is the necessity now that constrains them to alter their former systems of government."

Here follows a succession of injuries, in detail, which the colonies have suffered from Great-Britain, which are closed with this remark,—“to prove this let facts be submitted to a candid world.” Causes of separation here follow:

As these causes here enumerated, consist only of a summary of the numerous causes, already noticed, it will be unnecessary to swell this work with their recital here in detail, a few only shall suffice.

“Standing armies have been kept up among us, in times of peace, without the consent of our legislatures.

“The military has been rendered independent of, and superior to, the civil power.

“A plan has been formed to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitution, and unacknowledged by our laws.

“Acts have been passed by the British legislature, for quartering large bodies of armed troops upon us; for protecting them by a mock trial, from punishment for any murders which they should commit upon the inhabitants of these states; for cutting off our trade with all parts of the world; for imposing taxes upon us without our consent; for depriving us in many cases of the benefits of the trial by jury; for transporting us beyond the seas to be tried for supposed offences; for abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighboring province, establishing them in an arbitrary government, and enlarging its boundaries so as to render it at once an example, and an instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies: for the taking away our charter, abolishing our most valuable laws, and altering fundamentally the forms of our governments; for sus-

pending our own legislatures, and declaring the British Parliament invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

“The crown of Great-Britain has abdicated government here, by declaring us out of its protection, and waging war with us.

“Our seas have been plundered, our coasts ravaged, our towns burnt, and the lives of our people destroyed.

“Large armies of foreign mercenaries are at this time transporting into this country, to complete the work of death, desolation and tyranny, already begun, with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy, scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy a civilized nation.

“Our fellow-citizens taken captive upon the high seas, have been constrained to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, and to fall themselves by their hands.

“Domestic insurrections have been excited amongst us, and endeavors have been used to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers, the merciless savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions.

“In every stage of these oppressions, we have petitioned for redress, in the most humble manner. Our repeated petitions have been answered only by repeated injury. Nor have we been wanting in attention to our British brethren. We have warned them, from time to time, of attempts by their legislature, to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us. We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here. We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them by the ties of our common kindred, to disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connections and correspondence. They too have been deaf to the voice of justice, and of consanguinity. We must therefore acquiesce in the necessity, which denounces our separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace, friends.

“We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name, and by the authority of

the good people of these Colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these united Colonies are, and of course ought to be, free and independent States; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown; and that all political connection between them and Great-Britain, is, and ought to be, totally dissolved; and that as free and independent States, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and do all other acts and things, that independent States may do. And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honors."

The above Declaration of Independence, was, by order of Congress, engrossed and signed by the following Members, according to the order of the States—John Hancock, President.

*New-Hampshire*, Josiah Bartlett, William Whipple, Matthew Thornton.

*Massachusetts-Bay*, Samuel Adams, John Adams, Robert T. Paine, Elbridge Gerry.

*Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations*, Stephen Hopkins, William Ellery.

*Connecticut*, Roger Sherman, Samuel Huntington, William Williams, Oliver Wolcott.

*New-York*, William Floyd, Philip Livingston, Francis Lewis, Lewis Morris.

*New-Jersey*, Richard Stockton, John Witherspoon, Francis Hopkinson, John Hart, Abraham Clark.

*Pennsylvania*, Robert Morris. Benjamin Rush, Benjamin Franklin, John Morton, George Clymer, James Smith, George Taylor. James Wilson, George Ross.

*Delaware*, Cæsar Rodney, George Reed.

*Maryland*, Samuel Chase, William Paca, Thomas Stone, Charles Carroll.

*Virginia*, George Wythe, Richard H. Lee, Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Harrison, Thomas Nelson, Jr. Francis L. Lee, Carter Baxton.

*North Carolina*, William Hooper, Joseph Hewes, John Penn.

*South Carolina*, Edward Rutledge, Thomas Heyward, Jr. Thomas Lynch, Jr. Arthur Middleton.

*Georgia*, Button Gwinnett, Lyman Hall, George Walton.

This is one of the most memorable state papers that the whole historic page can boast, and the worthies whose names stand recorded in support of this masterly production, and who were the authors of this glorious epoch, are enrolled in the temple of eternal fame, and their names can never die.

On the 8th of July, the Declaration was publicly proclaimed in the city of Philadelphia, amidst the loud acclamations of the people. From thence the sons of liberty caught the sacred fire, and proclaimed it with loud acclamations of joy, throughout the nation. Never was a people better prepared for such an event, and never was there a measure in which all hearts were more cordially united. This was the epoch of permanent liberty, and the death blow to British power, and British influence in America.



“Articles of confederation, and perpetual union, between the States of New-Hampshire, Massachusetts-Bay, Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia.

“Article 1. The stile of this confederacy shall be, the United States of America.

Article 2. Each state retains its sovereignty, freedom, and independence; and every power, jurisdiction and right, which is not by this confederation expressly delegated to the United States, in Congress assembled.

Article 3. The said states hereby enter into a firm league of friendship with each other, for their common defence: the security of their liberties and their mutual and general welfare; binding themselves to assist each other against all force offered to, or attacks upon them, or either of them, on a count of religion, sovereignty, trade, or any other pretence whatsoever.

Article 4. The better to secure and perpetuate mutual friendship and intercourse among the people of the different states in this union, the free inhabitants of each

of these states, (paupers, vagabonds, and fugitives from justice, excepted,) shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens, in the several states, and the people of each state shall have free ingress and regress from any other state, and shall enjoy therein all the privileges of trade and commerce, subject to the same duties, impositions and restrictions, as the inhabitants thereof, respectively; provided that such restrictions shall not extend so far as to prevent the removal of property imported into any state, to any other state, of which the owner is an inhabitant; provided also, that no imposition, duties, or restriction, shall be laid, by any state upon the property of the United States, or either of them.

If any person guilty of, or charged with treason, felony, or other high misdemeanor, in any state, shall flee from justice, and be found in any of the United States, he shall, upon demand of the Governor or Executive power of the state from whence he fled, be delivered up, and removed to the state having jurisdiction of the offence.

Full faith and credit shall be given in each of these states, to the records, acts, and judicial proceedings of the courts and magistrates of every other state.

Article 5. For the more convenient management of the general interests of the United States, delegates shall be annually appointed, in such manner as the legislature of each state shall direct, to meet in Congress on the first Monday in November in every year, with a power reserved to each state to recall its members, or any of them, at any time within the year, and to send others in their stead, for the remainder of the year.

No state shall be represented in Congress by less than two, nor more than seven members; and no person shall be capable of being delegated for more than three years, in any term of six years; nor shall any person, being a delegate, be capable of holding an office under the United States, for which he, or any other for his benefit, receives any salary, fees, or emolument of any kind.

Each state shall maintain its own delegates in any meeting of the states, or while they act as members of the committee of the states.

In determining questions in the United States, in Congress assembled, each state shall have one vote.

Freedom of speech and debate, in Congress, shall not be impeached, or questioned in any court, or place out of Congress; and the members of congress shall be protected in their persons, from arrests and imprisonments, during the time of their going to and from, and attendance on Congress, except for treason, felony or breach of the peace.

Article 6. No state, without the consent of the United States, in Congress assembled, shall send any embassy to, or receive any embassy from, or enter into any conference, agreement, alliance, or treaty, with any king, prince, or state; nor shall any person holding any office of profit or trust, under the United States, or any of them, accept of any present, emolument, office or title of any kind whatsoever, from any king, prince, or foreign state; nor shall the United States, in Congress assembled, or any of them, grant any title of nobility.

No two or more states, shall enter into any treaty, confederation, or alliance whatever, between them, without the consent of the United States, in Congress assembled, specifying accurately the purposes for which the same is to be entered into, and how long it shall continue.

No state shall lay any impost or duties, which may interfere with any stipulations, or treaties entered into by the United States, in Congress assembled, with any king, prince, or state, in pursuance of any treaties already proposed by Congress to the courts of France and Spain.

No vessels of war shall be kept by any state, in time of peace, except such number only, as shall be deemed necessary by the United States, in Congress assembled, for the defence of such state, or its trade: nor shall any body of forces be kept up by any state, in time of peace, except such number only, as in the judgment of the United States, in Congress assembled, shall be deemed requisite to garrison the forts necessary for the defence of such state: but every state shall always keep up a well regulated and disciplined militia, sufficiently armed and accoutred, and shall provide, and have constantly for use in public stores, a due number of field-pieces and tents,

and a proper quantity of arms, ammunition, and camp equipage.

No state shall engage in any war, without the consent of the United States, in Congress assembled, unless such state be actually invaded by enemies, or shall have certain advice of a resolution being formed by some nation of Indians to invade such state, and the danger is so imminent as not to admit of a delay until the United States, in Congress assembled, can be consulted; nor shall any state grant commissions to any ships, or vessels of war, nor letters of marque or reprisal, except it be after a declaration of war by the United States, in Congress assembled, and then only against the kingdom or state, and the subjects thereof, against which war has been so declared, and under such regulations as shall be established by the United States, in Congress assembled, unless such state be infested by pirates in which case vessels of war may be fitted out for the occasion, and kept so long as the danger shall continue, or until the United States, in Congress assembled, shall determine otherwise.

Article 7. When land forces are raised by any state for the common defence, all officers of, or under the rank of colonel shall be appointed by the legislature of each state respectively, by whom such forces are raised, or in such manner as such state shall direct; and all vacancies shall be filled up by the state which first made the appointment.

Article 8. All charges of war, and all other expences, that shall be incurred for the common defence, or general welfare, and allowed by the United States, in Congress assembled, shall be defrayed out of a common treasury, which shall be supplied by the several states, in proportion to the value of all land within each state, granted to, or surveyed for any person, as such land, and the buildings and improvements thereon, shall be estimated, according to such mode as the United States, in Congress assembled, shall from time to time direct and appoint.

The taxes for paying that proportion shall be laid and levied by the authority and direction of the legislatures of the several states, within the time agreed upon by the United States, in Congress assembled.

Article 9. The United States, in Congress assembled,

shall have the sole, and exclusive right and power, of determining on peace and war, except in such cases mentioned in the sixth article, of sending and receiving ambassadors; entering into treaties and alliances, provided that no treaty of commerce shall be made, whereby the legislature of any state shall be restrained from imposing such imposts and duties on foreigners as their own people are subjected to, or from prohibiting the exportation or importation of any species of goods or commodities, whatsoever; of establishing rules for deciding in all cases, what captures on land and water shall be legal, &c. in what manner prizes taken by land, or naval forces, in the service of the United States, shall be divided, or appropriated; of granting letters of marque and reprisal, in time of peace; appointing courts for the trial of piracies, for felonies committed upon the high seas, and establishing courts for receiving and determining finally, appeals in all cases of captures, provided that no member of Congress shall be appointed judge of any of said courts.

The United States, in Congress assembled, shall also be the last resort on appeal in all disputes and differences now subsisting, or that may hereafter arise between two or more states, concerning boundary, jurisdiction, or any other cause whatsoever; which authority shall always be exercised in the manner following, viz —

Whenever the legislative or executive authority, or lawful agent of any state, in controversy with another, shall present a petition to Congress, stating the matter in question, and praying for a hearing, notice thereof shall be given by order of Congress, to the legislative or executive authority of the other state in controversy, and a day assigned for the appearance of the parties, by their lawful agents, who shall then be directed to appoint by joint consent, commissioners or judges to constitute a court, who shall hear and determine the matter in question: but if they cannot agree, Congress shall name three persons from each of the United States, and from the list of such persons, each party shall alternately strike out one, the petitioners beginning, until the number shall be reduced down to thirteen, and from that number not less than seven nor more than nine names, as Congress shall direct shall in the presence of Congress, be drawn out by lot, and the persons so drawn out,



or any five of them, shall be commissioners or judges, to hear and finally determine the controversy, so always as a major part of the judges who shall agree in the determination; and if either party shall neglect to attend at the day appointed, without shewing reasons which Congress shall judge sufficient, or being present shall refuse to strike, the Congress shall proceed to nominate three persons out of each state, and the secretary of Congress shall strike in behalf of such party absent or refusing; and the judgment and sentence of the court to be appointed, in the manner before prescribed, shall be final and conclusive; and if any of the parties shall refuse to submit to the authority of such court, or to appear or defend their claim or cause, the court shall nevertheless proceed to pass sentence or judgment which shall in like manner be final and conclusive, the judgment or sentence, in either case, being transmitted to Congress and lodged among the acts of Congress for the security of the parties concerned: provided that every commissioner, before he sits in judgment, shall take an oath, to be administered by one of the judges of the Supreme or Superior Court of the state where the cause shall be tried, "well and truly to hear and determine the matter in question, according to the best of his judgment, without favor or affection, or hope of reward;" provided also, that no state shall be deprived of territory for the benefit of the United States.

All controversies concerning the private right of soil, claimed under different grants of two or more states, whose jurisdictions, as they may respect such lands, and the states that passed such grants, are adjusted, the said grants, or either of them, being at the same time claimed to have originated antecedent to such settlement of jurisdiction, shall, on the petition of either party to the Congress of the United States, be determined as near as may be in the same manner as is before prescribed for deciding disputes, respecting territorial jurisdiction between different states.

The United States, in Congress assembled, shall have the sole and exclusive power of regulating the alloy and value of coin, struck by their own authority, or by that of the respective states; fixing the standard of weights and measures throughout the United States; regulating trade, and managing all affairs with the Indians, not

members of any of the states, provided that the legislative rights of any state, within its own limits, be not infringed or violated. Establishing and regulating post offices, from one state to another throughout the United States, and exacting such postages on the papers passing through them, as may be requisite to defray the expenses of such offices; appointing all the officers of the naval forces, and commissioning all officers whatever, in the service of the United States; making rules for the governing and regulating of the said land and naval forces, and directing their operations.

The United States, in Congress assembled, shall have authority to appoint a committee to sit in the recess of Congress, to be denominated the *Committee of the States*, to consist of one delegate from each state, and to appoint such other committees, and civil officers, as shall be necessary for managing the general affairs of the United States, under their direction; to appoint one of their number to preside, provided no person be allowed to serve in the office of President, for more than one year, in any term of three years; to ascertain the necessary sums of money to be raised for the service of the United States, and to appropriate and apply the same for defraying the public expenses; to borrow money, or emit bills on the credit of the United States, transmitting every half year to the several states, an account of the sums of money so borrowed or emitted; to build and equip a navy, to agree upon the number of land forces, and to make requisitions from each state for its quota, in proportion to the number of white inhabitants in such state; which requisition shall be binding, and thereupon the legislature of each state shall appoint the regimental officers, raise the men, and clothe, arm and equip them, in a soldier-like manner, at the expense of the United States; and the officers and men so clothed, armed and equipped, shall march to the place appointed, within the time agreed upon by the United States, in Congress assembled: but if the United States, in Congress assembled, shall upon consideration of circumstances, judge proper that any state should not raise men or should raise a less number than its quota, and that any other state should raise a greater number than its quota, such extra number shall be raised, officered, clothed, armed and equipped, in the same manner as the

quota of such state, unless the legislature of such state shall judge that such extra number cannot be safely spared out of the same. In such case they shall raise, officer, clothe, arm and equip, as many of such extra number as they judge can be safely spared. And the officers and men, so clothed and equipped, shall march to the place appointed, and within the time agreed on by the United States, in Congress assembled.

The United States, in Congress assembled, shall never engage in war, nor grant letters of marque and reprisal in time of peace, nor enter into any treaties or alliances, nor coin money, nor regulate the value thereof, nor ascertain the sums and expenses necessary for the defence and welfare of the United States, or any of them; nor emit bills of credit, nor borrow money on the credit of the United States, nor appropriate money, nor agree upon the number of vessels of war to be built or purchased, or the number of land or sea forces to be raised, nor appoint a commander-in-chief of the army or navy, unless nine states shall assent to the same; nor shall a question on any point, except for adjourning from day to day, be determined, unless by the votes of a majority of the United States, in Congress assembled.

The Congress of the United States, shall have power to adjourn to any time within the year, and to any place within the United States, so that no period of adjournment be for a longer space than six months, and shall publish the journals of their proceedings monthly, except such parts thereof relating to treaties, alliances, or military operations, as in their judgment require secrecy; and the yeas and nays of the delegation of each state, on any question, shall be entered upon the journals when it is desired by any delegate; and the delegates of a state, or either of them, at his or their request, shall be furnished with a copy of said journal, except such parts as are above excepted, to lay before the legislatures of the several states.

Article 10. The committee of the states, or any nine of them, shall be authorised to execute, in the recess of Congress, such of the powers of Congress as the United States, in Congress assembled, by the consent of the nine states, shall see fit, from time to time, to vest them with; provided that no power be delegated to the said committee, for the exercise of which, by the articles of confedera-

tion, the voice of nine states in the Congress of the United States assembled, is requisite.

Article 11. Canada acceding to this confederation, and joining in the measures of the United States, shall be admitted into, and be entitled to all the advantages of this union; but no other colony shall be admitted into the same, unless such admission be agreed to by nine states.

Article 12. All bills of credit emitted, monies borrowed, and debts contracted, by, or under the authority of, Congress, before the assembling of the United States, in pursuance of the present confederation, shall be deemed and considered as a charge against the United States, for payment and satisfaction whereof, the said United States and the public faith are hereby solemnly pledged.

Article 13. Every state shall abide by the determinations of the United States, in Congress assembled, on all questions, which by this confederation are submitted to them. And the articles of this confederation shall be inviolably observed by every state, and the union shall be perpetual; nor shall any alteration, at any time hereafter, be made in any of them; unless such alteration be agreed to in a Congress of the United States, and be afterward confirmed by the legislature of every state."

This confederation was submitted to the several states for their approbation and acceptance,\* and when duly approved by all the states, went into operation, and became the palladium of the United States, through the revolutionary war, and down to the year 1789, when the present Federal Constitution was organized, and went into operation.

Such was the virtue of the American character, that even this rope of sand possessed powers and energies sufficient to manage the affairs of a rising state, and regulate and controul all their essential concerns, for the best interests of the whole; but when peace had removed the pressure of the common danger, and private interest began to claim precedence of the public good, and corrupt intrigue began to trample upon the public

---

\*Twelve states ratified this confederation, in December following.

virtue and public rights, then it became necessary to revise this compact, and raise in its place that stupendous monument of wisdom and virtue, the Federal Constitution.



## CONSTITUTION OF THE U. STATES.

As proposed by the Convention held at Philadelphia, September 17th, 1787, and ratified by the several States; with the subsequent amendments.

### PREAMBLE.

We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, establish justice, ensure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution, for the United States of America.

### ARTICLE I.

Section 1. All legislative powers herein granted, shall be vested in a Congress of the United States, which shall consist of a Senate, and a House of Representatives.

Section 2. The House of Representatives shall be composed of Members chosen every second year, by the people of the several states; and the electors in each state, shall have the qualifications requisite for the most numerous branch of the state legislature.

No person shall be a Representative who has not attained to the age of twenty-five years, and been seven years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that state in which he shall be chosen.

Representatives and direct taxes, shall be apportioned among the several states, which may be included within this Union, according to their respective numbers, which shall be determined by adding to the whole number of free persons, including those bound to service for a term of years, and excluding Indians not taxed, three-

fifths of all other persons. The actual enumeration shall be made within three years after the first meeting of the Congress of the United States, and within every subsequent term of ten years, in such manner as they shall by law direct. The number of Representatives shall not exceed one for every thirty thousand; but each state shall have, at least, one Representative. And until such enumeration shall be made, the state of New-Hampshire shall be entitled to choose three—Massachusetts eight—Rhode island and Providence Plantations one—Connecticut five—New-York six—New-Jersey four—Pennsylvania eight—Delaware one—Maryland six—Virginia ten—North Carolina five—South Carolina five—and Georgia three.

When vacancies happen in the representation from any state, the Executive authority thereof, shall issue writs of election, to fill such vacancies.

The House of Representatives shall choose their Speaker and other officers, and shall have the sole power of impeachment.

Section 3. The Senate of the United States, shall be composed of two senators from each state, chosen by the legislature thereof, for six years; and each senator shall have one vote.

Immediately after they shall be assembled, in consequence of the first election, they shall be divided as equally as may be, into three classes. The seats of the senators of the first class, shall be vacated at the expiration of the second year; of the second class, at the expiration of the fourth year, and of the third class, at the expiration of the sixth year; so that one-third may be chosen every second year. And if vacancies happen by resignation, or otherwise, during the recess of the legislature of any state, the Executive thereof may make temporary appointments, until the next meeting of the legislature, which shall then fill the vacancies.

No person shall be senator, who has not attained to the age of thirty years, and been nine years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that state for which he shall be chosen.

The Vice-President of the United States, shall be President of the Senate; but shall have no vote, unless they be equally divided.

The Senate shall choose their other officers, and also

a President pro tempore, in the absence of the Vice-President, or when he shall exercise the office of President of the United States.

The Senate shall have the sole power to try all impeachments. When sitting for that purpose, they shall be on oath or affirmation. When the President of the United States is tried, the Chief Justice shall preside; and no person shall be convicted, without the concurrence of two-thirds of the members present.

Judgment, in cases of impeachment, shall not extend further than removal from office and disqualification to hold and enjoy any office of honor, trust or profit, under the United States; but the party convicted, shall nevertheless, be liable and subject to indictment, trial, judgment and punishment, according to law.

Section 4. The times, places and manner of holding elections for senators and representatives, shall be prescribed in each state, by the legislature thereof; but the Congress may at any time by law, make or alter such regulations, except as to the place of choosing senators.

The Congress shall assemble at least once in every year, and such meeting shall be on the first Monday in December, unless they shall by law, appoint a different day.

Section 5. Each House shall be the judge of the elections, returns, and qualifications of its own members, and a majority of each, shall constitute a quorum to do business; but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorised to compel the attendance of absent members, in such manner and under such penalties, as each House may provide.

Each House may determine the rules of its proceedings; punish its members for disorderly behaviour, and with the concurrence of two-thirds, may expel a member.

Each House shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and from time to time, publish the same, excepting such parts as may in their judgments, require secrecy; and the yeas and nays of the members of either House, on any question, shall at the desire of one fifth of those present, be entered on the journal.

Neither House, during the session of Congress, shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than

three days, nor to any other place than that in which the two Houses shall be sitting.

Section 6. The senators and representatives shall receive a compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, and paid out of the treasury of the United States. They shall in all cases, except treason, felony and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest, during their attendance at the session of their respective Houses, and in going to and from the same. And for any speech or debate in either House, they shall not be questioned in any other place.

No senator or representative shall, during the time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil office, under the authority of the United States, which shall have been created, or the emoluments of which shall have been increased during such time; and no person holding any office under the United States, shall be a member of either House, during his continuance in office.

Section 7. All bills for raising revenue, shall originate in the House of Representatives: but the senate may propose or concur with amendments, as in other bills.

Every bill which shall have passed the House of Representatives and the Senate, shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the President of the United States. If he approve, he shall sign it; but if not, he shall return it with his objections, to that House in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large, on their journal, and proceed to re-consider it. If, after such re-consideration, two-thirds of that House shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other House, by which it shall likewise be re-considered, and if approved by two-thirds of that House, it shall become a law. But in all such cases, the yeas and nays of both Houses, shall be determined by yeas and nays, and the names of the persons voting for or against the bill, shall be entered on the journal of each House respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the President in ten days, (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like manner as if he had signed it; unless the Congress by their adjournment, prevent its return, in which case it shall not be a law.

Every order, resolution, or vote, to which the concur-



rence of the Senate and House of Representatives may be necessary, (except on a question of adjournment) shall be presented to the President of the United States, and before the same shall take effect, shall be approved by him, or being disapproved by him, shall be re-passed by two-thirds of the Senate and House of Representatives, according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.

**Section 8** The Congress shall have power to lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts and excises; to pay the debts of the United States, and provide for the common defence and general welfare of the United States; but all duties, imposts and excises, shall be uniform throughout the United States.

To borrow money on the credit of the United States; to regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several states, and with the Indian tribes; to establish an uniform rule of naturalization, and uniform laws on the subject of bankruptcy, throughout the United States. To coin money; regulate the value thereof, and of foreign coin; and fix the standard of weights and measures; to provide for the punishment of counterfeiting the securities and current coin of the United States. To establish post-offices and post roads; to promote the progress of science and useful arts, by securing for limited times, to authors and inventors, the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries. To constitute tribunals inferior to the Supreme Court; to define and punish piracies and felonies, committed on the high seas, and offences against the law of nations. To declare war; grant letters of marque and reprisal, and make rules concerning captures on land and water: to raise and support armies; but no appropriation of money for that use, shall be for a longer term than two years; to provide and maintain a navy: to make rules and regulations for the land and naval forces. To provide for calling forth the militia, to execute the laws of the Union, suppress insurrections, and repel invasions. To provide for organizing, arming and disciplining the militia, and for governing such part of them as may be employed in the service of the United States; reserving to the states respectively, the appointment of the officers, and the authority of training the militia, according

to the discipline prescribed by Congress. To exercise exclusive legislation, in all cases, whatsoever, over such district (not exceeding ten miles square) as may, by the cession of particular states and the acceptance of Congress, become the seat of the government of the United States, and to exercise like authority over all such places purchased by the consent of the legislature of the state in which the same shall be, for the erection of forts, dock-yards, and other needful buildings. And to make all laws which may be necessary for carrying into execution the foregoing powers, vested by this constitution, in the government of the United States, or in any department or office thereof.

Section 9. The migration or importation of such persons as any of the states now existing, shall think proper to admit, shall not be prohibited by Congress, prior to the year one thousand, eight hundred and eight; but a duty may be imposed on such importation, not exceeding ten dollars per each person.

The privileges of the writ of habeas corpus, shall not be suspended, unless in cases of rebellion or invasion, the public safety may require it.

No bill of attainder or ex post facto law shall be passed. No capitation, or other direct tax shall be laid, unless in proportion to the census or enumeration herein before directed to be taken. No tax or duty shall be laid upon any articles exported from any state.

No preference shall be given by any regulation of commerce or revenue, to the ports of one state over those of another: nor shall vessels bound to or from one state be obliged to enter, clear, or pay duties in another.

No monies shall be drawn from the treasury, but in consequence of appropriations made by law; and a regular statement and account of the receipts and expenditures of all public monies, shall be published from time to time.

No title of nobility, shall be granted by the United States. And no person holding any office of profit or trust, under them, shall, without the consent of Congress, accept of any present, emolument, office, or title of any kind whatever, from any king, prince, or foreign state.

Section 10. No state shall enter into any treaty, alliance or confederation; grant letters of marque and rep-

risal; coin money; emit bills of credit; make any thing but gold and silver a tender in payment of debts; pass any bill of attainder or ex post facto law, or law impairing the obligation of contracts, or grant any title of nobility.

No state shall, without the consent of Congress, lay any impost, or duties on imports or exports, except what may be absolutely necessary for executing its inspection laws; and the net produce of all duties and imposts laid by any state, on imports and exports, shall be for the use of the treasury of the United States; and all such laws shall be subject to the revision and control of Congress.

No state shall, without the consent of Congress, lay any duty of tonnage, keep troops, or ships of war, in time of peace; enter into any engagement or compact with another state, or with a foreign power, or engage in war, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent danger as will not admit of delay.

## ARTICLE II.

**Section I.** The executive power shall be vested in a President of the United States of America. He shall hold his office during the term of four years, and together with the Vice-President, chosen for the same term, be elected as follows:

Each state shall appoint, in such manner as the legislature thereof may direct, a number of electors, equal to the whole number of senators and representatives to which the state may be entitled in the Congress; but no senator or representative, or person holding an office of trust or profit, under the United States, shall be appointed an elector.

The electors shall meet in their respective states, and vote by ballot, for two persons, of whom one at least, shall not be an inhabitant of the same state with themselves. And they shall make a list of all the persons voted for, and of the number of votes for each; which list they shall sign and certify, and transmit sealed, to the seat of government of the United States, directed to the President of the senate. The President of the senate shall, in the presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes

shall then be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes, shall be President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; and if there be more than one who shall have such majority, and have an equal number of votes, then the House of Representatives shall immediately choose by ballot, one of them for President. And if no person have a majority, then from the five highest on the list, the said House shall in like manner, choose the President. But in choosing the President, the votes shall be taken by states; the representatives of each state, having one vote. A quorum for this purpose, shall consist of a member or members from two-thirds of the states, and a majority of all the states shall be necessary to a choice.— In every case, after the choice of the President, the person having the greatest number of votes of the electors, shall be Vice-President. But if there be two or more who have equal votes, the senate shall choose from them by ballot, the Vice-President.\*

The Congress may determine the time of choosing the electors, and the day on which they shall give their votes; which day shall be the same throughout the United States.

No person except a natural born citizen, or a citizen of the United States, at the time of the adoption of this constitution, shall be eligible to the office of President; neither shall any person be eligible to that office, who shall not have attained to the age of thirty five years, and been fourteen years a resident within the United States.

In case of the removal of the President from office, or of his death, resignation, or inability to discharge the powers and duties of that office, the same shall devolve on the Vice President; and the Congress may provide by law, for the case of removal, death, resignation, or inability, both of the President and Vice-President, declaring what officer shall then act as President, and such officer shall act accordingly, until the disability be removed, or a President be elected.

The President shall at stated times, receive for his services, a compensation which shall neither be increased nor diminished during the period for which he shall have been elected; and he shall not receive within that peri-

ed, any other emolument from the United States, or any of them.

Before he enter on the execution of his office, he shall take the following oath or affirmation: I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the office of President of the United States, and will to the best of my ability, preserve, protect and defend the constitution of the United States.

Section 2. The President shall be Commander-in-Chief of the army and navy of the United States; and of the militia of the several states, when called into actual service of the United States; he may require the opinion in writing, of the principal officer in each of the executive departments, upon any subject relating to the duties of their respective offices; and he shall have power to grant reprieves or pardons for offences against the United States, except in cases of impeachment.

He shall have the power, by and with the advice and consent of the senate, to make treaties, provided two-thirds of the senators present, concur; and he shall nominate, and by and with the advice and consent of the senate, appoint ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, judges of the supreme court, and all other officers of the United States, whose appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by law. But the Congress may, by law, vest the appointment of such inferior officers, as they think proper, in the President alone, in the courts of law, or in the heads of departments.

The President shall have the power to fill all vacancies that may happen during the recess of the senate, by granting commissions which shall expire at the end of the next session.

Section 3. He shall from time to time, give to the Congress, information of the state of the Union, and recommend to their consideration, such measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient. He may on extraordinary occasions, convene both Houses of Congress, or either of them; and in case of disagreement between them, with respect to the time of adjournment, he may adjourn them to such time and place as he shall think proper. He shall receive ambassadors and other public ministers. He shall take care that the laws are

faithfully executed, and shall commission all the officers of the United States.

Section 4. The President, Vice-President, and all the officers of the United States, shall be removed from office, on impeachment for, and conviction of, treason, bribery, or other high crimes and misdemeanors.

### ARTICLE III.

Section 1. The judicial power of the United States, shall be vested in one supreme court, and in such inferior courts as the Congress may from time to time ordain and establish. The judges, both of the supreme and inferior courts, shall hold their offices during good behaviour, and shall, at stated times, receive for their services, a compensation, which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office.

Section 2. The judicial power shall extend to all cases in law and equity, arising under this constitution, the laws of the United States, and treaties made under their authority; to all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls; to all cases of admiralty and maritime jurisdiction; to controversies to which the United States shall be a party; to controversies between two or more states; between a state and citizens of another state; between citizens of different states; between citizens of the same state, claiming lands under grants of different states, and between a state, or the citizens thereof and foreign states, citizens or subjects.

In all cases affecting ambassadors, or other public ministers and consuls, and those in which a state shall be a party, the supreme court shall have original jurisdiction. In all the other cases before mentioned, the supreme court shall have appellate jurisdiction, both as to law and fact, with such exceptions, and under such regulations as the Congress shall make.

The trial of all crimes, except in cases of impeachment, shall be by jury, and such trial shall be held in the state where the said crimes shall have been committed; but when not committed within any state, the trial shall be at such place or places, as the Congress shall by law, have directed.

3. Treason against the United States, shall consist only in levying war against them, or in adhering to their

enemies, giving them aid and comfort. No person shall be convicted of treason, unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open court.

The Congress shall have power to declare the punishment of treason; but no attainder of treason, shall work corruption of blood or forfeiture, except during the life of the person attained.

#### ARTICLE IV.

Section 1. Full faith and credit shall be given in each state, to the public acts, records, and judicial proceedings of every other state. And the Congress may, by general laws, prescribe the manner in which such acts, records and proceedings shall be proved, and the effect thereof.

Section 2. The citizens of each state shall be entitled to all the privileges and immunities of the citizens of the several states.

A person charged with treason, felony, or other crime, in any state, who shall flee from justice, and be found in another state, shall, on demand of the executive authority of the state from which he fled, be delivered up, to be removed to the state having jurisdiction of the crime.

No person held to service or labour in one state, under the laws thereof, escaping into another, shall in consequence of any law or regulations therein, be discharged from such service or labour, but shall be delivered up on claim of the party to whom such service or labour may be due.

Section 3. New states may be admitted by the Congress, into this Union; but no new state shall be formed or erected within the jurisdiction of any other state, nor any state be formed by the junction of two or more states or parts of states, without the consent of the legislatures of the states concerned, as well as of the Congress.

The Congress shall have power to dispose of, and make all needful rules and regulations respecting the territory, and other property belonging to the United States; and nothing in this constitution shall be so con-

structed as to prejudice any claims of the United States, or any particular state.

Section 4. The United States shall guarantee to every state in this Union, a republican form of government; and shall protect each of them against invasion; and on application of the legislature or of the executive, (when the legislature cannot be convened) against domestic violence.

#### ARTICLE V.

The Congress, whenever two-thirds of both Houses shall deem it necessary, shall propose amendments to this constitution; or on the application of the legislatures of two-thirds of the states, shall call a convention for proposing amendments, which in either case, shall be valid, to all intents and purposes, as part of this constitution, when ratified by the legislatures of three-fourths of the several states, or by conventions in three-fourths thereof, as the one or the other mode may be proposed by the Congress; *provided*, that no amendment which may be made prior to the year one thousand eight hundred and eight, shall in any manner affect the first and fourth clauses in the ninth section of the first article; and that no state without its consent, shall be deprived of its equal suffrage in the senate.

#### ARTICLE VI.

All debts contracted, and engagements entered into, before the adoption of this constitution, shall be as valid against the United States, under this constitution, as under the confederation.

This constitution, and the laws of the United States, which shall be made in pursuance thereof, and all treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the United States, shall be the supreme law of the land; and the judge in every state shall be bound thereby, any thing in this constitution, or laws of any state to the contrary, notwithstanding.

The senators and representatives before mentioned, and the members of the several state legislatures, and all executive and judicial officers, both of the United States and of the several states, shall be bound by oath or affirmation, to support this constitution; but no reli-



gious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust, under the United States.

#### ARTICLE VII.

The ratification of the convention of nine states, shall be sufficient for the establishment of this constitution, between the states so ratifying the same.

#### AMENDMENTS.

Article 1. Congress shall make no law respecting the establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof, or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the government for a redress of grievances.

Article 2. A well regulated militia being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear arms, shall not be infringed.

Article 3. No soldier shall, in time of peace, be quartered in any house, without the consent of the owner; nor in time of war, but in a manner to be prescribed by law.

Article 4. The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures, shall not be violated; and no warrants shall issue, but upon probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched, and the persons and things to be seized.

Article 5. No person shall be held to answer for a capital or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval service, or in the militia, when in actual service, in time of war or public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offence, to be twice put in jeopardy of life and limb; nor shall be compelled in any criminal case, to be witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty or property, without due process of law; nor shall private property be taken for the public use, without just compensation.

Article 6. In all criminal prosecutions, the accused

shall enjoy the right of a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the state and district wherein the crime shall have been previously committed; which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation; to be confronted with the witnesses against him; to have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and to have the assistance of counsel, for his defence.

Article 7. In suits at common law, where the value in controversy, shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury, shall be preserved; and no fact tried by a jury, shall be otherwise re examined in any court of the United States, than according to the rules of the common law.

Article 8. Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.

Article 9. The enumeration in the constitution of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people.

Article 10. The powers not delegated by the constitution to the United States, nor prohibited by it to the states, are reserved to the states respectively, or to the people.

Article 11. The judicial power of the United States, shall not be construed to extend to any suit in law or equity, commenced, or prosecuted against one of the United States, by citizens of another state, or by citizens or subjects of a foreign state.

Article 12. (In lieu of the third paragraph of the first section of the second article.) The electors shall meet in their respective states, and vote by ballot for President and Vice-President, one of whom at least, shall not be an inhabitant of the same state with themselves. They shall name in their ballots, the person voted for as President, and in distinct ballots, the person voted for as Vice President; and they shall make distinct lists of all persons voted for as President, and of all persons voted for as Vice President, and of the number of votes for each: which lists they shall sign and certify, and transmit, sealed, to the seat of the government of the United States, directed to the President of the senate. The President of the senate shall, in the presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes shall then be counted. The person

having the greatest number of votes for President, shall be the President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; but if no person have such majority, then from the persons having the highest number, not exceeding three, on the list of those voted for as President, the House of Representatives shall choose immediately, by ballot, the President. But in choosing the President, the votes shall be taken by states; the representatives from each state having one vote. A quorum for this purpose, shall consist of a member or members from two thirds of the states, and a majority of all the states shall be necessary to a choice. And if the House of Representatives shall not choose a President, whenever the right of choice shall devolve upon them, before the 4th day of March, next following, then the Vice-President shall act as President as in the case of the death of, or other constitutional disability of the President.

The person having the greatest number of votes as Vice President, shall be Vice President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; but if no person have a majority, then from the two highest numbers on the list, the senate shall choose the Vice-President. A quorum for this purpose, shall consist of two thirds of the whole number of senators, and a majority of the whole number, shall be necessary to a choice. But no person constitutionally ineligible to the office of President, shall be eligible to the office of Vice-President.

This 12th article was ratified in 1804.



Soon after the treaty made in 1684, by the colonies with the Five Nations of Indians, Monsieur De la Barre, Governor of Canada, commenced a war upon them, and entered their country with an army of 1700 men, and the total ruin of the Five Nations, was meditated — De la Barre imported fresh troops from France, to prosecute the war, and the Duke of York at the same time, instructed Governor Dongau, to maintain a strict neutrality; but the Governor saw with great concern the storm that was about to burst upon the savages; disregarded the Duke's instructions; gave them timely no-

tice, and promised his assistance. A mortal sickness, arising from bad provisions, commenced in the French army, and defeated the enterprise, and compelled De la Barre to make overtures of peace, and invite the Five Nations to a conference. Governor Dongan by his influence, prevented the Mohawks and Senecas, from attending the treaty; but the Onondagas, Oneidas and Cayugas, met the French Governor in council, where he addressed them with the following speech:

“The King my master, being informed that the Five Nations have often infringed the peace, has ordered me to come hither with a guard, and to send Ohguesse to the Onondagas, to bring the chief Sachems to my camp.—The intention of the Great King, is that you and I may smoke the Calumet of peace together; but on this condition, that you promise me, in the name of the Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas and Mohawks, to give entire satisfaction and reparation to his subjects, and for the future, never to molest them.

“The Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas and Mohawks, have robbed and abused all the traders that were passing to the Illinois and Miamis, and other Indian nations, the children of my King. They have acted, on these occasions, contrary to the treaty of peace with my predecessor. I am ordered, therefore, to demand satisfaction, and to tell them, that in case of refusal, or their plundering us any more, that I have express orders to declare war. This belt confirms my words. The warriors of the Five Nations, have conducted the English into the Lakes, which belong to the King, my master, and brought the English among the nations that are his children, to destroy the trade of his subjects, and to withdraw these nations from him. They have carried the English hither, notwithstanding the prohibition of the late Governor of New-York, who foresaw the risque that both they and you would run. I am willing to forget those things, but if ever the like shall happen for the future, I have express orders to declare war against you. This belt confirms my words. Your warriors have made several barbarous incursions on the Illinois and Umannes: they have massacred men, women and children, and have made many of these nations prisoners, who thought themselves safe in their villages, in time of peace; these people, who are my King's chil-

dren, must not be your slaves; you must give them their liberty, and send them back into their own country. If the Five Nations shall refuse to do this, I have express orders to declare war against them. This belt confirms my words.

"This is what I have to say to Garrangula, that he may carry to the Senecas, Onondagas, Oneidas, Cayugas and Mohawks, the declaration which the King, my master, has commanded me to make. He doth not wish them to force him to send a great army to Cadarackui Fort to begin a war which must be fatal to them. He would be sorry that this Fort, that was the work of peace, should become the prison of your warriors. We must endeavour, on both sides, to prevent such misfortunes.—The French, who are the brethren and friends of the Five Nations, will never trouble their repose, provided that the satisfaction which I demand, be given; and that the treaties of peace be hereafter observed. I shall be extremely grieved, if my words do not produce the effect which I expect from them; for then I shall be obliged to join with the Governor of New-York, who is commanded by his master to assist me and burn the castles of the Five Nations, and destroy you. This belt confirms my words."

The contempt with which Garrangula listened to the speech of De la Barre, was first expressed by his walking five or six times round the circle, in the midst of which the French warrior was seated in his elbow-chair, and then by his thus addressing him:

"YONNONDIO.

"I honor you, and the warriors that are with me like wise honor you. Your interpreter has finished your speech; I now begin mine. My words make haste to reach your ears; hearken to them.

"Yonnondio, you must have believed, when you left Quebec, that the sun had burnt up all the forests, which render our country inaccessible to the French, or that the lakes had so far overflown the banks, that they had surrounded our castles, and that it was impossible for us to get out of them. Yes, Yonnondio, surely you must have dreamt so, and the curiosity of seeing so great a wonder has brought you so far. Now you are undeceived, since that I and the warriors here present, are come

to assure you, that the Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas and Mohawks, are yet alive. I thank you, in their name, for bringing back into their country, the Calumet which your predecessor received from their hands. It was happy for you that you left under ground that murdering hatchet, that has been so often dyed in the blood of the French. Hear, Yonnondio, I do not sleep, I have my eyes open, and the sun which enlightens me, discovers to me a great captain at the head of a company of soldiers, who speaks as if he were dreaming. He says that he only came to the Lake to smoke on the great Calumet with the Onondagas. But Garrangula says that he sees the contrary, that it was to knock them on the head, if sickness had not weakened the arms of the French.

"I see Yonnondio raving in a camp of sick men, whose lives the Great Spirit has saved, by inflicting this sickness on them. Hear Yonnondio, our women had taken their clubs, our children and old men had carried their bows and arrows into the heart of your camp, if our warriors had not disarmed them and kept them back, when your messenger, Ohguesse, came to our castles.—It is done, and I have said it. Hear, Yonnondio, we plundered none of the French, but those that carried guns, powder and ball, to the Twightwies and Chictaghicks, because those arms might have cost us our lives. Herein we follow the example of the Jesuits, who stave all the kegs of rum brought to our castles, lest the drunken Indians should knock them on the head. Our warriors have not beaver enough to pay for all these arms that they have taken, and our old men are not afraid of the war. This belt preserves my words.

"We carried the English into our Lakes, to trade there with the Utawawas and Quatoghies, as the Adirondacks brought the French to our castles, to carry on a trade, which the English say is theirs. We are born free; we neither depend on Yonnondio nor Corlear.

"We may go where we please, and carry with us whom we please, and buy and sell what we please: if your allies be your slaves, use them as such, command them to receive no other but your people. This belt preserves my words.

"We knocked the Twightwies and Chictaghicks on the head, because they had cut down the trees of peace.

which were the limits of our country. They have hunted beavers on our lands; they have acted contrary to the customs of all Indians, for they have left none of the beavers alive, they killed both male and female.— They brought the *Satapas* into the country, to take part with them, after they had concerted ill designs against us. We have done less than either the English or French, that have usurped the lands of so many Indian nations, and chased them from their own country. This belt preserves my words.

“Hear, *Yonnondio*, what I say, is the voice of all the Five Nations; hear what they answer; open your ears to what they speak. The *Senecas*, *Cayugas*, *Onondagas*, *Oneidas* and *Mohawks*, say that when they buried the hatchet at *Cadarackui*, (in the presence of your predecessor) in the middle of the Fort, they planted the tree of peace in the same place, to be there carefully preserved, that in place of a retreat for soldiers, that Fort might be a rendezvous for merchants; that in place of arms and ammunition of war, beavers and merchandize should only enter there.

“Hear, *Yonnondio*, take care for the future, that so great a number of soldiers as appear there do not choke the tree of peace planted in so small a Fort. It will be a great loss, if, after it had so easily taken root, you should stop its growth, and prevent its covering your country and ours with its branches. I assure you, in the name of the Five Nations, that our warriors shall dance to the Calumet of peace under its leaves, and shall remain quiet on their mats, and shall never dig up the hatchet, till their brother *Yonnondio* or *Corlear*, shall either jointly or separately endeavor to attack the country which the Great Spirit has given to our ancestors.— This belt preserves my words, and this other, the authority which the Five Nations have given me.”

*Garrangula* then turning to the interpreter, *Monsieur La Main*, thus addressed him:—“Take courage *Olguesse*, you have spirit, speak, explain my words, forget nothing, tell all that your brethren and friends say to *Yonnondio*, your Governor, by the mouth of *Garrangula*, who loves you and desires you to accept of this present of beaver, and take part with me in my feast to which I invite you. This present of beaver is sent to *Yonnondio*, on the part of the Five Nations.”

Monsieur De la Barre withdrew in silent chagrin, and retired to Montreal, and the next year he was succeeded in the government, by the Marquis De Nonville, who brought out from France a regiment of troops in 1685.

I have given the above display of eloquence verbatim from Smith's History of New-York, as being perfectly characteristic of the two nations.



#### INDIAN AND FRENCH WAR OF 1697.

The details of individual sufferings that occurred during this war, were they faithfully recorded, would excite the sympathies of the most unfeeling bosom. One instance only, can we relate.

In an attack, by a body of Indians, upon Haverhill, New-Hampshire, in the winter of 1697, the concluding year of the war, a party of the assailants, burning with savage animosity, approached the house of a Mr. Dastan. Upon the first alarm, he flew from a neighboring field, to his family, with the hope of hurrying them to a place of safety. Seven of his children, he directed to flee, while he himself went to assist his wife, who was confined to her bed with an infant a week old. But before she could leave the bed the savages arrived.

In despair of rendering her assistance, Mr. Dastan flew to the door, mounted his horse, and determined in his own mind, to snatch up the child which he loved best. He followed in pursuit of his little flock, but on coming up with them, he found it impossible to make a selection. He determined, therefore, to meet his fate with them; to defend and save them from the knife of the pursuing savages, or die by their side.

A body of the Indians soon came up with them, and from short distances, commenced a fire upon him and his little company. For more than a mile, he continued to retreat, placing himself between the fire of the Indians and his children, and returning their shots with great spirit and success. At length he saw them all safely lodged from their bloody pursuers, in a distant house.

It is not easy to find a nobler instance of fortitude and courage, inspired by affection, than is exhibited in this



heroic act. Let us ever cultivate the influence of those ties of kindred, which are capable of giving so generous and elevated a directed to our actions.

As Mr. Dustan quitted his house, a party of Indians entered it. Mrs. Dustan was in bed; but they ordered her to rise instantly, and before she could finish dressing, obliged her and the nurse, who had in vain attempted to escape with the infant, to quit the house, which they plundered and burnt.

In these distressing circumstances, Mrs. Dustan began her march with other captives, into the wilderness. The air was keen, and their path led through snow and deep mud, and their savage conductors delighted rather in their affliction, than in alleviating their distress.

The company had proceeded but a short distance, when an Indian, thinking the infant an incumbrance, took it from the arms of the nurse and violently terminated its life. Such of the other captives as became weary and incapable of proceeding, the Indians killed with their tomahawks. Feeble as Mrs. Dustan was, both she and her nurse sustained, with wonderful energy, the fatigues and misery attending a journey of one hundred and fifty miles.

On their arriving at the place of their destination, they found the wigwam of the savage who claimed them, to be inhabited by twelve Indians. In the ensuing April, this family set out, with their captives, for an Indian settlement, still more remote. The captives were informed that on their arrival at the settlement, they must submit to be stripped, scourged, and run the gauntlet between two files of Indians. This information earned distress to the minds of the captive women, and led them promptly to devise some means of escape.

Early in the morning of the 31st of April, Mrs. Dustan awaking her nurse and another fellow prisoner, they dispatched ten of the twelve Indians, while they were asleep; the other two escaped. The women then commenced their difficult and dangerous journey through the wilderness, and at length arrived safe at Haverhill. Subsequently they visited Boston, and received from the General Court, a handsome consideration for their extraordinary sufferings and heroic conduct.—*Dwight's Travels.*

## DESCRIPTION OF LOUISBURG.

The harbour of Louisburg, lies in latitude 45 deg. 55 min. its entrance is about four hundred yards wide.—The anchorage is uniformly safe, and ships may run ashore on a soft muddy bottom. The depth of water at the entrance is about 9, to 12 fathom. The harbor lies open to the south-east. Upon a neck of land upon the south side of the harbour, was built the town, two miles and a quarter in circumference; fortified in every accessible part, with a rampart of stone, from thirty to sixty feet high, and a ditch eighty feet wide. A space of about two hundred yards was left without a rampart, on the side next to the sea, it was enclosed with a simple dike, and a line of pickets; the sea was so shallow in this place, that it made only a narrow channel, inaccessible from its numerous reefs, to any shipping whatever. The side fire from the bastions secured this spot from attack. There were six bastions and three batteries, containing embrasures for one hundred and forty-eight cannon, of which sixty-five only were mounted, and sixteen mortars. On an island at the entrance of the harbour, was planted a battery of thirty cannon, carrying 28 pound shot; and at the bottom of the harbour, directly opposite to the entrance, was the grand, or royal battery, of twenty-eight cannon, forty-two pounders, and two eighteen pounders. On a high cliff, opposite to the island battery, stood a light-house; and within this point, at the north-east part of the harbor, was a cartening wharf, secure from all winds, and a magazine of naval stores.

The town was regularly laid out in squares; the streets were broad, the houses mostly of wood, but some of stone. On the west side, near the rampart, was a spacious citadel, and a large parade; on the one side of which were the Governor's apartments; under the rampart were casemates to receive the women and children, during a siege. The entrance of the town on the land side, was at the west gate, over a draw-bridge, near to which was a circular battery, mounting sixteen guns of 24 pound shot.

These works had been twenty-five years in building, and had cost the crown of France, not less than thirty millions of livres. The place was so strong as to be

called the "Dunkirk of America." It was in peace a safe retreat for the ships of France, bound homeward from the East or West Indies; and in war a source of distress to the northern English Colonies; its situation being extremely favourable for privateers to ruin their fishery, and intercept their coasting and foreign trade; for which reason the reduction of it was as desirable to them, as the reduction of Carthage was to the Romans.  
—*Abbe Reynal.*



## MARQUIS LA FAYETTE AND BARON VIOMINEL.

General Washington detached the Marquis La Fayette, in the morning, at the head of the American light infantry, supported by the Baron Viominel, from the line of the French, to advance and storm those redoubts, which had so annoyed them through the night. Lieutenant Colonel Hamilton commanded the van of the corps of General La Fayette. The redoubt was promptly carried by La Fayette, at the point of the bayonet; but the captives were spared. The Marquis La Fayette sent his aid, Major Barbour, through the whole line of the enemy's fire, to notify the Baron Viominel of his success, and to inquire where he was; to which the Baron replied, "I am not in my redoubt, but shall be in five minutes;" in five minutes his redoubt was carried.

General Washington was highly gratified with this exploit, and commended the officers and soldiers engaged in it in the highest terms, in the following orders:

"The Marquis La Fayette's division will mount the trenches to morrow. The Commander-in-Chief congratulates the allied army, on the success of the enterprise last evening, against the two important redoubts on the left of the enemy's works. He requests the Baron Viominel, who commanded the French grenadiers, and the Marquis La Fayette, who commanded the American light infantry, to accept his warmest acknowledgments for the excellence of their dispositions, and for their own gallant conduct upon the occasion. And he begs them to present his thanks to every individual officer, and to the men of their respective commands, for the spirit and the rapidity with which they advanced

to the points of attack assigned them, and for the admirable firmness with which they supported them, under the fire of the enemy, without returning a shot.

The General reflects with the highest pleasure, upon the confidence which the troops of the two nations must hereafter have in each other; assured of mutual support, he is convinced there is no danger which they will not cheerfully encounter; no difficulty which they will not bravely overcome."



#### ADVENTURES OF SERGEANT CHAMPE.

"Having matured the plan, General Washington sent to Major Lee, to repair to Head-Quarters, (at Tappan, on the Hudson,) where upon his arrival, he thus addressed him :

"I have sent for you in the expectation that you have some one in your corps, who is willing to undertake a delicate and hazardous project. Whoever comes forward, will confer great obligations upon me, personally, and in behalf of the United States, I will reward him amply. No time is to be lost: he must proceed, if possible, this night. I intend to seize Arnold, and save Andre."

Major Lee named a Sergeant Major of his corps, by the name of Champe; a native of Virginia; a man full of bone and muscle, with a countenance grave, thoughtful and taciturn, of tried courage and inflexible perseverance.

Champe was sent for by Major Lee, and the plan proposed, which was to desert and escape to New-York; appear friendly to the enemy; watch Arnold, and by the assistance of such trusty friend as he could procure, seize Arnold and convey him to some private place upon the River, to be agreed upon, where boats should be in waiting to convey him away.

Champe listened to the plan attentively; but with the spirit of a soldier of honour and integrity, replied, "It is not danger nor difficulty that deter me from immediately accepting the proposal, but the *ignominy of desertion, and the ignominy of enlisting with the enemy.*"

To which Major Lee replied, "that although he would

appear to desert, yet as he obeyed the call of his Commander-in-Chief, his departure could not be considered as criminal, and if he suffered in his reputation for a time, the matter should one day be explained to his credit."—It was further urged, "that to bring such a villain as Arnold to justice, loaded with guilt as he was, and to save Andre, so young, so brave, so accomplished, and so beloved; and to achieve so much good, in the cause of his country, was more than sufficient to counterbalance all his objections."

Champe felt the force of this reasoning and accepted the service. It was eleven o'clock at night; but he hastily returned to camp, with his instructions in his pocket, and taking his cloak and valise, &c. drew his horse from the picket, mounted and pushed forward with full speed for New-York.

Within the space of half an hour, Captain Carnes, the officer of the night, waited upon Major Lee, and informed him that one of the patrols had discovered a dragoon, who being challenged, put spurs to his horse, and made his escape.

Major Lee, who was in vain attempting to rest, complained of fatigue, and coolly replied, "that the patrol, most probably, had mistaken a countryman for a dragoon," and thus attempted to elude the complaint, and save a pursuit. But Captain Carnes was alive to his duty, and retired in haste, to assemble his corps.—On calling the roll, it was found that Champe was missing. Carnes returned hastily and informed Lee of the fact, adding, "I have detached a party to pursue the deserter as soon as you will furnish the written orders."

Major Lee roused from his broken slumbers, proceeded to draw his orders with as much deliberation as possible, without exciting suspicion, thus concluded: "Bring him alive, that he may suffer in the presence of the army; but kill him if he resists, or escapes after he is taken."

A shower of rain fell soon after Champe's departure, which enabled the pursuers to take the trail of his horse, his shoes, being made in a peculiar form, (as was common to those of the army,) with a private mark upon each, which was seen in the path.

Middleton, the leader of the pursuing party, left

camp a few minutes past 12 o'clock, which gave Champe the start about half an hour; a period much shorter than had been contemplated.

During the night, the dragoons were often delayed in examining the road, to keep the track of the fugitive; but upon the approach of morning, the impression of the horse's shoes were so apparent that they pressed on with more rapidity. Several miles above Bergen, (a village three miles above New-York, on the opposite side of the Hudson,) on ascending a hill, they descried Champe, not more than half a mile ahead, and Champe at the same time descried his pursuers, and knowing their object, put spurs to his horse to secure his escape.

By taking a different road, Champe eluded his pursuers for a few moments, but on approaching the River, he was again descried. Aware of his danger, he lashed his valise, which contained his clothes and orderly book, to his shoulders, and prepared to plunge into the River.

Swift was his flight, and swift the pursuit. Middleton and his party gained upon the fugitive, and would soon have overtaken him; but he threw himself from his horse; plunged into the River, and called loudly for help, to some British galleys that lay off in the stream. They despatched a boat instantly, to rescue Champe, and commenced a brisk fire upon his pursuers. When they had taken him on board the boat, they carried him to New-York, with a letter from the Captain of the galley, stating minutely, the whole affair, as it had passed under his view.

Middleton took Champe's horse and cloak, and returned to camp, where he arrived about three o'clock the next morning. When the soldiers saw Champe's horse, they made the air resound with their acclamations, that the scoundrel was killed.

The agony of Major Lee was indescribable, at sight of the horse; but his fears were soon relieved when he learnt that his faithful Champe had effected his escape, and he repaired instantly to Head Quarters, to bear the joyful tidings to Washington.

Soon after Champe arrived in New York, he was carried before General Clinton, who received him kindly; but examined him closely for more than an hour; many of his questions were so close, that it required all the art

Champe was master of, to answer them without exciting some suspicion. He succeeded, however, and Sir Henry gave him a couple of guineas and recommended him to General Arnold, who was desirous of gaining American recruits.

Arnold received him kindly, and proposed to him to join his legion; but Champe declined, and expressed a desire to retire from the scenes of war; assuring the General, at the same time, that should he change his mind he would enlist.

Champe soon found means to acquaint Major Lee with his adventures; but unfortunately, he could not succeed in taking Arnold, before the execution of Andre.

Ten days before Champe brought his measures to a conclusion, Lee received from him his final communication, appointing the third subsequent night, for a party of dragoons to meet him at Hoboken, (opposite to New-York) where he hoped to deliver Arnold to the officers.

Champe had enlisted into Arnold's legion, from which time, he had every opportunity he could wish, to attend to the habits of the General. He soon discovered that it was his custom to return home about twelve every night, and that previous to going to bed, he always visited the garden. During this visit, the conspirators were to seize and gag him. Champe had taken off several of the palings of the fence, near the house, and replaced them in such a manner that they could be again removed without noise, which would open a passage into an adjoining alley. Into this alley he intended to convey Arnold, with the aid of his companion, who was an associate that had been introduced to him by the friend to whom Champe had been originally made known, by letter from the Commander in Chief, and with whose aid and counsel he had so far conducted the enterprise. His other associate was with the boat, ready at one of the wharves on the Hudson River, to receive the party.

Champe and his friend, intended each to have placed themselves under the shoulders of Arnold, and thus have borne him along, through the most unfrequented alleys and streets, to the boat, and in case they should be questioned, they were prepared to say that they were conveying a drunken soldier to the guard-house.

When arrived at the boat, all difficulties would have been surmounted, and they could have easily crossed

over to the Jersey shore. When the plan was made known to Major Lee, he communicated the same to the Commander-in-Chief, who was highly gratified with the intelligence. He desired Major Lee to meet Champe, and to take care that Arnold should not be hurt.

The day arrived, and Lee with a party of accoutred horse, repaired to the place of rendezvous, in high expectation of meeting Champe, with his prisoner. The party reached Hoboken, about midnight, where they lay concealed in an adjoining wood; but Major Lee, with three dragoons, took their station near the River. Hour after hour passed away, but no boat appeared, until day dawned, and Major Lee found it necessary to withdraw his party and return to camp. He repaired directly to Head-Quarters, to acquaint the General with their mysterious disappointment. General Washington felt the disappointment the more sensibly, because he was fully convinced that the plan would succeed, and Arnold the traitor, be brought to justice, in presence of the whole army. He felt sensibly, at the same time, for his faithful Champe, lest he should have been detected in the execution of his plan, and fallen a victim to his fidelity.

In a few days, Major Lee received an anonymous letter from Champe's patron and friend, informing him that on the day preceding the night fixed for the execution of the plot, Arnold had removed his quarters to another part of the city, to superintend the embarkation of troops for a secret expedition, and that the American legion, consisting chiefly of deserters, had been removed from their barracks to one of their transports, to guard against their desertion before the troops could sail.

Thus it happened, that John Champe, instead of crossing the Hudson, was safely lodged on board of one of the transports, from which he never departed, until he landed with Arnold, in Virginia. Nor was he able to escape from the British army, until after the junction with Lord Cornwallis, at Petersburg, when he deserted.—Proceeding high up into Virginia, he passed into North Carolina, near the Saura Towns, and keeping in the friendly districts of that state, safely joined the army, after it had passed the Congaree, in pursuit of Lord Rawdon.

His approach excited extreme surprise among his former companions, which was not a little increased when



they saw the cordial reception he met with from the late Major, now Lieutenant-Colonel, Lee. His whole story was soon known to the corps, which re-produced the love and respect of officer and soldier, heretofore invariably entertained for the Sergeant, heightened by universal admiration of his late daring and hazardous attempt.

Champe was introduced to General Greene, who very cheerfully complied with the promise made by the Commander-in-Chief, so far as was in his power; and having provided the Sergeant with a good horse, and money for his journey, sent him to General Washington, who munificently rewarded him, agreeable to his wishes, and presented him with a discharge from further service; lest he might, in the vicissitudes of war, fall into the hands of the enemy, where he was sure to die upon a gibbet.

We shall only add, respecting the after life of this adventurer, that when General Washington was called by President Adams, in 1798, to the command of the army prepared to defend the country against the French, he sent to Lieutenant Colonel Lee, to inquire for Champe; intending to bring him into the field, at the head of a company of infantry. Lee sent to Loudon county, Virginia, where Champe had settled after he was discharged; but learnt that he had removed to Kentucky, where he soon after died.—*Lee's Memoirs.*



The cruelties inflicted by the British in the progress of the war, drew from Congress, the following representation and remonstrance:

*In Congress, April 18, 1777.*

“The committee appointed to inquire into the conduct of the enemy, beg leave to report,—

That in every place where the enemy has been, there are heavy complaints of oppression, injury and insult, suffered by the inhabitants, from soldiers, and Americans disaffected to their country's cause. The committee found these complaints so greatly diversified that it was impossible to enumerate them, so it appeared exceedingly difficult to give a distinct and comprehensive view of them, or such an account as would not, if pub-

lished, appear extremely defective when read by the unhappy sufferers, or the country in general. In order, however, in some degree to answer the design of their appointment, they determined to divide the object of their inquiry into four parts. First, the wanton and oppressive devastation of the country, and the destruction of property. Second, the inhuman treatment of those who were so unhappy as to become their prisoners.—Third, the savage butchery of many who had submitted or were incapable of resistance. Fourth, the lust and brutality of the soldiers in abusing of women. They will therefore now briefly state what they found to be the truth upon each of those heads separately, and subjoin to the whole affidavits and other evidence to support their assertion.

First,—The wanton and oppressive devastation of the country, and destruction of property.

The whole track of the British army is marked with desolation, and a wanton destruction of property, particularly through West Chester county, in the State of New-York, the towns of Newark, Elizabeth-Town, Woodbridge, Brunswick, Kingston, Princeton and Trenton, in New-Jersey. The fences destroyed, houses deserted, pulled in pieces, or consumed by fire, and the general face of waste and devastation, spread over a rich and once well cultivated and well inhabited country, would affect the most unfeeling with compassion for the unhappy sufferers, and with indignation and resentment against the barbarous ravagers. It deserves notice that though there are many instances of rage and vengeance against particular persons, yet the destruction was very general, and often undistinguished; those who submitted and took protections, and some who were known to favor them, having frequently suffered in the common ruin. Places and things, which from their public nature and general utility should have been spared by civilized people, have been destroyed or plundered, or both. But above all, places of worship, ministers, and other religious persons of some particular Protestant denominations, seem to have been treated with the most rancorous hatred, and at the same time, with the highest contempt.

Second,—The inhuman treatment of those who were so unhappy as to become prisoners.

The prisoners, instead of the humane treatment which those taken by the United States experienced, were in general treated with the greatest barbarity. Many of them were near four days without food altogether.—When they received a supply, it was both insufficient in point of quantity, and often of the worst kind. They suffered the utmost distress from cold, nakedness and close confinement. Freemen and men of substance suffered all that a generous mind could suffer from the contempt and mockery of British and foreign mercenaries. Multitudes died in prison. When they were sent out, several died in the boats while carrying ashore, or upon the road attempting to go home. The committee, in the course of their inquiry, learned that sometimes the common soldiers expressed sympathy with the prisoners, and the foreigners more than the English. But this was seldom or never the case with the officers; nor have they been able to hear of any charitable assistance given them by the inhabitants who remained in or resorted to the city of New-York, which neglect, if universal, they believe was never known to happen in any similar case in a christian country.

Third,—The savage butchery of those who had submitted, and were incapable of resistance.

The committee found it to be the general opinion of the people in the neighborhood of Princeton and Trenton, that the enemy the day before the battle of Princeton, had determined to give no quarter. They did not, however, obtain any clear proof that there were general orders for that purpose, but the treatment of several particular persons at and since that time has been of the most shocking kind, and gives too much countenance to the supposition. Officers wounded and disabled, some of them of the first rank, were barbarously mangled or put to death. A minister of the gospel at Trenton, who neither was nor had been in arms, was massacred in cold blood, though humbly supplicating for mercy.\*

Fourth,—The lust and brutality of the soldiers in abusing women.

The committee had authentic information of many instances of the most indecent treatment, and actual ravishment of married and single women, but such is

---

\*Mr. Roseburgh, minister at the Forks of Delaware.

the nature of that most irreparable injury, that the persons suffering it, and their relations, though perfectly innocent, look upon it as a kind of reproach to have the facts related, and their names known. They have however, procured some affidavits which will be published in the appendix. The originals are lodged with the secretary of the Congress. Some complaints were made to the commanding officers upon this subject, and one affidavit made before a Justice of the Peace, but the committee could not learn that any satisfaction was ever given, or punishment inflicted, except that one soldier at Pennyton, was kept in custody for part of a day.

On the whole, the committee are sorry to say that the cry of barbarity and cruelty is but too well founded, and as in conversation those who are cool to the American cause, have nothing to oppose to the facts but their being incredible, and not like what they are pleased to style the generosity and clemency of the English nation, the Committee beg leave to observe that one of the circumstances most frequently occurring in the inquiry, was the opprobrious, disdainful names given to the Americans. These do not need any proof, as they occur so frequently in the newspapers printed under their direction, and in the intercepted letters of those who are officers, and call themselves gentlemen. It is easy therefore, to see what must be the conduct of a soldier greedy of prey, towards a people whom they have been taught to look upon not as freemen defending their rights on principle, but as desperadoes and profligates, who have risen up against law and order in general, and wish the subversion of society itself. This is the most candid and charitable manner in which the committee can account for the melancholy truths which they have been obliged to report. Indeed, the same deluding principle seems to govern persons and bodies of the highest rank in Britain, for it is worthy of notice, that not pamphleteers only, but king and parliament constantly call those acts lenity, which on their first publication filled this whole continent with resentment and horror.

The above report received, approved, and ordered to be published with the proofs.

CHARLES THOMPSON, Secretary."

*In Congress, November 1, 1777.*

**“A PROCLAMATION.**

“Forasmuch as it is the indispensable duty of all men to adore the superintending Providence of Almighty God; to acknowledge, with gratitude, their obligation to him for benefits received, and to implore such farther blessings as they stand in need of; and it having pleased Him, in his abundant mercy, not only to continue to us the innumerable bounties of his common providence, but also smile upon us in the prosecution of a just and necessary war, for the defence and establishment of our unalienable rights and liberties; particularly in that he hath been pleased in so great a measure to prosper the means used for the support of our troops, and to crown our arms with most signal success: it is therefore recommended to the legislative or executive powers of these United States, to set apart Thursday, the 18th day of December next, for solemn thanksgiving and praise; that with one heart and one voice, the good people may express the grateful feelings of their hearts and consecrate themselves to the service of their Divine Benefactor; and that together with their sincere acknowledgments and offerings, they may join the penitent confession of their manifold sins, whereby they had forfeited every favour, and their humble and earnest supplication that it may please God, through the merits of Jesus Christ, mercifully to forgive and blot them out of remembrance; that it may please him graciously to afford his blessings on the governments of these states respectively, and prosper the public council of the whole; to inspire our commanders, both by land and sea, and all under them, with that wisdom and fortitude which may render them fit instruments, under the Providence of Almighty God, to secure for these United States, the greatest of all blessings, independence and peace; that it may please him to prosper the trade and manufactures of the people, and the labor of the husbandman, that our land may yield its increase: to take schools and seminaries of education, so necessary for cultivating the principles of true liberty, virtue and piety, under his nurturing hand, and to prosper the means of religion, for the promotion and enlargement of that kingdom which

consisteth in righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.

And it is further recommended, that servile labour and such recreation as, though at other times innocent, may be unbecoming the purpose of this appointment, be omitted on so solemn an occasion."



*By the Congress of the United States of America.*

## MANIFESTO.

"THESE United States having been driven to hostilities by the oppressive and tyrannous measures of Great-Britain: having been compelled to commit the essential rights of man to the decision of arms; and having been at length forced to shake off a yoke which had grown too burdensome to bear, they declared themselves free and independent.

Confiding in the justice of their cause; confiding in Him who disposes of human events, although weak and unprovided, they set the power of their enemies at defiance.

In this confidence they have continued, through the various fortune of three bloody campaigns, unawed by the powers, unsubdued by the barbarity of their foes.— Their virtuous citizens have borne, without repining, the loss of many things which made life desirable. Their brave troops have patiently endured the hardships and dangers of a situation, fruitful in both beyond example.

The Congress considering themselves bound to love their enemies, as children of that Being who is equally the Father of all, and desirous, since they could not prevent, at least to alleviate the calamities of war, have studied to spare those who were in arms against them, and to lighten the chains of captivity.

The conduct of those serving under the King of Great Britain, hath, with some few exceptions, been diametrically opposite. They have laid waste the open country, burned the defenceless villages, and butchered the citizens of America. Their prisons have been the slaughter-houses of her soldiers; their ships of her sea-

men; and the severest injuries have been aggravated by the grossest insults.

Foiled in their vain attempt to subjugate the unconquerable spirit of freedom, they have meanly assailed the Representatives of America, with bribes, with deceit, and the servility of adulation. They have made a mock of humanity, by the wanton destruction of men; they have made a mock of religion, by impious appeals to God, whilst in the violation of his sacred commands; they have made a mock even of reason itself, by endeavouring to prove, that the liberty and happiness of America could safely be entrusted to those who have *sold their own*, unawed by the sense of virtue, or of shame.

Treated with the contempt which such conduct deserved, they have applied to individuals; they have solicited them to break the bonds of allegiance, and imbrue their souls with the blackest of crimes; but fearing that none could be found through these United States, equal to the wickedness of their purpose, to influence weak minds, they have threatened more wide devastation.

While the shadow of hope remained, that our enemies could be taught by our example to respect those laws which are held sacred among civilized nations, and to comply with the dictates of a religion which they pretend in common with us to believe and revere, they have been left to the influence of that religion, and that example. But since their incorrigible dispositions cannot be touched by kindness and compassion, it becomes our duty by other means to vindicate the rights of humanity.

We, therefore, the Congress of the United States of America, DO SOLEMNLY DECLARE AND PROCLAIM, That if our enemies presume to execute their threats, or persist in their present career of barbarity, we will take such exemplary vengeance as shall deter others from a like conduct. We appeal to that God who searcheth the hearts of men, for the rectitude of our intentions. And in his holy presence we declare, That as we are not moved by any light and hasty suggestions of anger or revenge, so through every possible change of fortune, we will adhere to this our determination.

Done in Congress, by unanimous consent, the 30th day of October, 1778.

Attest,

CHARLES THOMPSON, Sec<sup>y</sup>.

LETTER FROM MAJOR ANDRE TO GENERAL WASHINGTON,  
PREVIOUS TO HIS TRIAL.

*“Salem, 24th September, 1780.*

“SIR—What I have as yet said, concerning myself, was in the justifiable attempt to be extricated; I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded.

“I beg your Excellency will be persuaded, that no alteration in the temper of my mind, or apprehension for my safety, induces me to take the step of addressing you, but that it is to secure myself from an imputation of having assumed a mean character for treacherous purposes or self interest—a conduct incompatible with the principles that actuated me, as well as with my condition in life.

“It is to vindicate my fame, that I speak, and not to solicit security.

“The person in your possession, is Major John Andre, Adjutant-General to the British army.

“The influence of one commander in the army of his adversary, is an advantage taken in war. I agreed to meet on ground not within the posts of either army, a person who was to give me intelligence; I came up in the Vulture, man of war, for this effect, and was fetched by a boat from the shore to the beach: being there, I was told that the approach of day would prevent my return, and that I must be concealed till the next night. I was in my regimentals and had fairly risked my person.

“Against my stipulation, my intention, and without my knowledge beforehand, I was conducted within one of your posts. Your Excellency may conceive my sensation on this occasion, and will imagine how much more I must have been affected by a refusal to re-conduct me back the next night, as I had been brought. Thus become a prisoner, I had to concert my escape. *I quit-  
ted my uniform*, and was passed another way in the night, without the American posts to neutral ground, and informed, I was beyond all armed parties and left to press for New-York. I was taken at Tarrytown by some volunteers.

“Thus as I have had the honor to relate, was I betrayed into the vile condition of an enemy in disguise within your posts.

“Having avowed myself a British officer, I have noth-



ing to reveal but what relates to myself, which is true on the honor of an officer and a gentleman.

“The request I have to make of your Excellency, and I am conscious I address myself well, is that in any rigour which policy may dictate, a decency of conduct towards me, may evince that though unfortunate, I am branded with nothing dishonorable, as no motive could be mine but the service of my King, and as I was involuntarily an impostor.

“Another request is, that I may be permitted to write an open letter to Sir Henry Clinton, and another to a friend for clothes and linen.

“I take the liberty to mention the condition of some gentlemen at Charleston, who, being either on parole or under protection, were engaged in a conspiracy against us. Though their situation is not similar, they are objects who may be set in exchange for me, or are persons whom the treatment I receive might effect.

“It is no less, sir, in a confidence in the generosity of your mind, than on account of your superior station, that I have chosen to importune you with this letter. I have the honor to be, with great respect, sir, your Excellency’s most obedient and humble servant,

JOHN ANDRE, Adjutant-General.

“*His Excellency General Washington, &c. &c.*”



*March 10th, 1783.*—In the midst of the perturbed state of affairs in camp, and while the day of final separation was supposed to be near at hand, the following anonymous letter, calculated to exasperate the passions of the moment, was privately circulated:—

#### TO THE OFFICERS OF THE ARMY.

“GENTLEMEN,—A fellow soldier, whose interest and affections bind him strongly to you, whose past sufferings have been as great, and whose future fortune may be as desperate as yours—would beg leave to address you.

“Age has its claims, and rank is not without its pretensions to advise; but, though unsupported by both, he

flatters himself, that the plain language of sincerity and experience, will neither be unheard nor unregarded.

“Like many of you he loved private life, and left it with regret. He left it, determined to retire from the field, with the necessity that called him to it, and not till then—not till the enemies of his country, the slaves of power, and the hirelings of injustice, were compelled to abandon their schemes, and acknowledge America as terrible in arms, as she had been humble in remonstrance. With this object in view, he has long shared in your toils and mingled in your dangers. He has felt the cold hand of poverty without a murmur, and has seen the insolence of wealth without a sigh. But, too much under the direction of his wishes, and sometimes weak enough to mistake desire for opinion, he has till lately—very lately, believed in the justice of his country. He hoped that as the clouds of adversity scattered, and as the sunshine of peace and better fortune broke in on us, the coldness and severity of government would relax, and that more than justice, that gratitude would blaze forth on those hands which had upheld her, in the darkest stages of her passage from impending servitude to acknowledged independence. But faith has its limits, as well as temper, and there are points beyond which neither can be stretched, without sinking into cowardice, or plunging into credulity. This, my friends, I conceive to be your situation,—hurried to the very edge of both, another step would ruin you forever. To be tame and unprovoked when injuries press hard upon you, is more than weakness; but to look up for kinder usage, without one manly effort of your own, would fix your character and show the world how richly you deserve those chains you broke. To guard against this evil, let us take a review of the ground on which we now stand, and thence carry our thoughts forward for a moment, into the unexplored field of experiment.

“After a pursuit of seven long years, the object for which we set out is at length brought within our reach—yes, my friends, that suffering courage of yours was active once,—it has conducted the United States of America through a doubtful and bloody war. It has placed her in the chair of independency, and peace returns again to bless—who? A country willing to redress your wrongs, cherish your worth, and reward your services?

A country courting your return to private life, with tears of gratitude, and smiles of admiration, longing to divide with you that independency which your gallantry has given, and those riches which your wounds have preserved? Is this the case? or is it rather a country that tramples on your rights, disdains your cries, and insults your distresses? Have you not more than once suggested your wishes, and made known your wants to Congress? wants and wishes which gratitude and policy should have anticipated rather than evaded; and have you not lately, in the meek language of entreating memorials, begged from their justice, what you could no longer expect from their favour? How have you been answered? Let the letter you are called to consider to-morrow reply.

“If this then be your treatment, while the swords you wear are necessary for the defence of America, what have you to expect from peace, when your voice shall sink, and your strength dissipate by division? when these very swords, the instruments and companions of your glory, shall be taken from your sides, and no remaining mark of military distinction be left but your wounds, infirmities and scars? Can you then consent to be the only sufferers by this revolution, and retiring from the field, grow old in poverty, wretchedness and contempt? Can you consent to wade through the vile mire of dependency, and owe the miserable remnant of that life to charity, which has hitherto been spent in honor? If you can—go—and carry with you the jest of tories and the scorn of whigs—the ridicule, and what is worse, the pity of the world—Go, starve, and be forgotten! But if your spirit should revolt at this; if you have sense enough to discover, and spirit enough to oppose tyranny under whatever garb it may assume; whether it be the plain coat of republicanism, or the splendid robe of royalty; if you have not yet learned to discriminate between a people and a cause, between men and principles—awake; attend to your situation, and redress yourselves. If the present moment be lost, every future effort is in vain; and your threats then, will be as empty as your entreaties now.

“I would advise you, therefore, to come to some final opinion on what you can bear, and what you will suffer. If your determination be in any proportion to your wrongs, carry your appeal from the justice, to the fears of government. Change the milk and water style of

your last memorial ; assume a bolder tone—decent, but lively, spirited and determined, and suspect the man who would advise to more moderation and longer forbearance. Let two or three men, who can feel as well as write, be appointed to draw up your *last remonstrance* ; for I would no longer give it the dying, soft, unsuccessful epithet of memorial. Let it be represented in language that will neither dishonor you by its rudeness, nor betray you by its fears, what has been promised by Congress, and what has been performed—how long and how patiently you have suffered—how little you have asked, and how much of that little has been denied. Tell them, that, though you were the first, and would wish to be the last to encounter danger, though despair itself can never drive you into dishonor, it may drive you from the field ; that the wound often irritated, and never healed, may at length become incurable ; and that the slightest mark of indignity from Congress now must operate like the grave, and part you forever ; that in any political event, the army has its alternative. If peace, that nothing shall separate you from your arms but death ; if war, that court-ing the auspices, and inviting the directions of your illustrious leader, you will retire to some unsettled country, smile in your turn, and “ mock when their fear cometh.” But let it represent also, that should they comply with the request of your late memorial, it would make you more happy, and then more respectable. That while war should continue, you would follow their standard into the field, and when it came to an end you would withdraw into the shade of private life, and give the world another subject of wonder and applause ; an army victorious over its enemies—victorious over itself.”



*April 18th, 1783.*—The Commander-in Chief thus addressed the army, on the cessation of hostilities :—

“ The Commander-in-Chief orders the cessation of hostilities, between the United States of America and the King of Great Britain, to be publicly proclaimed to-morrow at twelve o’clock, at the New Building ; and that the proclamation which will be communicated herewith, be read to-morrow evening, at the head of every regiment and corps of the army ; after which, the chap-

lains, with the several brigades, will render thanks to Almighty God for all his mercies, particularly for his overruling the wrath of man to his own glory, and causing the rage of war to cease among the nations.

“The Commander-in-Chief, far from endeavoring to stifle the feelings of joy in his own bosom, offers his most cordial congratulations on the occasion, to all the officers of every denomination—to all the troops of the United States in general, and in particular to those gallant and persevering men who had resolved to defend the rights of their invaded country so long as the war should continue; for these are the men who ought to be considered as the pride and boast of the American army, and who, crowned with well earned laurels, may soon withdraw from the field of glory, to the more tranquil walks of civil life.

“While the General recollects the almost infinite variety of scenes through which we have passed, with a mixture of pleasure, astonishment, and gratitude—while he contemplates the prospects before us with rapture,—he cannot help wishing that all the brave men, of whatever condition they may be, who have shared in the toils and dangers of effecting this glorious revolution, of rescuing millions from the hand of oppression, and of laying the foundation of a great empire, might be impressed with a proper idea of the dignified part they have been called to act, under the smiles of Providence, on the stage of human affairs; for happy, thrice happy, shall they be pronounced hereafter, who have contributed any thing, who have performed the meanest office in erecting this stupendous *fabric of Freedom and Empire*, on the broad basis of independency; who have assisted in protecting the rights of human nature, and establishing an asylum for the poor and oppressed of all nations and religions.

“The glorious task for which we first flew to arms, being thus accomplished,—the liberties of our country being fully acknowledged and firmly secured, by the smiles of Heaven on the purity of our cause, and the honest exertions of a feeble people, determined to be free, against a powerful nation disposed to oppress them; and the character of those who have persevered through every extremity of hardship, suffering and danger, being immortalized by the illustrious appellation of the

*Patriot Army*,—nothing now remains but for the actors of this mighty scene to preserve a perfect, unvarying consistency of character through the very last act; to close the drama with applause; and to retire from the military theatre with the same approbation of angels and men, which have crowned all their former virtuous actions.

“For this purpose, no disorder or licentiousness must be tolerated; every considerate and well disposed soldier must remember it will be absolutely necessary to wait with patience, till peace shall be declared, or Congress shall be enabled to take proper measures for the security of the public stores, &c. So soon as these arrangements shall be made, the General is confident there will be no delay in discharging, with every mark of distinction and honor, all the men enlisted for the war, who will then have faithfully performed their engagements with the public. The General has already interested himself in their behalf; and he thinks he need not repeat the assurances of his disposition to be useful to them on the present, and every other proper occasion. In the mean time, he is determined that no military neglects or excesses shall go unpunished, while he retains the command of the army.

“The Adjutant-General will have such working parties detailed to assist in making the preparation for a general rejoicing as the chief engineer, with the army, shall call for; and the Quarter Master-General will also furnish such materials as he may want. The Quarter-Master-General will, without delay, procure such a number of discharges to be printed as will be sufficient for all the men enlisted for the war; he will please to apply to head-quarters for the form.

“An extra ration of liquor to be issued *to every man to-morrow, to drink perpetual peace, independence and happiness to the United States of America.*”

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## PART I.

### PLYMOUTH.

#### *Commencement of the settlement of New-England.*

	Page.
Causes which led to the settlement of N.England,	25
Landing of the pilgrims at Plymouth,	27
A treaty of alliance formed with the Massachusetts tribe of Indians,	28
Plymouth patent obtained,	ib.

### MASSACHUSETTS.

Grant of Massachusetts-Bay to H. Roswell and others,	29
First settlement in Salem,	30
Massachusetts bill of rights,	31
Establishment of Harvard College,	32
General Confederacy of New-England,	33

### CONNECTICUT.

Grant of Connecticut to the Earl of Warwick,	ib.
Emigrants from Massachusetts settle at Windsor and Wethersfield,	34
Dutch from New-York, commence establishments at Branford and Hartford, &c.	ib.
Of New-Haven settlement,	35

### RHODE-ISLAND.

Of Rev. Roger Williams, and his banishment from Massachusetts,	36
Settlement of Rhode-Island, &c.	37
Establishment of the University at Warren,	38

#### *History of the Pilgrims, continued.*

Pequot war, and destruction of the Pequots,	ib.
General account of the natives of New-England,	42
Philip's war,	44
Destruction of Deerfield,	45
Victory over the savages,	46
Ravages of the enemy,	47
Death of Philip, and return of peace,	48

### NEW-HAMPSHIRE.

Commission of Charles II. for governing New- Hampshire,	49
Separation from Massachusetts,	50
Troubles in the government,	ib
New-Hampshire again under the protection of Mas- sachusetts,	52

	Page.
Extensive Indian war,	52
NEW-HAMPSHIRE, CONTINUED.	
King William's war, and Indian war,	53
Attempt to conquer Quebec, which failed,	54
<i>History of the Pilgrims, Continued.</i>	
Massachusetts' new charter, embracing Plymouth, &c.	54
Witchcraft at Salem,	55
Indian invasion from Canada, and ravage of Deerfield,	ib.
<i>History of the Pilgrims, continued.</i>	
General affairs of Connecticut,	57
Attempt of Sir Edmond Andros to obtain the charter of the colony,	59
Notices of the principal events as they occurred, down to 1711,	60
Yale College established,	61
MASSACHUSETTS AND NEW-HAMPSHIRE, CONTINUED.	
Fourth Indian war,	62
Treaty of peace with the Indians,	ib.
Troubles in the government,	63
French war and conquest of Louisburg,	64
Attempt of the French to recover the same,	66
Peace,	67
Controversies in Massachusetts,	68
<i>General affairs of the Colonies.</i>	
French Forts on the Ohio, &c.	69
Attack and defeat of a party of French, near Fort Duquesne,	70
Campaign of 1755 and '57,	71
Campaign of 1758,	76
Campaign of 1759,	80
Campaign of 1760,	84
General arrangements in Europe to prosecute the war, with a view to obtain an equitable peace,	85
Indian war,	86
VERMONT.	
Contested claims between New York and New-Hampshire, for this tract of country,	90
Virginia notice of Captain Smith,	95
History of Virginia, down to 1763,	ib.



*PART II.*

History of North and South Carolina, down to 1696,	107
The same continued to 1685,	111
The same continued to 1703,	116
The same continued to 1717,	121
The same continued to 1744,	126
The same continued to 1764,	129
New York—its discovery; rise and progress of the colony to 1701,	131
History of New-York continued to 1763,	141
Rise and progress of New-Jersey to 1758,	144
Rise and progress of Delaware down to 1762,	145
Rise and progress of Pennsylvania down to the peace of 1763,	148
Rise and progress of Maryland, from its origin down to the American Revolution,	156
Rise and progress of Georgia, from its origin down to the American Revolution,	162

*PART III.*

Causes that led to the American Revolution,	166
The same continued,	174
The same continued to the battle of Lexington,	179

*PART IV*

American Revolution continued from the battle of Lexington to the fall of Montgomery at Quebec,	190
Revolution continued from the fall of Montgomery to the evacuation of Boston,	200
Revolution continued—capture of New-York,	206
Revolution continued,	214
Battle at Bennington,	218
Capture of Burgoyne's army,	222
Revolution continued—proceedings of Congress,	224
Treaty with France,	226
Arrival of a French fleet in the Delaware,	233
Arrangement for the war in Rhode-Island,	234
General operations of the Revolution continued—attempt of the British commissioners to bribe a Member of Congress,	236
Destruction of Wilkesbarre,	238
Operations in the Southern States,	241
Depredations of the enemy in Connecticut,	247
General operations of the Revolution continued,	249

	Page.
Unsuccessful attempt of the French and American troops, on the enemy at Savannah,	250
Charleston, with General Lincoln's army, captured,	254
Depredations of the enemy in Connecticut,	ib.
Arrival of a French fleet with troops, at Rhode-Island,	256
Movements of the enemy in the Southern States,	257
Revolution continued—Arnold's treachery,	262
Meeting of Rochambeau and Washington, in Wethersfield,	263
Capture of Lord Cornwallis and army,	267
Revolution continued—Arnold's capture of New-London,	270
Movements of General Greene's army in the south,	272
Resolution against the further prosecution of the war, by the British House of Commons,	274
Negotiations for peace—and ratification,	ib.
Disaffection in the American army, &c.	275
General Washington's Circular to the Governors of the States,	276
Disbandment of the army,	277
Formation of the Society of Cincinnati,	278

### *PART V.*

Causes that led to a change of government in the United States,	279
Meeting of the Convention at Philadelphia, and formation of the Constitution,	281
General Washington chosen President of the United States,	282

### *PART VI.*

Organization of government—origin of party,	283
Measures of the first Congress under the Constitution,	284
Tour of Washington through the Northern States,	ib.
Second session of the first Congress,	286
First session of the second Congress,	288
Indian war,	290
Second session of the second Congress,	291
Defeat of General St. Clair's army, by the Indians,	293
Of parties in the Cabinet,	294
Insurrection in Pennsylvania,	296
Measures of Congress—National Debt,	297

Page.

Second election of General Washington, President,	298
French Revolution,	ib.
Proclamation of neutrality,	299
Measures of M. Genet, French Minister,	ib.
Preparations for the Algerine war,	303
Depredations on American commerce by English and French vessels,	ib.
Indian war—Wayne's battle,	304
Suppression of the Pennsylvania insurrection,	305
Ratification of Jay's treaty,	306
Treaty of peace with Algiers,	307
Arrival of M. Adet, French Minister,	ib.
Retirement of President Washington, to private life,	308
John Adams chosen President,	ib.

*PART VII.*

Adams' administration—negotiations with France,	309
Raising of an army,	310
Death of General Washington,	ib.
Measures of party—election of Thomas Jefferson, President,	311
Of Mr. Jefferson's inaugural speech,	312
Difficulties with Spain, and purchase of Louisiana,	ib.
War with Tripoli,	313
Aaron Burr's intrigue,	314
Attack on the Chesapeake,	315
Orders in Council, and Berlin and Milan decrees—negotiations, &c.	ib.
James Madison elected President,	316
Attack by the sloop of war Little Belt, on the American frigate President,	317
Of John Henry's correspondence,	ib.
Declaration of war against Great-Britain,	318
Of the war with Great-Britain—Hull's surrender,	ib.
Capture of the Guerriere frigate, of the Frolic sloop of war, and of the Java frigate,	319
Movements of the Armies in the north and west,	320
Capture of the brig of war Peacock, and loss of the Chesapeake, and capture of the Pelican and Boxer, brigs of war,	324
War continued—operations on the sea-board, against Canada, Louisiana, &c. victory on Lakes Erie and Champlain,—peace	326

## PART VIII.

Page

*Chronological view of the Western States, as they became Territorial governments and were admitted into the Union.*

History of the North-Western Territory,	339
Settlement &c. of Kentucky, Tennessee, and Ohio,	346
Do. do. Louisiana, Mississippi, Illinois,	
Alabama, and Missouri,	342
Do. do. Arkansas, East and West Florida,	344

## APPENDIX.

*A brief Chronological view of the United States.*

Boundaries of the U. States, Lakes and Rivers,	347
Canals and facilities for opening canals,	ib.
Soil and productions of the United States,	349
Mines and minerals,	ib.
Salines, natural curiosities, commerce,	350
Mountains, government, religion,	351
Literature,	352
Population, census of the United States,	353
Antiquities and curiosities,	355
Remarks on do.	357
Naval establishment,	359
Declaration of Independence,	360
Articles of Confederation between the States,	364
Constitution of the United States,	373
Amendments to the Constitution,	384
De la Barre and Garrangula,	388
Indian war of 1697—anecdote of Mr. Dustan's family,	392
Exploits of Baron Viominel and La Fayette, at the capture of Cornwallis,	394
Adventures of Sergeant Champe,	395
Remonstrance of Congress against British cruelties,	400
Proclamation for a national thanksgiving,	405
Manifesto of Congress,	406
Letter from Major Andre to General Washington,	408
Anonymous letter to the Revolutionary Army,	409
Address of General Washington, on the cessation of hostilities,	412

THE END.

H20













N. MANCHESTER,  
INDIANA 46962

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 011 413 642 6